This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

34 35
37
43
81

THE

WORKS

OF

SAMUEL JOHNSON, LL.D.

A NEW EDITION

IN TWELVE VOLUMES.

WITH

AN ESSAY ON HIS LIFE AND GENIUS,

BY ARTHUR MURPHY, ESQ.

VOLUME THE TWELFTH.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR F. C. AND J. RIVINGTON; G. AND W. NICOL; T. EGERTON; LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN; T. CADELL; J. NUNN; J. CUTHELL; J. AND W. T. CLARKE; J. BOOKER: J. CARPENTER; JEFFERY AND SON; J. AND A. ARCH; J. BOOTH; J RICHARDSON; HATCHARD AND SON; W. GINGER; R. H. EVANS; J. MAWMAN; R. SCHOLEY; BALDWIN, CRADOCK, AND JOY; SHERWOOD AND JONES; T. HAMILTON; J. ROBINSON; R. SAUNDERS; HARDING, MAVOR, AND LEPARD; G. AND W. B. WHITTAKER; LLOYD AND SON; J. BOHN; T. TEGG; T. WILKIE; OGLE AND CO.; SIMPKIN AND MARSHALL; KINGSBURY, PARBURY, AND ALLEN; G. MACKIE; J. PORTER; G. GREENLAND; W. MASON; J. COLLINGWOOD; W. WOOD; HURST AND ROBINSON: J. RACKHAM; AND DEIGHTON AND SONS, CAMBRIDGE; BRODIE, DOWDING, AND CO. SALISBURY; AND BELL AND BRADFUTE; AND J. FAIRBAIRN, AT EDINBURGH.

1823.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY S. AND R. BENTLEY, DORSET STREET.

CONTENTS

OF

THE TWELFTH VOLUME.

Page

POLITICAL TRACTS.

*Marmor Norfolciense: or an Essay on an ancient Prophetical Inscription in Monkish Rhyme lately discovered near Lynn 3
Observations on the State of Affairs in 1756 . . 34
An Introduction to the Political State of Great-Britain 47
*Observations on the Treaty between his Britannic Majesty and his Imperial Majesty of all the Russias, &c. &c. 71
Introduction to the Proceedings of the Committee appointed to manage the Contributions for clothing French Prisoners of War . . . 78
On the Bravery of the English common Soldiers . . 81
The False Alarm, 1770 87
Thoughts on the late Transactions respecting Falkland's Islands, 1771 118
The Patriot: addressed to the Electors of Great-Britain, 1774 164
Taxation no Tyranny: an Answer to the Resolutions and Address of the American Congress, 1775 . 177

86712

A JOURNEY TO THE WESTERN ISLANDS OF SCOTLAND.

Page
St. Andrew's 231
Aberbrothick 236
Montrose 239
Aberdeen 241
Slanes Castle. The Buller of Buchan . 247
Bamff 250
Elgin 252
Fores. Calder. Fort George 255
Inverness 257
Lough Ness 260
Fall of Fiers 265
Fort Augustus 266
Anoch 268
Glensheals 276
The Highlands 277
Glenelg 284
Sky. Armidel 285
Coriatachan in Sky 290
Raasay 297
Dunvegan 308
Ulinish 314
Talisker in Sky 319
Ostig in Sky 322
Col 377
Grissipol in Col 380
Castle of Col 382
Mull 399
Ulva 405
Inch Kenneth 407

*SERMONS 437

INDEX 461

POLITICAL TRACTS.

MARMOR NORFOLCIENSE:

OR, AN

ESSAY

ON AN

ANCIENT PROPHETICAL INSCRIPTION,

IN MONKISH RHYME,

LATELY DISCOVERED NEAR LYNN, IN NORFOLK.

BY PROBUS BRITANNICUS.*

IN Norfolk, near the town of Lynn, in a field which an ancient tradition of the country affirms to have been once a deep lake or meer, and which appears from authentic records to have been called, about two hundred years ago, *Palus*, or the Marsh, was discovered not long since a large square stone, which is found upon an exact inspection to be a kind of coarse marble, of a substance not firm enough to admit of being polished, yet harder than our common quarries afford, and not easily susceptible of injuries from weather or outward accidents.

It was brought to light by a farmer, who, observing his plough obstructed by something, through which the share could not make its way, ordered his servants to remove it. This was not effected without some difficulty, the stone being three feet four inches deep,

* First printed in the Year 1739.

and four feet square in the superficies, and consequently of a weight not easily manageable. However, by the application of levers, it was at length raised, and conveyed to a corner of the field, where it lay for some months entirely unregarded: nor perhaps had we ever been made acquainted with this venerable relique of antiquity, had not our good fortune been greater than our curiosity.

A gentleman, well known to the learned world, and distinguished by the patronage of the *Mœcenas* of Norfolk, whose name, was I permitted to mention it, would excite the attention of my reader, and add no small authority to my conjectures, observing, as he was walking that way, that the clouds began to gather and threaten him with a shower, had recourse for shelter to the trees under which this stone happened to lie, and sat down upon it in expectation of fair weather. At length he began to amuse himself in his confinement, by clearing the earth from his seat with the point of his cane: and had continued this employment some time, when he observed several traces of letters antique and irregular, which by being very deeply engraven were still easily distinguishable.

This discovery so far raised his curiosity, that going home immediately, he procured an instrument proper for cutting out the clay, that filled up the spaces of the letters, and with very little labour made the inscription legible, which is here exhibited to the publick:

POST-GENITIS.

Cum lapidem hunc, magni
Qui nunc jacet incola stagni,

Vel pede equus tanget,
Vel arator vomere franget,
Sentiet ægra metus,
Effundet patria fletus,
Littoraque ut fluctu,
Resonabunt oppida luctu:
Nam fœcunda rubri
Serpent per prata colubri,
Gramina vastantes,
Flores fructusque vorantes,
Omnia fœdantes,
Vitiantes, et spoliantes;
Quanquam haud pugnaces,
Ibunt per cuncta minaces,
Fures absque timore,
Et pingues absque labore.
Horrida dementes
Rapiet discordia gentes,
Plurima tunc leges
Mutabit, plurima reges
Natio, conversâ
In rabiem tunc contremet ursâ
Cynthia, tunc latis
Florebunt lilia pratis,
Nec fremere audebit
Leo, sed violare timebit,
Omnia consuetus
Populari pascua lætus.
Ante oculos natos
Calceatos et cruciatos
Jam feret ignavus,
Vetitâque libidine pravus.
En quoque quod mirum,
Quod dicas denique dirum,
Sanguinem equus sugit,
Neque bellua victa remugit.

These lines he carefully copied, accompanied in his letter of July 19, with the following translation.

TO POSTERITY.

Whene'er this stone, now hid beneath the lake,
The horse shall trample, or the plough shall break,
Then, O my country! shalt thou groan distrest,
Grief swell thine eyes, and terror chill thy breast.
Thy streets with violence of woe shall sound,
Loud as the billows bursting on the ground.
Then thro' thy fields shall scarlet reptiles stray,
And rapine and pollution mark their way.
Their hungry swarms the peaceful vale shall fright
Still fierce to threaten, still afraid to fight;
The teeming year's whole product shall devour,
Insatiate pluck the fruit, and crop the flow'r:
Shall glutton on the industrious peasants' spoil,
Rob without fear, and fatten without toil;
Then o'er the world shall discord stretch her wings;
Kings change their laws, and kingdoms change their kings.
The bear enrag'd th' affrighted moon shall dread;
The lilies o'er the vales triumphant spread;
Nor shall the lion, wont of old to reign
Despotick o'er the desolated plain,
Henceforth th' inviolable bloom invade,
Or dare to murmur in the flow'ry glade;
His tortur'd sons shall die before his face,
While he lies melting in a lewd embrace;
And, yet more strange! his veins a horse shall drain,
Nor shall the passive coward once complain.

I make not the least doubt, but that this learned person has given us, as an antiquary, a true and uncontrovertible representation of the writer's meaning, and am sure he can confirm it by innumerable quotations from the authors of the middle age, should he be publickly called upon by any man of eminent rank

in the republick of letters; nor will he deny the world that satisfaction, provided the animadverter proceeds with that sobriety and modesty, with which it becomes every learned man to treat a subject of such importance.

Yet with all proper deference to a name so justly celebrated, I will take the freedom of observing that he has succeeded better as a scholar than a poet; having fallen below the strength, the conciseness, and at the same time below the perspicuity of his author. I shall not point out the particular passages in which this disparity is remarkable, but content myself with saying in general, that the criticisms, which there is room for on this translation, may be almost an incitement to some lawyer, studious of antiquity, to learn Latin.

The inscription, which I now proceed to consider, wants no arguments to prove its antiquity to those among the learned, who are versed in the writers of the darker ages, and know that the Latin poetry of those times was of a peculiar cast and air, not easy to be understood, and very difficult to be imitated, nor can it be conceived that any man would lay out his abilities on a way of writing, which though attained with much study could gain him no reputation, and engrave his chimeras on a stone to astonish posterity.

Its antiquity therefore is out of dispute; but how high a degree of antiquity is to be assigned it, there is more ground for enquiry than determination. How early Latin rhymes made their appearance in the world is yet undecided by the criticks. Verses of this kind were called Leonine; but whence they de-

rived that appellation the learned Camden* confesses himself ignorant, so that the style carries no certain marks of its age. I shall only observe farther on this head, that the characters are nearly of the same form with those on King Arthur's coffin; but whether from their similitude we may venture to pronounce them of the same date, I must refer to the decision of better judges.

Our inability to fix the age of this inscription necessarily infers our ignorance of its author, with relation to whom many controversies may be started worthy of the most profound learning, and most indefatigable diligence.

The first question that naturally arises is, Whether he was a Briton or a Saxon? I had at first conceived some hope, that in this question, in which not only the idle curiosity of virtuosos, but the honour of two mighty nations is concerned, some information might be drawn from the word *Patria* [my country] in the third line; England being not in propriety of speech the country of the Saxons; at least not at their first arrival. But upon farther reflection this argument appeared not conclusive, since we find that in all ages, foreigners have affected to call England their country, even when like the Saxons of old they came only to plunder it.

An argument in favour of the Britons, may indeed

* See his Remains, 1614, p. 337, "Riming verses which are called *Versus Leonini*, I know not wherefore (for a lyon's taile doth not answer to the middle parts as these verses doe) began in the time of Carolus Magnus, and were only in request then and in many ages following, which delighted in nothing more than in this minstrelsie of meeters." E.

be drawn from the tenderness, with which the author seems to lament his country, and the compassion he shows for its approaching calamities. I, who am a descendant from the Saxons, and therefore unwilling to say any thing derogatory from the reputation of my forefathers, must yet allow this argument its full force: for it has been rarely, very rarely, known that foreigners, however well treated, caressed, enriched, flattered or exalted, have regarded this country with the least gratitude or affection, till the race has, by long continuance, after many generations, been naturalized and assimilated.

They have been ready upon all occasions to prefer the petty interests of their own country, though perhaps only some desolate and worthless corner of the world. They have employed the wealth of England, in paying troops to defend mud-wall towns, and uninhabitable rocks, and in purchasing barriers for territories, of which the natural sterility secured them from invasion.

This argument, which wants no particular instances to confirm it, is, I confess, of the greatest weight in this question, and inclines me strongly to believe, that the benevolent author of this prediction must have been BORN a BRITON.

The learned discoverer of the inscription was pleased to insist with great warmth upon the etymology of the word *Patria*, which signifying, says he, *the land of my father*, could be made use of by none, but such whose ancestors had resided here; but in answer to this demonstration, as he called it, I only desired him to take notice, how common it is for intruders of yesterday, to pretend the same title with

the ancient proprietors, and, having just received an estate by voluntary grant, to erect a claim of *hereditary right*.

Nor is it less difficult to form any satisfactory conjecture, concerning the rank or condition of the writer, who, contented with a consciousness of having done his duty, in leaving this solemn warning to his country, seems studiously to have avoided that veneration, to which his knowledge of futurity undoubtedly entitled him, and those honours which his memory might justly claim from the gratitude of posterity, and has therefore left no trace, by which the most sagacious and diligent enquirer can hope to discover him.

This conduct alone ought to convince us, that the prediction is of no small importance to mankind, since the author of it appears not to have been influenced by any other motive than that noble and exalted philanthropy, which is above the narrow views of recompense or applause.

That interest had no share in this inscription, is evident beyond dispute, since the age in which he lived received neither pleasure nor instruction from it. Nor is it less apparent from the suppression of his name, that he was equally a stranger to that wild desire of fame, which has sometimes infatuated the noblest minds.

His modesty, however, has not been able wholly to extinguish that curiosity, which so naturally leads us, when we admire a performance, to enquire after the author. Those whom I have consulted on this occasion, and my zeal for the honour of this benefactor of my country, has not suffered me to forget a single

antiquary of reputation, have almost unanimously determined, that it was written by a King. For where else, said they, are we to expect that greatness of mind, and that dignity of expression, so eminently conspicuous in this inscription?

It is with a proper sense of the weakness of my own abilities, that I venture to lay before the publick, the reasons which hinder me from concurring with this opinion, which I am not only inclined to favour by my respect for the authors of it, but by a natural affection for monarchy, and a prevailing inclination to believe, that every excellence is inherent in a king.

To condemn an opinion so agreeable to the reverence due to the regal dignity, and countenanced by so great authorities, without a long and accurate discussion, would be a temerity justly liable to the severest censures. A supercilious and arrogant determination of a controversy of such importance, would doubtless be treated by the impartial and candid with the utmost indignation.

But as I have too high an idea of the learning of my contemporaries, to obtrude any crude, hasty, or indigested notions on the public, I have proceeded with the utmost degree of diffidence and caution; I have frequently reviewed all my arguments, traced them backwards to their first principles, and used every method of examination to discover whether all the deductions were natural and just, and whether I was not imposed on by some specious fallacy; but the farther I carried my enquiries, and the longer I dwelt upon this great point, the more was I convinced, in spite of all my prejudices, that this wonderful prediction was not written by a king.

For after a laborious and attentive perusal of histories, memoirs, chronicles, lives, characters, vindications, panegyrics and epitaphs, I could find no sufficient authority for ascribing to any of our English monarchs, however gracious or glorious, any prophetical knowledge or prescience of futurity: which, when we consider how rarely regal virtues are forgotten, how soon they are discovered, and how loudly they are celebrated, affords a probable argument at least, that none of them have laid any claim to this character. For why should historians have omitted to embellish their accounts with such a striking circumstance? or if the histories of that age are lost by length of time, why was not so uncommon an excellence transmitted to posterity in the more lasting colours of poetry? Was that unhappy age without a Laureat? Was there then no Young* or Philips†? no Ward‡ or Mitchel || to snatch such wonders from oblivion, and immortalize a prince of such capacities? If this was really the case, let us congratulate ourselves upon being reserved for better days; days so fruitful of happy writers, that no princely virtue can shine in vain. Our monarchs are surrounded with refined spirits, so penetrating that they frequently discover in their masters great qualities invisible to vulgar eyes, and which, did not they publish them to mankind, would be unobserved for ever.

Nor is it easy to find in the lives of our monarchs many instances of that regard for posterity, which

* Dr. Edward Young. E.

† Ambrose Philips, author of The Distrest Mother, &c. E.

‡ Edward Ward. See Dunciad, and Biographia Dramatica. E.

|| Joseph Mitchel. See Biographia Dramatica. E.

seems to have been the prevailing temper of this venerable man. I have seldom in any of the gracious speeches delivered from the throne, and received with the highest gratitude and satisfaction by both Houses of Parliament, discovered any other concern than for the current year, for which supplies are generally demanded in very pressing terms, and sometimes such as imply no remarkable solicitude for posterity.

Nothing indeed can be more unreasonable and absurd, than to require that a monarch, distracted with cares and surrounded with enemies, should involve himself in superfluous anxieties, by an unnecessary concern about future generations. Are not pretenders, mock-patriots, masquerades, operas, birth-nights, treaties, conventions, reviews, drawing-rooms, the births of heirs, and the deaths of queens, sufficient to overwhelm any capacity but that of a king? Surely he that acquits himself successfully of such affairs, may content himself with the glory he acquires, and leave posterity to his successors.

That this has been the conduct of most princes, is evident from the accounts of all ages and nations; and therefore I hope it will not be thought that I have, without just reasons, deprived this inscription of the veneration it might demand as the work of a king.

With what laborious struggles against prejudice and inclination, with what efforts of reasoning, and pertinacity of self-denial, I have prevailed upon myself to sacrifice the honour of this monument to the love of truth, none who are unacquainted with the fondness of a commentator will be able to conceive. But

this instance will be, I hope, sufficient to convince the public, that I write with sincerity, and that, whatever my success may be, my intentions are good.

Where we are to look for our author, it still remains to be considered; whether in the high road of public employments, or the bye-paths of private life.

It has always been observed of those that frequent a court, that they soon, by a kind of contagion, catch the regal spirit of neglecting futurity. The minister forms an expedient to suspend or perplex an enquiry into his measures for a few months, and applauds and triumphs in his own dexterity. The peer puts off his creditor for the present day, and forgets that he is ever to see him more. The frown of a prince, and the loss of a pension, have indeed been found of wonderful efficacy, to abstract men's thoughts from the present time, and fill them with zeal for the liberty and welfare of ages to come. But I am inclined to think more favourably of the author of this prediction, than that he was made a patriot by disappointment or disgust. If he ever saw a court, I would willingly believe, that he did not owe his concern for posterity to his ill reception there, but his ill reception there to his concern for posterity.

However, since truth is the same in the mouth of a hermit, or a prince, since it is not reason but weakness, that makes us rate counsel by our esteem for the counsellor, let us at length desist from this enquiry, so useless in itself, in which we have room to hope for so little satisfaction. Let us show our gratitude to the author, by answering his intentions, by considering minutely the lines which he has left us, and examining their import without heat, preci-

pitancy, or party-prejudices; let us endeavour to keep the just mean, between searching ambitiously for far-fetched interpretations, and admitting such low meaning, and obvious and low sense, as is inconsistent with those great and extensive views, which it is reasonable to ascribe to this excellent man.

It may be yet farther asked, whether this inscription, which appears in the stone, be an original, and not rather a version of a traditional prediction in the old British tongue, which the zeal of some learned man prompted him to translate and engrave in a more known language for the instruction of future ages: but as the lines carry at the first view a reference both to the stone itself, and very remarkably to the place where it was found, I connot see any foundation for such a suspicion.

It remains now that we examine the sense and import of the inscription, which, after having long dwelt upon it with the closest and most laborious attention, I must confess myself not yet able fully to comprehend. The following explications, therefore, are by no means laid down as certain and indubitable truths, but as conjectures not always wholly satisfactory even to myself, and which I had not dared to propose to so enlightened an age, an age which abounds with those great ornaments of human nature, sceptics, anti-moralists, and infidels, but with hopes that they would excite some person of greater abilities, to penetrate further into the oraculous obscurity of this wonderful prediction.

Not even the four first lines are without their difficulties, in which the time of the discovery of the stone seems to be the time assigned for the events foretold by it.

Cum lapidem hunc, magni
Qui nunc jacet incola stagni,
Vel pede equus tanget,
Vel arator vomere franget,
Sentiet ægra metus,
Effundet patria fletus,
Littoraque ut fluctu,
Resonabunt oppida luctu.

Whene'er this stone, now hid beneath the lake,
The horse shall trample, or the plough shall break,
Then, O my country! shalt thou groan distrest,
Grief in thine eyes, and terror in thy breast.
Thy streets with violence of woe shall sound,
Loud as the billows bursting on the ground.

"When this stone," says he, "which now lies hid beneath the waters of a deep lake, shall be struck upon by the horse, or broken by the plough, then shalt thou, my country, be astonished with terrors, and drowned in tears; then shall thy towns sound with lamentations, as thy shores with the roarings of the waves." These are the words literally rendered, but how are they verified? The lake is dry, the stone is turned up, but there is no appearance of this dismal scene. Is not all at home satisfaction and tranquillity? all abroad submission and compliance? Is it the interest or inclination of any prince or state to draw a sword against us? and are we not nevertheless secured by a numerous standing army, and a King who is himself an army? Have our troops any other employment than to march to a review? Have our fleets encountered any thing but winds and worms? To me the present state of the nation seems so far from any resemblance to the noise and agitation of a

tempestuous sea, that it may be much more properly compared to the dead stillness of the waves before a storm.

Nam fœcunda rubri
Serpent per prata colubri,
Gramina vastantes,
Flores fructusque vorantes,
Omnia fœdantes,
Vitiantes, et spoliantes;
Quanquam haud pugnaces,
Ibunt per cuncta minaces,
Fures absque timore,
Et pingues absque labore.

Then through thy fields shall scarlet reptiles stray,
And rapine and pollution mark their way.
Their hungry swarms the peaceful vale shall fright,
Still fierce to threaten, still afraid to fight;
The teeming year's whole product shall devour,
Insatiate pluck the fruit, and crop the flow'r:
Shall glutton on the industrious peasant's spoil,
Rob without fear, and fatten without toil.

He seems, in these verses, to descend to a particular account of this dreadful calamity; but his description is capable of very different senses with almost equal probability.

Red serpents, says he, (*rubri colubri* are the Latin words, which the poetical translator has rendered *scarlet reptiles*, using a general term for a particular, in my opinion too licentiously,) "Red serpents shall wander o'er her meadows, and pillage and pollute, &c." The particular mention of the colour of this destructive viper may be some guide to us in this labyrinth, through which, I must ac-

knowledge, I cannot yet have any certain path. I confess, that when a few days after my perusal of this passage, I heard of the multitude of lady-birds seen in Kent, I began to imagine that these were the fatal insects, by which the island was to be laid waste, and therefore looked over all accounts of them with uncommon concern. But when my first terrors began to subside, I soon recollected that these creatures, having both wings and feet, would scarcely have been called serpents; and was quickly convinced, by their leaving the country without doing any hurt, that they had no quality, but the colour, in common with the ravagers here described.

As I am not able to determine any thing on this question, I shall content myself with collecting, into one view, the several properties of this pestiferous brood, with which we are threatened, as hints to more sagacious and fortunate readers, who, when they shall find any *red animal* that ranges uncontrouled over the country, and devours the labours of the trader and the husbandman; that carries with it corruption, rapine, pollution, and devastation; that threatens without courage, robs without fear, and is pampered without labour, they may know that the prediction is compleated. Let me only remark farther, that if the style of this, as of all other predictions, is figurative, the serpent, a wretched animal that crawls upon the earth, is a proper emblem of low views, self-interest, and base submission, as well as of cruelty, mischief, and malevolence.

I cannot forbear to observe in this place, that as it is of no advantage to mankind to be forewarned of inevitable and insurmountable misfortunes, the au-

thor probably intended to hint to his countrymen, the proper remedies for the evils he describes. In this calamity on which he dwells longest, and which he seems to deplore with the deepest sorrow, he points out one circumstance, which may be of great use to disperse our apprehensions, and awaken us from that panic which the reader must necessarily feel, at the first transient view of this dreadful description. These serpents, says the original, are HAUD PUGNACES, *of no fighting race:* they will threaten, indeed, and hiss, and terrify the weak, and timorous, and thoughtless, but have no real courage or strength. So that the mischief done by them, their ravages, devastations, and robberies, must be only the consequences of cowardice in the sufferers, who are harassed and oppressed only because they suffer it without resistance. We are therefore to remember whenever the pest here threatened shall invade us, that submission and tameness will be certain ruin, and that nothing but spirit, vigilance, activity, and opposition, can preserve us from the most hateful and reproachful misery, that of being plundered, starved, and devoured by vermin and by reptiles.

Horrida dementes
Rapiet discordia gentes,
Plurima tunc leges
Mutabit, plurima reges
Natio.

Then o'er the world shall discord stretch her wings,
Kings change their laws, and kingdoms change their kings.

Here the author takes a general survey of the state

of the world, and the changes that were to happen about the time of the discovery of this monument in many nations. As it is not likely that he intended to touch upon the affairs of other countries any farther than the advantage of his own made it necessary, we may reasonably conjecture, that he had a full and distinct view of all the negotiations, treaties, confederacies, of all the triple and quadruple alliances, and all the leagues offensive and defensive, in which we were to be engaged, either as principals, accessaries, or guarantees, whether by policy, or hope, or fear, or our concern for preserving the *balance of power*, or our tenderness for the liberties of Europe. He knew that our negotiators would interest us in the affairs of the whole earth, and that no state could either rise or decline in power, either extend or lose its dominions, without affecting politicks and influencing our councils.

This passage will bear an easy and natural application to the present time, in which so many revolutions have happened, so many nations have changed their masters, and so many disputes and commotions are embroiling almost in every part of the world.

That almost every state in Europe and Asia, that is, almost every country then known is comprehended in this prediction may be easily conceived, but whether it extends to regions at that time undiscovered, and portends any alteration of government in Carolina and Georgia, let more able or more daring expositors determine.

———*Conversâ*
In rabiem tunc contremet Ursâ
Cynthia.

The bear enrag'd, th' affrighted moon shall dread.

The terror created to the moon by the anger of the bear, is a strange expression, but may perhaps relate to the apprehensions raised in the Turkish empire, of which a crescent or new moon is the imperial standard, by the increasing power of the Empress of Russia, whose dominions lie under the northern constellation called the *Bear*.

———Tunc latis
Florebunt lilia pratis.

The lilies o'er the vales triumphant spread.

The lilies borne by the kings of France are an apt representation of that country; and their flourishing over wide-extended vallies, seems to regard the new increase of the French power, wealth, and dominions, by the advancement of their trade, and the accession of Lorain. This is at first view an obvious, but perhaps for that very reason not the true inscription. How can we reconcile it with the following passage,

Nec fremere audebit
Leo, sed violare timebit,
Omnia consuetus
Populari pascua lætus,

Nor shall the lion, wont of old to reign
Despotic o'er the desolated plain,
Henceforth th' inviolable bloom invade,
Or dare to murmur in the flow'ry glade,

in which the lion that used at pleasure to lay the pastures waste, is represented as not daring to touch the lilies, or murmur at their growth? The lion, it is

true, is one of the supporters of the arms of England, and may therefore figure our countrymen, who have in ancient times made France a desert. But can it be said, that the lion dares not murmur or rage (for *fremere* may import both) when it is evident, that for many years this whole kingdom has murmur'd? however, it may be at present calm and secure, by its confidence in the wisdom of our politicians and the address of our negotiators.

Ante oculos natos
Calceatos et cruciatos
Jam feret ignavus,
Vetitâque libidine pravus.

His tortur'd sons shall die before his face,
While he lies melting in a lewd embrace.

Here are other things mentioned of the lion equally unintelligible, if we suppose them to be spoken of our nation, as that he lies sluggish, and depraved with unlawful lusts, while his offspring is trampled and tortured before his eyes. But in that place can the English be said to be trampled or tortured? Where are they treated with injustice or contempt? What nation is there from pole to pole that does not reverence the nod of the British King? Is not our commerce unrestrained? Are not the riches of the world our own? Do not our ships sail unmolested, and our merchants traffick in perfect security? Is not the very name of England treated by foreigners in a manner never known before? Or if some slight injuries have been offered, if some of our petty traders have been stopped, our possessions threatened, our effects confiscated, our flag insulted,

or our ears cropped, have we lain sluggish and unactive? Have not our fleets been seen in triumph at Spithead? Did not Hosier visit the Bastimentos, and is not Haddock now stationed at Port Mahon?

En quoque quod mirum,
Quod dicas denique dirum,
Sanguinem equus sugit,
Neque bellua victa remugit.

And, yet more strange! his veins a horse shall drain,
Nor shall the passive coward once complain.

It is farther asserted in the concluding lines, that the horse shall suck the lion's blood. This is still more obscure than any of the rest; and indeed the difficulties I have met with ever since the first mention of the lion are so many and great, that I had, in utter despair of surmounting them, once desisted from my design of publishing any thing upon this subject; but was prevailed upon by the importunity of some friends, to whom I can deny nothing, to resume my design; and I must own, that nothing animated me so much as the hope they flattered me with, that my essay might be inserted in the Gazetteer, and so become of service to my country.

That a weaker animal should suck the blood of a stronger without resistance is wholly improbable and inconsistent with the regard for self-preservation, so observable in every order and species of beings. We must therefore necessarily endeavour after some figurative sense not liable to so insuperable an objection.

Were I to proceed in the same tenor of interpretation, by which I explained the moon and the lilies, I might observe that a horse is the arms of H———.

But how then does the horse suck the lion's blood? Money is the blood of the body politic.——But my zeal for the present happy establishment will not suffer me to pursue a train of thought that leads to such shocking conclusions. The idea is detestable, and such as, it ought to be hoped, can enter into the mind of none but a virulent Republican, or bloody Jacobite. There is not one honest man in the nation unconvinced how weak an attempt it would be to endeavour to confute this insinuation. An insinuation which no party will dare to abet, and of so fatal and destructive a tendency, that it may prove equally dangerous to the author whether true or false.

As therefore I can form no hypothesis on which a consistent interpretation may be built, I must leave these loose and unconnected hints entirely to the candour of the reader, and confess that I do not think my scheme of explication just, since I cannot apply it throughout the whole without involving myself in difficulties, from which the ablest interpreter would find it no easy matter to get free.

Being therefore convinced, upon an attentive and deliberate review of these observations, and a consultation with my friends, of whose abilities I have the highest esteem, and whose impartiality, sincerity, and probity, I have long known and frequently experienced, that my conjectures are in general very uncertain, often improbable, and sometimes little less than apparently false, I was long in doubt whether I ought not entirely to suppress them, and content myself with publishing in the Gazetteer the inscription, as it stands engraven on the stone, without translation or

commentary, unless that ingenious and learned society should favour the world with their own remarks.

To this scheme, which I thought extremely well calculated for the publick good, and therefore very eagerly communicated to my acquaintance and fellow students, some objections were started, which, as I had not foreseen, I was unable to answer.

It was observed first, That the *Daily Dissertations* published by that fraternity, are written with such profundity of sentiment, and filled with such uncommon modes of expression, as to be themselves sufficiently unintelligible to vulgar readers, and that therefore the venerable obscurity of this prediction, would much less excite the curiosity and awaken the attention of mankind, than if it were exhibited in any other paper, and placed in opposition to the clear and easy stile of an author generally understood.

To this argument, formidable as it was, I answered, after a short pause, that, with all proper deference to the great sagacity and advanced age of the objector, I could not but conceive that his position confuted itself, and that a reader of the Gazetteer, being by his own confession accustomed to encounter difficulties, and search for meaning where it was not easily to be found, must be better prepared than any other man for the perusal of these ambiguous expressions. And that, besides, the explication of this stone, being a task which nothing could surmount but the most acute penetration joined with indefatigable patience, seemed in reality reserved for those who have given proofs of both in the highest degree, by reading and understanding the Gazetteer.

This answer satisfied every one but the objector, who, with an obstinacy not very uncommon, adhered to his own opinion, though he could not defend it: and not being able to make any reply, attempted to laugh away my argument, but found the rest of my friends so little disposed to jest upon this important question, that he was forced to restrain his mirth, and content himself with a sullen and contemptuous silence.

Another of my friends, whom I had assembled on this occasion, having owned the solidity of my answer to the first objection, offered a second, which in his opinion could not be so easily defeated.

"I have observed," says he, "that the essays in the Gazetteer, though written on very important subjects by the ablest hands which ambition can incite, friendship engage, or money procure, have never, though circulated through the kingdom with the utmost application, had any remarkable influence upon the people. I know many persons of no common capacity, that hold it sufficient to peruse these papers four times a-year; and others who receive them regularly, and, without looking upon them, treasure them under ground for the benefit of posterity. So that the inscription may, by being inserted there, sink once more into darkness and oblivion, instead of informing the age, and assisting our present ministry in the regulation of their measures."

Another observed, that nothing was more unreasonable than my hope, that any remarks or elucidations would be drawn up by that fraternity, since their own employments do not allow them any leisure for such attempts. Every one knows that pane-

gyrick is in its own nature no easy task, and that to defend is much more difficult than to attack; consider then, says he, what industry, what assiduity it must require, to praise and vindicate a ministry like ours.

It was hinted by another, that an inscription which had no relation to any particular set of men amongst us, but was composed many ages before the parties, which now divide the nation, had a being, could not be so properly conveyed to the world by means of a paper, dedicated to political debates.

Another to whom I had communicated my own observations in a more private manner, and who had inserted some of his own arguments, declared it as his opinion, that they were, though very controvertible and unsatisfactory, yet too valuable to be lost; and that though to insert the inscription in a paper of which such numbers are daily distributed at the expence of the publick, would doubtless be very agreeable to the generous design of the author, yet he hoped that as all the students, either of politics or antiquities, would receive both pleasure and improvement from the dissertation, with which it is accompanied, none of them would regret to pay for so agreeable an entertainment.

It cannot be wondered that I have yielded at last to such weighty reasons, and such insinuating compliments, and chosen to gratify at once the inclinations of friends, and the vanity of an author. Yet I should think I had very imperfectly discharged my duty to my country, did I not warn all whom either interest or curiosity shall incite to the perusal of this treatise, not to lay any stress upon my explications.

How a more compleat and indisputable interpretation may be obtained, it is not easy to say. This will, I suppose, be readily granted, that it is not to be expected from any single hand, but from the joint enquiries and united labours of a numerous society of able men, instituted by authority, selected with great discernment and impartiality, and supported at the charge of the nation.

I am very far from apprehending that any proposal for the attainment of so desirable an end, will be rejected by this inquisitive and enlightened age, and shall therefore lay before the publick the project which I have formed and matured by long consideration, for the institution of a society of commentators upon this inscription.

I humbly propose, that thirty of the most distinguished genius be chosen for this employment, half from the inns of court, and half from the army, and be incorporated into a society for five years, under the name of the SOCIETY OF COMMENTATORS.

That great undertakings can only be executed by a great number of hands, is too evident to require any proof; and I am afraid all that read this scheme will think that it is chiefly defective in this respect, and that when they reflect how many commissaries were thought necessary at Seville, and that even their negotiations entirely miscarried, probably for want of more associates, they will conclude that I have proposed impossibilities, and that the ends of the institution will be defeated by an injudicious and ill-timed frugality,

But if it be considered, how well the persons I recommend must have been qualified by their educa-

tion and profession for the provinces assigned them, the objection will grow less weighty than it appears. It is well known to be the constant study of the lawyers to discover in acts of parliament, meanings which escaped the committees that drew them up, and the senates that passed them into laws, and to explain wills into a sense wholly contrary to the intention of the testator. How easily may an adept in these admirable and useful arts, penetrate into the most hidden import of this prediction? A man accustomed to satisfy himself with the obvious and natural meaning of a sentence, does not easily shake off his habit; but a true-bred lawyer never contents himself with one sense, when there is another to be found.

Nor will the beneficial consequences of this scheme terminate in the explication of this monument; they will extend much farther: for the commentators having sharpened and improved their sagacity by this long and difficult course of study, will, when they return into publick life, be of wonderful service to the government, in examining pamphlets, songs, and journals, and in drawing up informations, indictments, and instructions for special juries. They will be wonderfully fitted for the posts of Attorney and Solicitor General, but will excel above all, as licensers for the stage.

The Gentlemen of the army will equally adorn the province to which I have assigned them, of setting the discoveries and sentiments of their associates in a clear and agreeable light. The lawyers are well known not to be very happy in expressing their ideas, being for the most part able to make themselves un-

derstood by none but their own fraternity. But the geniusses of the army have sufficient opportunities, by their free access to the levee and the toilet, their constant attendance on balls and assemblies, and that abundant leisure which they enjoy beyond any other body of men, to acquaint themselves with every new word and prevailing mode of expression, and to attain the utmost nicety and most polished prettiness of language.

It will be necessary, that during their attendance upon the society, they be exempt from any obligation to appear on Hyde-Park; and that upon no emergency, however pressing, they be called away from their studies, unless the nation be in immediate danger by an insurrection of weavers, colliers, or smugglers.

There may not perhaps be found in the army such a number of men, who have ever condescended to pass through the labours and irksome forms of education in use among the lower classes of people, or submitted to learn the mercantile and plebeian arts of writing and reading. I must own, that though I entirely agree with the notions of the uselessness of any such trivial accomplishments in the military profession, and of their inconsistency with more valuable attainments; though I am convinced, that a man who can read and write becomes, at least, a very disagreeable companion to his brother soldiers, if he does not absolutely shun their acquaintance; that he is apt to imbibe from his books odd notions of liberty and independency, and even sometimes of morality and virtue, utterly inconsistent with the desirable character of a pretty Gentleman: though

writing frequently stains the whitest finger, and reading has a natural tendency to cloud the aspect, and depress that airy and thoughtless vivacity, which is the distinguishing characteristic of a modern warrior; yet on this single occasion, I connot but heartily wish, that by a strict search there may be discovered in the army fifteen men who can write and read.

I know that the knowledge of the alphabet is so disreputable among these Gentlemen, that those who have by ill fortune formerly been taught it, have partly forgot it by disuse, and partly concealed it from the world, to avoid the railleries and insults to which their education might make them liable: I propose, therefore, that all the officers of the army may be examined upon oath one by one, and that if fifteen cannot be selected who are at present so qualified, the deficiency may be supplied out of those who having once learned to read, may perhaps, with the assistance of a master, in a short time refresh their memories.

It may be thought, at the first sight of this proposal, that it might not be improper to assign to every commentator a reader and secretary; but it may be easily conceived, that not only the publick might murmur at such an addition of expence, but that by the unfaithfulness or negligence of their servants, the discoveries of the society may be carried to foreign courts, and made use of to the disadvantage of our own country.

For the residence of this society, I cannot think any place more proper than Greenwich-Hospital, in which they may have thirty apartments fitted up for them, that they may make their observations in private, and meet once a day in the painted hall to compare them.

If the establishment of this society be thought a matter of too much importance to be deferred till the new buildings are finished, it will be necessary to make room for their reception, by the expulsion of such of the seamen as have no pretensions to the settlement there, but fractured limbs, loss of eyes, or decayed constitutions, have lately been admitted in such numbers, that it is now scarce possible to accommodate a nobleman's groom, footman, or postilion, in a manner suitable to the dignity of his profession, and the original design of the foundation.

The situation of Greenwich will naturally dispose them to reflection and study: and particular caution ought to be used, lest any interruption be suffered to dissipate their attention, or distract their meditations: for this reason, all visits and letters from ladies are strictly to be prohibited; and if any of the members shall be detected with a lap-dog, pack of cards, box of dice, draught-table, snuff-box, or looking-glass, he shall for the first offence be confined for three months to water-gruel, and for the second be expelled the society.

Nothing now remains, but that an estimate be made of the expences necessary for carrying on this noble and generous design. The salary to be allowed each professor cannot be less than 2000*l.* a year, which is indeed more than the regular stipend of a commissioner of excise; but it must be remembered, that the commentators have a much more difficult and important employment, and can expect their salaries but for the short space of five years; whereas a commissioner (unless he imprudently suffers himself to be carried away by a whimsical tenderness for his country) has an establishment for life.

It will be necessary to allow the society in general 30,000*l.* yearly for the support of the publick table, and 40,000*l.* for secret service.

Thus will the ministry have a fair prospect of obtaining the full sense and import of the prediction, without burthening the publick with more than 650,000*l.* which may be paid out of the sinking fund; or if it be not thought proper to violate that sacred treasure by converting any part of it to uses not primarily intended, may be easily raised by a general poll-tax, or excise upon bread.

Having now compleated my scheme, a scheme calculated for the publick benefit, without regard to any party, I entreat all sects, factions, and distinctions of men among us, to lay aside for a time their party-feuds and petty animosities; and by a warm concurrence on this urgent occasion, teach posterity to sacrifice every private interest to the advantage of their country.

OBSERVATIONS

ON THE

STATE OF AFFAIRS IN 1756.*

THE time is now come in which every Englishman expects to be informed of the national affairs, and in which he has a right to have that expectation gratified. For whatever may be urged by ministers, or those whom vanity or interest make the followers of ministers, concerning the necessity of confidence in our governors, and the presumption of prying with profane eyes into the recesses of policy, it is evident, that this reverence can be claimed only by counsels yet unexecuted, and projects suspended in deliberation. But when a design has ended in miscarriage or success, when every eye and every ear is witness to general discontent, or general satisfaction, it is then a proper time to disentangle confusion, and illustrate obscurity, to shew by what causes every event was produced, and in what effects it is likely to termi-

* Published first in the Literary Magazine, No. IV. from July 15, to Aug. 15, 1756. This periodical work was published by Richardson in Paternoster-Row, but was discontinued about two years after. Dr. Johnson wrote many articles, which have been enumerated by Mr. Boswell, and there are others which I should be inclined to attribute to him from internal evidence. C.

nate; to lay down with distinct particularity what rumour always huddles in general exclamations, or perplexes by undigested narratives; to shew whence happiness or calamity is derived, and whence it may be expected; and honestly to lay before the people what enquiry can gather of the past, and conjecture can estimate of the future.

The general subject of the present war is sufficiently known. It is allowed on both sides, that hostilities began in America, and that the French and English quarrelled about the boundaries of their settlements, about grounds and rivers to which, I am afraid, neither can shew any other right than that of power, and which neither can occupy but by usurpation, and the dispossession of the natural lords and original inhabitants. Such is the contest, that no honest man can heartily wish success to either party.

It may indeed be alledged, that the Indians have granted large tracts of land both to one and to the other; but these grants can add little to the validity of our titles, till it be experienced how they were obtained: for if they were extorted by violence, or induced by fraud; by threats, which the miseries of other nations had shewn not to be vain, or by promises of which no performance was ever intended, what are they but new modes of usurpation, but new instances of cruelty and treachery?

And indeed what but false hope or resistless terror can prevail upon a weaker nation to invite a stronger into their country, to give their lands to strangers whom no affinity of manners, or similitude of opinion, can be said to recommend, to permit them to build towns from which the natives are excluded,

to raise fortresses by which they are intimidated, to settle themselves with such strength that they cannot afterwards be expelled, but are for ever to remain the masters of the original inhabitants, the dictators of their conduct, and the arbiters of their fate?

When we see men acting thus against the precepts of reason, and the instincts of nature, we cannot hesitate to determine, that by some means or other they were debarred from choice; that they were lured or frighted into compliance; that they either granted only what they found impossible to keep, or expected advantages upon the faith of their new inmates, which there was no purpose to confer upon them. It cannot be said, that the Indians originally invited us to their coasts; we went uncalled and unexpected to nations who had no imagination that the earth contained any inhabitants so distant and so different from themselves. We astonished them with our ships, with our arms, and with our general superiority. They yielded to us as to beings of another and higher race, sent among them from some unknown regions, with power which naked Indians could not resist, and which they were therefore, by every act of humility, to propitiate, that they, who could so easily destroy, might be induced to spare.

To this influence, and to this only, are to be attributed all the cessions and submissions of the Indian princes, if indeed any such cessions were ever made, of which we have no witness but those who claim from them; and there is no great malignity in suspecting, that those who have robbed have also lied.

Some colonies indeed have been established more peaceably than others. The utmost extremity of wrong has not always been practised; but those that have settled in the new world on the fairest terms, have no other merit than that of a scrivener who ruins in silence, over a plunderer that seizes by force; all have taken what had other owners, and all have had recourse to arms, rather than quit the prey on which they had fastened.

The American dispute between the French and us is therefore only the quarrel of two robbers for the spoils of a passenger; but as robbers have terms of confederacy, which they are obliged to observe as members of the gang, so the English and French may have relative rights, and do injustice to each other, while both are injuring the Indians. And such, indeed, is the present contest: they have parted the northern continent of America between them, and are now disputing about their boundaries, and each is endeavouring the destruction of the other by the help of the Indians, whose interest it is that both should be destroyed.

Both nations clamour with great vehemence about infractions of limits, violation of treaties, open usurpation, insidious artifices, and breach of faith. The English rail at the perfidious French, and the French at the encroaching English: they quote treaties on each side, charge each other with aspiring to universal monarchy, and complain on either part of the insecurity of possession near such turbulent neighbours.

Through this mist of controversy it can raise no wonder that the truth is not easily discovered. When

a quarrel has been long carried on between individuals, it is often very hard to tell by whom it was begun. Every fact is darkened by distance, by interest, and by multitudes. Information is not easily procured from far; those whom the truth will not favour, will not step voluntarily forth to tell it; and where there are many agents, it is easy for every single action to be concealed.

All these causes concur to the obscurity of the question, "By whom were hostilities in America commenced?" Perhaps there never can be remembered a time in which hostilities had ceased. Two powerful colonies inflamed with immemorial rivalry, and placed out of the superintendence of the mother nations, were not likely to be long at rest. Some opposition was always going forward, some mischief was every day done or meditated, and the borderers were always better pleased with what they could snatch from their neighbours, than what they had of their own.

In this disposition to reciprocal invasion a cause of dispute never could be wanting. The forests and deserts of America are without land-marks, and therefore cannot be particularly specified in stipulations: the appellations of those wide-extended regions have in every mouth a different meaning, and are understood on either side as inclination happens to contract or extend them. Who has yet pretended to define how much of America is included in Brazil, Mexico, or Peru? It is almost as easy to divide the Atlantic ocean by a line, as clearly to ascertain the limits of those uncultivated, uninhabitable, unmeasured regions.

It is likewise to be considered, that contracts con-

cerning boundaries are often left vague and indefinite without necessity, by the desire of each party to interpret the ambiguity to its own advantage when a fit opportunity shall be found. In forming stipulations, the commissaries are often ignorant, and often negligent; they are sometimes weary with debate, and contract a tedious discussion into general terms, or refer it to a former treaty, which was never understood. The weaker part is always afraid of requiring explanations, and the stronger always has an interest in leaving the question undecided: thus it will happen, without great caution on either side, that after long treaties solemnly ratified, the rights that had been disputed are still equally open to controversy.

In America, it may easily be supposed, that there are tracts of land not yet claimed by either party, and therefore mentioned in no treaties, which yet one or the other may be afterwards inclined to occupy; but to these vacant and unsettled countries each nation may pretend, as each conceives itself intitled to all that is not expressly granted to the other.

Here then is a perpetual ground of contest: every enlargement of the possessions of either will be considered as something taken from the other, and each will endeavour to regain what had never been claimed but that the other occupied it.

Thus obscure in its original is the American contest. It is difficult to find the first invader, or to tell where invasion properly begins; but I suppose it is not to be doubted, that after the last war, when the French had made peace with such apparent superiority, they naturally began to treat us with

less respect in distant parts of the world, and to consider us as a people from whom they had nothing to fear, and who could no longer presume to contravene their designs, or to check their progress.

The power of doing wrong with impunity seldom waits long for the will; and it is reasonable to believe, that in America the French would avow their purpose of aggrandizing themselves with at least as little reserve as in Europe. We may therefore readily believe, that they were unquiet neighbours, and had no great regard to right, which they believed us no longer able to enforce.

That in forming a line of forts behind our colonies, if in no other part of their attempt, they had acted against the general intention, if not against the literal terms of treaties, can scarcely be denied; for it never can be supposed that we intended to be inclosed between the sea and the French garrisons, or preclude ourselves from extending our plantations backwards to any length that our convenience should require.

With dominion is conferred every thing that can secure dominión. He that has the coast, has likewise the sea to a certain distance; he that possesses a fortress, has the right of prohibiting another fortress to be built within the command of its cannon. When, therefore, we planted the coast of North-America, we supposed the possession of the inland region granted to an indefinite extent; and every nation that settled in that part of the world, seems by the permission of every other nation, to have made the same supposition in its own favour.

Here then, perhaps, it will be safest to fix the jus-

tice of our cause; here we are apparently and indisputably injured, and this injury may, according to the practice of nations, be justly resented. Whether we have not in return made some encroachments upon them, must be left doubtful, till our practices on the Ohio shall be stated and vindicated. There are no two nations confining on each other, between whom a war may not always be kindled with plausible pretences on either part, as there is always passing between them a reciprocation of injuries, and fluctuation of encroachments.

From the conclusion of the last peace perpetual complaints of the supplantations and invasions of the French have been sent to Europe from our colonies, and transmitted to our ministers at Paris, where good words were sometimes given us, and the practices of the American commanders were sometimes disowned, but no redress was ever obtained, nor is it probable that any prohibition was sent to America. We were still amused with such doubtful promises as those who are afraid of war are ready to interpret in their own favour, and the French pushed forward their line of fortresses, and seemed to resolve that before our complaints were finally dismissed, all remedy should be hopeless.

We likewise endeavoured at the same time to form a barrier against the Canadians by sending a colony to New Scotland, a cold uncomfortable tract of ground; of which we had long the nominal possession before we really began to occupy it. To this those were invited whom the cessation of war deprived of employment, and made burthensome to their country; and settlers were allured thither by

many fallacious descriptions of fertile valleys and clear skies. What effects these pictures of American happiness had upon my countrymen, I was never informed, but I suppose very few sought provision in those frozen regions, whom guilt or poverty did not drive from their native country. About the boundaries of this new colony there were some disputes, but as there was nothing yet worth a contest, the power of the French was not much exerted on that side; some disturbance was however given, and some skirmishes ensued. But perhaps being peopled chiefly with soldiers, who would rather live by plunder than by agriculture, and who consider war as their best trade, New Scotland would be more obstinately defended than some settlements of far greater value; and the French are too well informed of their own interest, to provoke hostility for no advantage, or to select that country for invasion, where they must hazard much and can win little. They therefore pressed on southward behind our ancient and wealthy settlements, and built fort after fort at such distances that they might conveniently relieve one another, invade our colonies with sudden incursions, and retire to places of safety before our people could unite to oppose them.

This design of the French has been long formed, and long known, both in America and Europe, and might at first have been easily repressed, had force been used instead of expostulation. When the English attempted a settlement upon the island of St. Lucia, the French, whether justly or not, considering it as neutral and forbidden to be occupied by either nation, immediately landed upon it, and

destroyed the houses, wasted the plantations, and drove or carried away the inhabitants. This was done in the time of peace, when mutual professions of friendship were daily exchanged by the two courts, and was not considered as any violation of treaties, nor was any more than a very soft remonstrance made on our part.

The French therefore taught us how to act; but an Hanoverian quarrel with the house of Austria for some time induced us to court, at any expence, the alliance of a nation whose very situation makes them our enemies. We suffered them to destroy our settlements, and to advance their own, which we had an equal right to attack. The time however came at last, when we ventured to quarrel with Spain, and then France no longer suffered the appearance of peace to subsist between us, but armed in defence of her ally.

The events of the war are well known: we pleased ourselves with a victory at Dettingen, where we left our wounded men to the care of our enemies, but our army was broken at Fontenoy and Val; and though after the disgrace which we suffered in the Mediterranean, we had some naval success, and an accidental dearth made peace necessary for the French, yet they prescribed the conditions, obliged us to give hostages, and acted as conquerors, though as conquerors of moderation.

In this war the Americans distinguished themselves in a manner unknown and unexpected. The New English raised an army, and under the command of Pepperel took Cape Breton, with the assistance of the fleet. This is the most important for-

tress in America. We pleased ourselves so much with the acquisition, that we could not think of restoring it; and, among the arguments used to enflame the people against Charles Stuart, it was very clamorously urged, that if he gained the kingdom, he would give Cape Breton back to the French.

The French however had a more easy expedient to regain Cape Breton than by exalting Charles Stuart to the English throne: They took in their turn fort St. George, and had our East-India Company wholly in their power, whom they restored at the peace to their former possessions, that they may continue to export our silver.

Cape Breton therefore was restored, and the French were re-established in America, with equal power and greater spirit, having lost nothing by the war which they had before gained.

To the general reputation of their arms, and that habitual superiority which they derive from it, they owe their power in America, rather than to any real strength or circumstances of advantage. Their numbers are yet not great; their trade, though daily improved, is not very extensive; their country is barren; their fortresses, though numerous, are weak, and rather shelters from wild beasts, or savage nations, than places built for defence against bombs or cannons. Cape Breton has been found not to be impregnable; nor, if we consider the state of the places possessed by the two nations in America, is there any reason upon which the French should have presumed to molest us, but that they thought our spirit so broken that we durst not resist them; and

in this opinion our long forbearance easily confirmed them.

We forgot, or rather avoided to think, that what we delayed to do must be done at last, and done with more difficulty, as it was delayed longer; that while we were complaining, and they were eluding, or answering our complaints, fort was rising upon fort, and one invasion made a precedent for another.

This confidence of the French is exalted by some real advantages. If they possess in those countries less than we, they have more to gain, and less to hazard; if they are less numerous, they are better united.

The French compose one body with one head. They have all the same interest, and agree to pursue it by the same means. They are subject to a governor commissioned by an absolute monarch, and participating the authority of his master. Designs are therefore formed without debate, and executed without impediment. They have yet more martial than mercantile ambition, and seldom suffer their military schemes to be entangled with collateral projects of gain: they have no wish but for conquest, of which they justly consider riches as the consequence.

Some advantages they will always have as invaders. They make war at the hazard of their enemies: the contest being carried on in our territories, we must lose more by a victory, than they will suffer by a defeat. They will subsist, while they stay, upon our plantations; and perhaps destroy them when they can stay no longer. If we pursue them, and carry the war into their dominions,

our difficulties will increase every step as we advance, for we shall leave plenty behind us, and find nothing in Canada but lakes and forests barren and trackless; our enemies will shut themselves up in their forts, against which it is difficult to bring cannon through so rough a country, and which, if they are provided with good magazines, will soon starve those who besiege them.

All these are the natural effects of their government and situation; they are accidentally more formidable as they are less happy. But the favour of the Indians which they enjoy, with very few exceptions, among all the nations of the northern continent, we ought to consider with other thoughts; this favour we might have enjoyed, if we had been careful to deserve it. The French, by having these savage nations on their side, are always supplied with spies and guides, and with auxiliaries, like the Tartars to the Turks, or the Hussars to the Germans, of no great use against troops ranged in order of battle, but very well qualified to maintain a war among woods and rivulets, where much mischief may be done by unexpected onsets, and safety be obtained by quick retreats. They can waste a colony by sudden inroads, surprize the straggling planters, frighten the inhabitants into towns, hinder the cultivation of lands, and starve those whom they are not able to conquer*.

* In the Magazine this article is promised "To be continued:" but the author was, bywhatever means, diverted from it, and no continuation appears.

AN

INTRODUCTION

TO THE

POLITICAL STATE OF GREAT BRITAIN.

WRITTEN IN THE YEAR 1756*.

THE present system of English politics may properly be said to have taken rise in the reign of Queen Elizabeth. At this time, the protestant religion was established, which naturally allied us to the reformed state, and made all the popish powers our enemies.

We began in the same reign to extend our trade, by which we made it necessary to ourselves to watch the commercial progress of our neighbours; and if not to incommode and obstruct their traffick, to hinder them from impairing ours.

We then likewise settled colonies in America, which was become the great scene of European ambition; for, seeing with what treasures the Spaniards were annually enriched from Mexico and Peru, every nation imagined, that an American conquest or plantation would certainly fill the mother country with gold and silver. This produced a large extent of very distant dominions, of which we, at this time, neither knew nor foresaw the advantage or incumbrance;

* This was the introductory article to the Literary Magazine, No. I. C.

we seem to have snatched them into our hands, upon no very just principles of policy, only because every state, according to a prejudice of long continuance, concludes itself more powerful as its territories become larger.

The discoveries of new regions, which were then every day made, the profit of remote traffick, and the necessity of long voyages, produced, in a few years, a great multiplication of shipping. The sea was considered as the wealthy element; and, by degrees, a new kind of sovereignty arose, called naval dominion.

As the chief trade of the world, so the chief maritime power was at first in the hands of the Portuguese and Spaniards, who, by a compact, to which the consent of other princes was not asked, had divided the newly discovered countries between them; but the crown of Portugal having fallen to the king of Spain, or being seized by him, he was master of the ships of the two nations, with which he kept all the coasts of Europe in alarm, till the Armada, which he had raised at a vast expence for the conquest of England, was destroyed, which put a stop, and almost an end, to the naval power of the Spaniards.

At this time the Dutch, who were oppressed by the Spaniards, and feared yet greater evils than they felt, resolved no longer to endure the insolence of their masters: they therefore revolted; and after a struggle, in which they were assisted by the money and forces of Elizabeth, erected an independent and powerful commonwealth.

When the inhabitants of the Low-Countries had formed their system of government, and some re-

mission of the war gave them leisure to form schemes of future prosperity, they easily perceived, that as their territories were narrow, and their numbers small, they could preserve themselves only by that power which is the consequence of wealth; and that, by a people whose country produced only the necessaries of life, wealth was not to be acquired, but from foreign dominions, and by the transportation of the products of one country into another.

From this necessity, thus justly estimated, arose a plan of commerce, which was for many years prosecuted with industry and success, perhaps never seen in the world before, and by which the poor tenants of mud-walled villages and impassable bogs erected themselves into high and mighty states, who put the greatest monarchs at defiance, whose alliance was courted by the proudest, and whose power was dreaded by the fiercest nation. By the establishment of this state there arose to England a new ally, and a new rival.

At this time, which seems to be the period destined for the change of the face of Europe, France began first to rise into power; and, from defending her own provinces with difficulty and fluctuating success, to threaten her neighbours with incroachments and devastations. Henry the Fourth having, after a long struggle, obtained the crown, found it easy to govern nobles exhausted and wearied with a long civil war, and having composed the disputes between the Protestants and Papists, so as to obtain at least a truce for both parties, was at leisure to accumulate treasure, and raise forces which he purposed to have employed in a design of settling

for ever the balance of Europe. Of this great scheme he lived not to see the vanity, or to feel the disappointment; for he was murdered in the midst of his mighty preparations.

The French, however, were in this reign taught to know their own power; and the great designs of a king, whose wisdom they had so long experienced, even though they were not brought to actual experiment, disposed them to consider themselves as masters of the destiny of their neighbours; and, from that time, he that shall nicely examine their schemes and conduct, will, I believe, find that they began to take an air of superiority to which they had never pretended before; and that they have been always employed more or less openly upon schemes of dominion, though with frequent interruptions from domestic troubles, and with those intermissions which human counsels must always suffer, as men intrusted with great affairs are dissipated in youth, and languid in age, are embarrassed by competitors, or, without any external reason, change their minds.

France was now no longer in dread of insults and invasions from England. She was not only able to maintain her own territories, but prepared, on all occasions, to invade others; and we had now a neighbour whose interest it was to be an enemy, and who has disturbed us, from that time to this, with open hostility or secret machinations.

Such was the state of England and its neighbours, when Elizabeth left the crown to James of Scotland. It has not, I think, been frequently observed by historians at how critical a time the union of the two kingdoms happened. Had England and Scotland

continued separate kingdoms, when France was established in the full possession of her natural power, the Scots, in continuance of the league, which it would now have been more than ever their interest to observe, would, upon every instigation of the French court, have raised an army with French money, and harassed us with an invasion, in which they would have thought themselves successful, whatever numbers they might have left behind them. To a people warlike and indigent, an incursion into a rich country is never hurtful. The pay of France and the plunder of the northern counties, would always have tempted them to hazard their lives, and we should have been under a necessity of keeping a line of garrisons along our border.

This trouble, however, we escaped by the accession of King James; but it is uncertain, whether his natural disposition did not injure us more than this accidental condition happened to benefit us. He was a man of great theoretical knowledge, but of no practical wisdom: he was very well able to discern the true interest of himself, his kingdom, and his posterity, but sacrificed it, upon all occasions, to his present pleasure or his present ease; so conscious of his own knowledge and abilities, that he would not suffer a minister to govern, and so lax of attention, and timorous of opposition, that he was not able to govern for himself. With this character James quietly saw the Dutch invade our commerce; the French grew every day stronger and stronger; and the Protestant interest, of which he boasted himself the head, was oppressed on every side, while he writ, and hunted, and dispatched ambassadors, who, when their master's weak-

ness was once known, were treated in foreign courts with very little ceremony. James, however, took care to be flattered at home, and was neither angry nor ashamed at the appearance that he made in other countries.

Thus England grew weaker, or, what is in political estimation the same thing, saw her neighbours grow stronger, without receiving proportionable additions to her own power. Not that the mischief was so great as it is generally conceived or represented; for, I believe, it may be made to appear, that the wealth of the nation was, in this reign, very much increased, though that of the crown was lessened. Our reputation for war was impaired; but commerce seems to have been carried on with great industry and vigour, and nothing was wanting, but that we should have defended ourselves from the incroachments of our neighbours.

The inclination to plant colonies in America still continued, and this being the only project in which men of adventure and enterprise could exert their qualities in a pacific reign, multitudes, who were discontented with their condition in their native country, and such multitudes there will always be, sought relief, or at least a change in the western regions, where they settled in the northern part of the continent, at a distance from the Spaniards, at that time almost the only nation that had any power or will to obstruct us.

Such was the condition of this country when the unhappy Charles inherited the crown. He had seen the errors of his father, without being able to prevent them, and, when he began his reign, endeavoured to raise the nation to its former dignity. The French

Papists had begun a new war upon the Protestants: Charles sent a fleet to invade Rhée and relieve Rochelle, but his attempts were defeated, and the Protestants were subdued. The Dutch, grown wealthy and strong, claimed the right of fishing in the British seas: this claim the king, who saw the increasing power of the states of Holland, resolved to contest. But for this end it was necessary to build a fleet, and a fleet could not be built without expence: he was advised to levy ship-money, which gave occasion to the Civil War, of which the events and conclusion are too well known.

While the inhabitants of this island were embroiled among themselves, the power of France and Holland was every day increasing. The Dutch had overcome the difficulties of their infant commonwealth; and, as they still retained their vigour and industry, from rich grew continually richer, and from powerful more powerful. They extended their traffick, and had not yet admitted luxury; so that they had the means and the will to accumulate wealth without any incitement to spend it. The French, who wanted nothing to make them powerful, but a prudent regulation of their revenues, and a proper use of their natural advantages, by the successive care of skilful ministers, became every day stronger, and more conscious of their strength.

About this time it was, that the French first began to turn their thoughts to traffick and navigation, and to desire like other nations an American territory. All the fruitful and valuable parts of the western world were already either occupied or claimed, and nothing remained for France but the leavings of

other navigators, for she was not yet haughty enough to seize what the neighbouring powers had already appropriated.

The French therefore contented themselves with sending a colony to Canada, a cold uncomfortable uninviting region, from which nothing but furs and fish were to be had, and where the new inhabitants could only pass a laborious and necessitous life, in perpetual regret of the deliciousness and plenty of their native country.

Notwithstanding the opinion which our countrymen have been taught to entertain of the comprehension and foresight of French politicians, I am not able to persuade myself, that when this colony was first planted, it was thought of much value, even by those that encouraged it; there was probably nothing more intended than to provide a drain into which the waste of an exuberant nation might be thrown, a place where those who could do no good might live without the power of doing mischief. Some new advantage they undoubtedly saw, or imagined themselves to see, and what more was necessary to the establishment of the colony was supplied by natural inclination to experiments, and that impatience of doing nothing, to which mankind perhaps owe much of what is imagined to be effected by more splendid motives.

In this region of desolate sterility they settled themselves, upon whatever principle; and as they have from that time had the happiness of a government by which no interest has been neglected, nor any part of their subjects overlooked, they have by continual encouragement and assistance from France,

been perpetually enlarging their bounds and increasing their numbers.

These were at first, like other nations who invaded America, inclined to consider the neighbourhood of the natives, as troublesome and dangerous, and are charged with having destroyed great numbers: but they are now grown wiser, if not honester, and instead of endeavouring to frighten the Indians away, they invite them to intermarriage and cohabitation, and allure them by all practicable methods to become the subjects of the king of France.

If the Spaniards, when they first took possession of the newly-discovered world, instead of destroying the inhabitants by thousands, had either had the urbanity or the policy to have conciliated them by kind treatment, and to have united them gradually to their own people, such an accession might have been made to the power of the king of Spain, as would have made him far the greatest monarch that ever yet ruled in the globe; but the opportunity was lost by foolishness and cruelty, and now can never be recovered.

When the parliament had finally prevailed over our king, and the army over the parliament, the interests of the two commonwealths of England and Holland soon appeared to be opposite, and a new government declared war against the Dutch. In this contest was exerted the utmost power of the two nations, and the Dutch were finally defeated, yet not with such evidence of superiority as left us much reason to boast our victory: they were obliged however to solicit peace, which was granted them on easy conditions; and Cromwell, who was now possessed of

the supreme power, was left at leisure to pursue other designs.

The European powers had not yet ceased to look with envy on the Spanish acquisitions iu America, and therefore Cromwell thought, that if he gained any part of these celebrated regions, he should exalt his own reputation and enrich the country. He therefore quarrelled with the Spaniards upon some such subject of contention as he that is resolved upon hostility may always find, and sent Penn and Venables into the western seas. They first landed in Hispaniola, whence they were driven off with no great reputation to themselves; and that they might not return without having done something, they afterwards invaded Jamaica, where they found less resistance, and obtained that island, which was afterwards consigned to us, being probably of little value to the Spaniards, and continues to this day a place of great wealth, and dreadful wickedness, a den of tyrants, and a dungeon of slaves.

Cromwell, who perhaps had not leisure to study foreign politicks, was very fatally mistaken with regard to Spain and France. Spain had been the last power in Europe which had openly pretended to give law to other nations, and the memory of this terror remained when the real cause was at an end. We had more lately been frighted by Spain than by France, and though very few were then alive of the generation that had their sleep broken by the Armada, yet the name of the Spaniards was still terrible, and a war against them was pleasing to the people.

Our own troubles had left us very little desire to

look out upon the continent, and inveterate prejudice hindered us from perceiving, that for more than half a century the power of France had been increasing, and that of Spain had been growing less; nor does it seem to have been remembered, which yet required no great depth of policy to discern, that of two monarchs, neither of which could be long our friend, it was our interest to have the weaker near us; or that if a war should happen, Spain, however wealthy or strong in herself, was by the dispersion of her territories more obnoxious to the attacks of a naval power, and consequently had more to fear from us, and had it less in her power to hurt us.

All these considerations were overlooked by the wisdom of that age, and Cromwell assisted the French to drive the Spaniards out of Flanders, at a time when it was our interest to have supported the Spaniards against France, as formerly the Hollanders against Spain, by which we might at least have retarded the growth of the French power, though, I think, it must have finally prevailed.

During this time our colonies, which were less disturbed by our commotions than the mother-country, naturally increased; it is probable that many who were unhappy at home took shelter in those remote regions, where, for the sake of inviting greater numbers, every one was allowed to think and live his own way. The French settlement in the mean time went slowly forward, too inconsiderable to raise any jealousy, and too weak to attempt any encroachments.

When Cromwell died, the confusions that followed produced the restoration of monarchy, and some time

was employed in repairing the ruins of our constitution, and restoring the nation to a state of peace. In every change there will be many that suffer real or imaginary grievances, and therefore many will be dissatisfied. This was, perhaps, the reason why several colonies had their beginning in the reign of Charles the Second. The Quakers willingly sought refuge in Pennsylvania; and it is not unlikely that Carolina owed its inhabitants to the remains of that restless disposition, which had given so much disturbance to our country, and had now no opportunity of acting at home.

The Dutch still continuing to increase in wealth and power, either kindled the resentment of their neighbours by their insolence, or raised their envy by their prosperity. Charles made war upon them without much advantage; but they were obliged at last to confess him the sovereign of the narrow seas. They were reduced almost to extremities by an invasion from France; but soon recovered from their consternation, and, by the fluctuation of war, regained their cities and provinces with the same speed as they had lost them.

During the time of Charles the Second the power of France was every day increasing; and Charles, who never disturbed himself with remote consequences, saw the progress of her arms, and the extension of her dominions, with very little uneasiness. He was indeed sometimes driven by the prevailing faction into confederacies against her: but as he had, probably, a secret partiality in her favour, he never persevered long in acting against her, nor ever acted with much vigour: so that, by his feeble resistance,

he rather raised her confidence than hindered her designs.

About this time the French first began to perceive the advantage of commerce, and the importance of a naval force; and such encouragement was given to manufactures, and so eagerly was every project received by which trade could be advanced, that, in a few years, the sea was filled with their ships, and all the ports of the world crowded with their merchants. There is, perhaps, no instance in human story of such a change produced in so short a time in the schemes and manners of a people, of so many new sources of wealth opened, and such numbers of artificers and merchants made to start out of the ground, as was seen in the ministry of Colbert.

Now it was that the power of France became formidable to England. Her dominions were large before, and her armies numerous; but her operations were necessarily confined to the continent. She had neither ships for the transportation of her troops, nor money for their support in distant expeditions. Colbert saw both these wants, and saw that commerce only would supply them. The fertility of their country furnishes the French with commodities; the poverty of the common people keeps the price of labour low. By the obvious practice of selling much and buying little, it was apparent that they would soon draw the wealth of other countries into their own; and, by carrying out their merchandize in their own vessels, a numerous body of sailors would quickly be raised.

This was projected, and this was performed. The king of France was soon enabled to bribe those whom

he could not conquer, and to terrify with his fleets those whom his armies could not have approached. The influence of France was suddenly diffused all over the globe; her arms were dreaded, and her pensions received in remote regions, and those were almost ready to acknowledge her sovereignty, who, a few years before, had scarcely heard her name. She thundered on the coasts of Africa, and received ambassadors from Siam.

So much may be done by one wise man endeavouring with honesty the advantage of the publick. But that we may not rashly condemn all ministers as wanting wisdom or integrity whose counsels have produced no such apparent benefits to their country, it must be considered, that Colbert had means of acting, which our government does not allow. He could enforce all his orders by the power of an absolute monarch; he could compel individuals to sacrifice their private profit to the general good; he could make one understanding preside over many hands, and remove difficulties by quick and violent expedients. Where no man thinks himself under any obligation to submit to another, and, instead of co-operating in one great scheme, every one hastens through by-paths to private profit, no great change can suddenly be made; nor is superior knowledge of much effect, where every man resolves to use his own eyes and his own judgment, and every one applauds his own dexterity and diligence, in proportion as he becomes rich sooner than his neighbour.

Colonies are always the effects and causes of navigation. They who visit many countries find some

in which pleasure, profit, or safety invite them to settle; and these settlements, when they are once made, must keep a perpetual correspondence with the original country to which they are subject, and on which they depend for protection in danger, and supplies in necessity. So that a country once discovered and planted, must always find employment for shipping, more certainly than any foreign commerce, which, depending on casualties, may be sometimes more and sometimes less, and which other nations may contract or suppress. A trade to colonies can never be much impaired, being, in reality, only an intercourse between distant provinces of the same empire, from which intruders are easily excluded; likewise the interest and affection of the correspondent parties, however distant, is the same.

On this reason all nations, whose power has been exerted on the ocean, have fixed colonies in remote parts of the world; and while those colonies subsisted, navigation, if it did not increase, was always preserved from total decay. With this policy the French were well acquainted, and therefore improved and augmented the settlements in America, and other regions, in proportion as they advanced their schemes of naval greatness.

The exact time in which they made their acquisitions in America, or other quarters of the globe, it is not necessary to collect. It is sufficient to observe, that their trade and their colonies increased together: and, if their naval armaments were carried on, as they really were, in greater proportion to their commerce, than can be practised in other countries, it must be attributed to the martial disposition

at that time prevailing in the nation, to the frequent wars which Lewis the Fourteenth made upon his neighbours, and to the extensive commerce of the English and Dutch, which afforded so much plunder to privateers, that war was more lucrative than traffick.

Thus the naval power of France continued to increase during the reign of Charles the Second, who, between his fondness of ease and pleasure, the struggles of faction which he could not suppress, and his inclination to the friendship of absolute monarchy, had not much power or desire to repress it. And of James the Second, it could not be expected that he should act against his neighbours with great vigour, having the whole body of his subjects to oppose. He was not ignorant of the real interest of his country; he desired its power and its happiness, and thought rightly, that there is no happiness without religion; but he thought very erroneously and absurdly, that there is no religion without popery.

When the necessity of self-preservation had impelled the subjects of James to drive him from the throne, there came a time in which the passions, as well as interest of the government, acted against the French, and in which it may perhaps be reasonably doubted, whether the desire of humbling France was not stronger than that of exalting England: of this, however, it is not necessary to enquire, since, though the intention may be different, the event will be the same. All mouths were now open to declare what every eye had observed before, that the arms of France were become dangerous to Europe; and that,

if her encroachments were suffered a little longer, resistance would be too late.

It was now determined to re-assert the empire of the sea; but it was more easily determined than performed: the French made a vigorous defence against the united power of England and Holland, and were sometimes masters of the ocean, though the two maritime powers were united against them. At length, however, they were defeated at La Hogue; a great part of their fleet was destroyed, and they were reduced to carry on the war only with their privateers, from whom there was suffered much petty mischief, though there was no danger of conquest or invasion. They distressed our merchants, and obliged us to the continual expence of convoys and fleets of observation; and, by skulking in little coves and shallow waters, escaped our pursuit.

In this reign began our confederacy with the Dutch, which mutual interest has now improved into a friendship, conceived by some to be inseparable: and from that time the States began to be termed, in the style of politicians, our faithful friends, the allies which Nature has given us, our Protestant confederates, and by many other names of national endearment. We have, it is true, the same interest, as opposed to France, and some resemblance of religion, as opposed to popery; but we have such a rivalry, in respect of commerce, as will always keep us from very close adherence to each other. No mercantile man, or mercantile nation, has any friendship but for money, and alliance between them will last no longer than their common safety or common profit is endangered; no longer

than they have an enemy, who threatens to take from each more than either can steal from the other.

We were both sufficiently interested in repressing the ambition, and obstructing the commerce of France; and therefore we concurred with as much fidelity and as regular co-operation as is commonly found. The Dutch were in immediate danger, the armies of their enemies hovered over their country, and therefore they were obliged to dismiss for a time their love of money, and their narrow projects of private profit, and to do what a trader does not willingly at any time believe necessary, to sacrifice a part for the preservation of the whole.

A peace was at length made, and the French with their usual vigour and industry rebuilt their fleets, restored their commerce, and became in a very few years able to contest again the dominion of the sea. Their ships were well-built, and always very numerously manned; their commanders, having no hopes but from their bravery or their fortune, were resolute, and being very carefully educated for the sea, were eminently skilful.

All this was soon perceived, when queen Anne, the then darling of England, declared war against France. Our success by sea, though sufficient to keep us from dejection, was not such as dejected our enemies. It is, indeed, to be confessed, that we did not exert our whole naval strength; Marlborough was the governor of our counsels, and the great view of Marlborough was a war by land, which he knew well how to conduct, both to the honour of his country, and his own profit. The fleet was therefore starved that the army might

be supplied, and naval advantages were neglected for the sake of taking a town in Flanders, to be garrisoned by our allies. The French, however, were so weakened by one defeat after another, that, though their fleet was never destroyed by any total overthrow, they at last retained it in their harbours, and applied their whole force to the resistance of the confederate army, that now began to approach their frontiers, and threatened to lay waste their provinces and cities.

In the latter years of this war, the danger of their neighbourhood in America seems to have been considered, and a fleet was fitted out and supplied with a proper number of land forces to seize Quebec, the capital of Canada, or New France; but this expedition miscarried, like that of Anson against the Spaniards, by the lateness of the season, and our ignorance of the coasts on which we were to act. We returned with loss, and only excited our enemies to greater vigilance, and perhaps to stronger fortifications.

When the peace of Utrecht was made, which those who clamoured among us most loudly against it, found it their interest to keep, the French applied themselves with the utmost industry to the extension of their trade, which we were so far from hindering, that for many years our ministry thought their friendship of such value, as to be cheaply purchased by whatever concession.

Instead therefore of opposing, as we had hitherto professed to do, the boundless ambition of the House of Bourbon, we became on a sudden solicitous for its exaltation, and studious of its interest. We assisted the schemes of France and Spain with our

fleets, and endeavoured to make those our friends by servility, whom nothing but power will keep quiet, and who must always be our enemies while they are endeavouring to grow greater, and we determine to remain free.

That nothing might be omitted which could testify our willingness to continue on any terms the good friends of France, we were content to assist not only their conquests but their traffick; and though we did not openly repeal the prohibitory laws, we yet tamely suffered commerce to be carried on between the two nations, and wool was daily imported, to enable them to make cloth, which they carried to our markets and sold cheaper than we.

During all this time, they were extending and strengthening their settlements in America, contriving new modes of traffick, and framing new alliances with the Indian nations. They began now to find these northern regions, barren and desolate as they are, sufficiently valuable to desire at least a nominal possession, that might furnish a pretence for the exclusion of others; they therefore extended their claim to tracts of land, which they could never hope to occupy, took care to give their dominions an unlimited magnitude, have given in their maps the name of Louisiana to a country, of which part is claimed by the Spaniards, and part by the English, without any regard to ancient boundaries, or prior discovery.

When the return of Columbus from his great voyage had filled all Europe with wonder and curiosity, Henry the Seventh sent Sebastian Cabot to try what could be found for the benefit of Eng-

land: he declined the track of Columbus, and steering to the westward, fell upon the island, which, from that time, was called by the English, Newfoundland. Our princes seem to have considered themselves as entitled by their right of prior seizure to the northern parts of America, as the Spaniards were allowed by universal consent their claim to the southern region for the same reason; and we accordingly made our principal settlements within the limits of our own discoveries, and, by degrees, planted the eastern coast from Newfoundland to Georgia.

As we had, according to the European principles, which allow nothing to the natives of these regions, our choice of situation in this extensive country, we naturally fixed our habitations along the coast, for the sake of traffick and correspondence, and all the conveniencies of navigable rivers. And when one port or river was occupied, the next colony, instead of fixing themselves in the inland parts behind the former, went on southward, till they pleased themselves with another maritime situation. For this reason our colonies have more length than depth; their extent from east to west, or from the sea to the interior country, bears no proportion to their reach along the coast from north to south.

It was, however, understood, by a kind of tacit compact among the commercial powers, that possession of the coast included a right to the inland: and, therefore, the charters granted to the several colonies limit their districts only from north to south, leaving their possessions from east to west unlimited and discretional, supposing that, as the colony increases, they may take lands as they shall want them,

the possession of the coasts excluding other navigators, and the unhappy Indians having no right of nature or of nations.

This right of the first European possessor was not disputed till it became the interest of the French to question it. Canada, or New France, on which they made their first settlement, is situated eastward of our colonies, between which they pass up the great river of St. Lawrence, with Newfoundland on the north, and Nova Scotia on the south. Their establishment in this country was neither envied nor hindered; and they lived here, in no great numbers, a long time, neither molesting their European neighbours, nor molested by them.

But when they grew stronger and more numerous, they began to extend their territories; and as it is natural for men to seek their own convenience, the desire of more fertile and agreeable habitations tempted them southward. There is land enough to the north and west of their settlements, which they may occupy with as good right as can be shewn by the other European usurpers, and which neither the English nor Spaniards will contest; but of this cold region they have enough already, and their resolution was to get a better country. This was not to be had but by settling to the west of our plantations, on ground which has been hitherto supposed to belong to us.

Hither, therefore, they resolved to remove, and to fix, at their own discretion, the western border of our colonies, which was heretofore considered as unlimited. Thus by forming a line of forts, in some measure parallel to the coast, they inclose us between

their garrisons and the sea, and not only hinder our extension westward, but, whenever they have a sufficient navy in the sea, can harass us on each side, as they can invade us at pleasure from one or other of their forts.

This design was not perhaps discovered as soon as it was formed, and was certainly not opposed so soon as it was discovered; we foolishly hoped, that their encroachments would stop, that they would be prevailed on by treaty and remonstrance, to give up what they had taken, or to put limits to themselves. We suffered them to establish one settlement after another, to pass boundary after boundary, and add fort to fort, till at last they grew strong enough to avow their designs, and defy us to obstruct them.

By these provocations long continued, we are at length forced into a war, in which we have had hitherto very ill fortune. Our troops under Braddock were dishonourably defeated; our fleets have yet done nothing more than taken a few merchantships, and have distressed some private families, but have very little weakened the power of France. The detention of their seamen makes it indeed less easy for them to fit out their navy; but this deficiency will be easily supplied by the alacrity of the nation, which is always eager for war.

It is unpleasing to represent our affairs to our own disadvantage; yet it is necessary to shew the evils which we desire to be removed; and, therefore, some account may very properly be given of the measures which have given them their present superiority.

They are said to be supplied from France with better governours than our colonies have the fate to obtain from England. A French governour is sel-

dom chosen for any other reason than his qualifications for his trust. To be a bankrupt at home, or to be so infamously vicious that he cannot be decently protected in his own country, seldom recommends any man to the government of a French colony. Their officers are commonly skilful either in war or commerce, and are taught to have no expectation of honour or preferment, but from the justice and vigour of their administration.

Their great security is the friendship of the natives, and to this advantage they have certainly an indubitable right; because it is the consequence of their virtue. It is ridiculous to imagine, that the friendship of nations, whether civil or barbarous, can be gained and kept but by kind treatment; and surely they who intrude, uncalled, upon the country of a distant people, ought to consider the natives as worthy of common kindness, and content themselves to rob without insulting them. The French, as has been already observed, admit the Indians, by intermarriage, to an equality with themselves; and those nations, with which they have no such near intercourse, they gain over to their interest by honesty in their dealings. Our factors and traders, having no other purpose in view than immediate profit, use all the arts of an European counting-house, to defraud the simple hunter of his furs.

These are some of the causes of our present weakness; our planters are always quarrelling with their governour, whom they consider as less to be trusted than the French; and our traders hourly alienate the Indians by their tricks and oppressions, and we continue every day to shew by new proofs, that no people can be great who have ceased to be virtuous.

OBSERVATIONS

ON THE

TREATY

Between his BRITANNIC Majesty and Imperial Majesty of all the RUSSIAS, signed at Moscow, Dec. 11, 1742; the Treaty between his BRITANNIC Majesty and the Landgrave of HESSE CASSEL, signed June 18, 1755; and the Treaty between his BRITANNIC Majesty and her Imperial Majesty of all the RUSSIAS, signed at St. Petersburg, Sept. $\frac{13}{18}$, 1755.*

THESE are the treaties which for many months filled the senate with debates, and the kingdom with clamours; which were represented on one part as instances of the most profound policy and the most active care of the public welfare, and on the other, as acts of the most contemptible folly and most flagrant corruption, as violations of the great trust of government, by which the wealth of Britain is sacrificed to private views, and to a particular province.

What honours our ministers and negotiators may expect to be paid to their wisdom, it is hard to determine, for the demands of vanity are not easily estimated. They should consider, before they call too loudly for encomiums, that they live in an age when the power of gold is no longer a secret, and in which

* From the Literary Magazine for July 1756.

no man finds much difficulty in making a bargain with money in his hand. To hire troops is very easy to those who are willing to pay their price. It appears, therefore, that whatever has been done, was done by means which every man knows how to use, if fortune is kind enough to put them in his power. To arm the nations of the north in the cause of Britain, to bring down hosts against France from the polar circle, has indeed a sound of magnificence, which might induce a mind unacquainted with public affairs to imagine, that some effort of policy more than human had been exerted, by which distant nations were armed in our defence, and the influence of Britain was extended to the utmost limits of the world. But when this striking phenomenon of negotiation is more nearly inspected, it appears a bargain merely mercantile of one power that wanted troops more than money, with another that wanted money, and was burdened with troops; between whom their mutual wants made an easy contract, and who have no other friendship for each other, than reciprocal convenience happens to produce.

We shall therefore leave the praises of our ministers to others, yet not without this acknowledgment, that if they have done little, they do not seem to boast of doing much; and that whether influenced by modesty or frugality, they have not wearied the public with mercenary panegyrists, but have been content with the concurrence of the parliament, and have not much solicited the applauses of the people.

In public as in private transactions, men more frequently deviate from the right for want of virtue than of wisdom; and those who declare themselves dissatis-

fied with these treaties, impute them not to folly but corruption.

By these advocates for the independence of Britain, who, whether their arguments be just or not, seem to be most favourably heard by the people, it is alleged, that these treaties are expensive without advantage; that they waste the treasure, which we want for our own defence, upon a foreign interest; and pour the gains of our commerce into the coffers of princes, whose enmity cannot hurt nor friendship help us; who set their subjects to sale like sheep or oxen, without any enquiry after the intentions of the buyer, and will withdraw the troops with which they have supplied us, whenever a higher bidder shall be found.

This perhaps is true, but whether it be true or false is not worth enquiry. We did not expect to buy their friendship, but their troops; nor did we examine upon what principle we were supplied with assistance; it was sufficient that we wanted forces, and that they were willing to furnish them. Policy never pretended to make men wise and good; the utmost of her power is to make the best use of men such as they are, to lay hold on lucky hours, to watch the present wants and present interests of others, and make them subservient to her own convenience.

It is farther urged with great vehemence, that these troops of Russia and Hesse are not hired in defence of Britain; that we are engaged in a naval war for territories on a distant continent; and that these troops, though mercenaries, can never be auxiliaries; that they increase the burden of the war, without hastening its conclusion, or promoting its success; since they can neither be sent into America,

the only part of the world where England can, on the present occasion, have any employment for land forces, nor be put into our ships, by which, and by which only, we are now to oppose and subdue our enemies.

Nature has stationed us in an island inaccessible but by sea; and we are now at war with an enemy, whose naval power is inferior to our own, and from whom therefore we are in no danger of invasion: to what purpose then are troops hired in such uncommon numbers? To what end do we procure strength which we cannot exert, and exhaust the nation with subsidies at a time when nothing is disputed, which the princes who receive our subsidies can defend? If we had purchased ships, and hired seamen, we had apparently increased our power, and made ourselves formidable to our enemies, and, if any increase of security be possible, had secured ourselves still better from invasions: but what can the regiments of Russia or of Hesse contribute to the defence of the coasts of England; or by what assistance can they repay us the sums which we have stipulated to pay for their costly friendship?

The King of Great Britain has indeed a territory on the continent, of which the natives of this island scarcely knew the name till the present family was called to the throne, and yet know little more than that our King visits it from time to time. Yet for the defence of this country are these subsidies apparently paid, and these troops evidently levied. The riches of our nation are sent into distant countries, and the strength which should be employed in our own quarrel consequently impaired, for the sake of dominions, the interest of which has no connexion

with ours, and which, by the act of succession, we took care to keep separate from the British kingdoms.

To this the advocates for the subsidies say, that unreasonable stipulations, whether in the act of settlement or any other contract, are in themselves void; and that if a country connected with England by subjection to the same sovereign, is endangered by an English quarrel, it must be defended by English force; and that we do not engage in a war for the sake of Hanover, but that Hanover is for our sake exposed to danger.

Those who brought in these foreign troops have still something further to say in their defence, and of no honest plea is it our intention to defraud them. They grant, that the terrour of invasion may possibly be groundless, that the French may want the power or the courage to attack us in our own country; but they maintain, likewise, that an invasion is possible, that the armies of France are so numerous that she may hazard a large body on the ocean, without leaving herself exposed; that she is exasperated to the utmost degree of acrimony, and would be willing to do us mischief at her own peril. They allow that the invaders may be intercepted at sea, or that, if they land, they may be defeated by our native troops. But they say, and say justly, that danger is better avoided than encountered; that those ministers consult more the good of their country who prevent invasion, than repel it; and that if these auxiliaries have only saved us from the anxiety of expecting an enemy at our doors, or from the tumult and distress which an invasion, how soon soever repressed, would have produced, the publick money is not spent in vain.

These arguments are admitted by some, and by others rejected. But even those that admit them, can admit them only as pleas of necessity; for they consider the reception of mercenaries into our country as the desperate remedy of desperate distress; and think with great reason, that all means of prevention should be tried to save us from any second need of such doubtful succours.

That we are able to defend our own country, that arms are most safely entrusted to our own hands, and that we have strength, and skill, and courage, equal to the best of the nations of the continent, is the opinion of every Englishman who can think without prejudice, and speak without influence; and therefore it will not be easy to persuade the nation, a nation long renowned for valour, that it can need the help of foreigners to defend it from invasion. We have been long without the need of arms by our good fortune, and long without the use by our negligence; so long, that the practice and almost the name of our old trained-bands is forgotten. But the story of ancient times will tell us, that the trained-bands were once able to maintain the quiet and safety of their country; and reason without history will inform us, that those men are most likely to fight bravely, or at least to fight obstinately, who fight for their own houses and farms, for their own wives and children.

A bill was therefore offered for the prevention of any future danger or invasion, or necessity of mercenary forces, by re-establishing and improving the militia. It was passed by the Commons, but rejected by the Lords. That this bill, the first essay of political consideration as a subject long forgotten, should

be liable to objection, cannot be strange; but surely, justice, policy, common reason require that we should be trusted with our own defence, and be kept no longer in such a helpless state as at once to dread our enemies and confederates.

By the bill, such as it was formed, sixty thousand men would always be in arms. We have shewn * how they may be upon any exigence easily increased to an hundred and fifty thousand; and I believe, neither our friends nor enemies will think it proper to insult our coasts when they expect to find upon them an hundred and fifty thousand Englishmen with swords in their hands.

* See Literary Mag. No. II. p. 63.

INTRODUCTION

TO THE

PROCEEDINGS OF THE COMMITTEE

APPOINTED TO MANAGE THE

CONTRIBUTIONS BEGUN AT LONDON, DEC. 18, 1758,
FOR CLOTHING FRENCH PRISONERS OF WAR.

THE Committee entrusted with the money contributed to the relief of the subjects of France, now prisoners in the British dominions, here lay before the publick an exact account of all the sums received and expended, that the donors may judge how properly their benefactions have been applied.

Charity would lose its name, were it influenced by so mean a motive as human praise: it is therefore not intended to celebrate by any particular memorial, the liberality of single persons, or distinct societies; it is sufficient that their works praise them.

Yet he who is far from seeking honour, may very justly obviate censure. If a good example has been set, it may lose its influence by misrepresentation; and to free charity from reproach, is itself a charitable action.

Against the relief of the French only one argument has been brought; but that one is so popular and specious, that if it were to remain unexamined,

it would by many be thought irrefragable. It has been urged, that charity, like other virtues, may be improperly and unseasonably exerted; that while we are relieving Frenchmen, there remain many Englishmen unrelieved; that while we lavish pity on our enemies, we forget the misery of our friends.

Grant this argument all it can prove, and what is the conclusion?—That to relieve the French is a good action, but that a better may be conceived. This is all the result, and this all is very little. To do the best can seldom be the lot of man: it is sufficient if, when opportunities are presented, he is ready to do good. How little virtue could be practised, if beneficence were to wait always for the most proper objects, and the noblest occasions; occasions that may never happen, and objects that may never be found.

It is far from certain, that a single Englishman will suffer by the charity to the French. New scenes of misery make new impressions; and much of the charity which produced these donations, may be supposed to have been generated by a species of calamity never known among us before. Some imagine that the laws have provided all necessary relief in common cases, and remit the poor to the care of the publick; some have been deceived by fictitious misery, and are afraid of encouraging imposture; many have observed want to be the effect of vice, and consider casual almsgivers as patrons of idleness. But all these difficulties vanish in the present case: we know that for the Prisoners of War there is no legal provision; we see their distress, and are certain of

its cause; we know that they are poor and naked, and poor and naked without a crime.

But it is not necessary to make any concessions. The opponents of this charity must allow it to be good, and will not easily prove it not to be the best. That charity is best, of which the consequences are most extensive: the relief of enemies has a tendency to unite mankind in fraternal affection; to soften the acrimony of adverse nations, and dispose them to peace and amity: in the mean time, it alleviates captivity, and takes away something from the miseries of war. The rage of war, however mitigated, will always fill the world with calamity and horrour: let it not then be unnecessarily extended; let animosity and hostility cease together; and no man be longer deemed an enemy, than while his sword is drawn against us.

The effects of these contributions may, perhaps, reach still further. Truth is best supported by virtue: we may hope from those who feel or who see our charity, that they shall no longer detest as heresy that religion, which makes its professors the followers of Him, who has commanded us to "do good to them that hate us."

ON THE

BRAVERY

OF THE

ENGLISH COMMON SOLDIERS.*

By those who have compared the military genius of the English with that of the French nation, it is remarked, that *the French officers will always lead, if the soldiers will follow;* and that *the English soldiers will always follow, if their officers will lead.*

In all pointed sentences, some degree of accuracy must be sacrificed to conciseness; and, in this comparison, our officers seem to lose what our soldiers gain. I know not any reason for supposing that the English officers are less willing than the French to lead; but it is, I think, universally allowed, that the English soldiers are more willing to follow. Our nation may boast, beyond any other people in the world, of a kind of epidemick bravery, diffused equally through all its ranks. We can shew a peasantry of heroes, and fill our armies with clowns, whose courage may vie with that of their general.

* This short paper was added to some editions of the Idler, when collected into volumes, but not by Dr. Johnson, as Mr. Boswell asserts, nor to the early editions of that work. C.

There may be some pleasure in tracing the causes of this plebeian magnanimity. The qualities which commonly make an army formidable, are long habits of regularity, great exactness of discipline, and great confidence in the commander. Regularity may, in time, produce a kind of mechanical obedience to signals and commands, like that which the perverse Cartesians impute to animals; discipline may impress such an awe upon the mind, that any danger shall be less dreaded than the danger of punishment; and confidence in the wisdom or fortune of the general, may induce the soldiers to follow him blindly to the most dangerous enterprise.

What may be done by discipline and regularity, may be seen in the troops of the Russian empress and Prussian monarch. We find that they may be broken without confusion, and repulsed without flight.

But the English troops have none of these requisites in any eminent degree. Regularity is by no means part of their character: they are rarely exercised, and therefore shew very little dexterity in their evolutions as bodies of men, or in the manual use of their weapons as individuals; they neither are thought by others, nor by themselves, more active or exact than their enemies, and therefore derive none of their courage from such imaginary superiority.

The manner in which they are dispersed in quarters over the country during times of peace, naturally produces laxity of discipline: they are very little in sight of their officers; and, when they are not engaged in the slight duty of the guard, are suffered to live every man his own way.

The equality of English privileges, the impartiality of our laws, the freedom of our tenures, and the prosperity of our trade, dispose us very little to reverence of superiours. It is not to any great esteem of the officers that the English soldier is indebted for his spirit in the hour of battle; for perhaps it does not often happen that he thinks much better of his leader than of himself. The French Count, who has lately published the *Art of War*, remarks how much soldiers are animated, when they see all their dangers shared by those who were born to be their masters, and whom they consider as beings of a different rank. The Englishman despises such motives of courage: he was born without a master; and looks not on any man, however dignified by lace or titles, as deriving from nature any claims to his respect, or inheriting any qualities superiour to his own.

There are some, perhaps, who would imagine that every Englishman fights better than the subjects of absolute governments, because he has more to defend. But what has the English more than the French soldier? Property they are both commonly without. Liberty is, to the lowest rank of every nation, little more than the choice of working or starving; and this choice is, I suppose, equally allowed in every country. The English soldier seldom has his head very full of the constitution; nor has there been, for more than a century, any war that put the property or liberty of a single Englishman in danger.

Whence then is the courage of the English vulgar? It proceeds, in my opinion, from that disso-

lution of dependence which obliges every man to regard his own character. While every man is fed by his own hands, he has no need of any servile arts; he may always have wages for his labour; and is no less necessary to his employer, than his employer is to him. While he looks for no protection from others, he is naturally roused to be his own protector; and having nothing to abate his esteem of himself, he consequently aspires to the esteem of others. Thus every man that crowds our streets is a man of honour, disdainful of obligation, impatient of reproach, and desirous of extending his reputation among those of his own rank; and as courage is in most frequent use, the fame of courage is most eagerly pursued. From this neglect of subordination I do not deny that some inconveniencies may from time to time proceed: the power of the law does not always sufficiently supply the want of reverence, or maintain the proper distinction between different ranks; but good and evil will grow up in this world together; and they who complain, in peace, of the insolence of the populace, must remember, that their insolence in peace is bravery in war.

POLITICAL TRACTS.

Fallitur, egregio quisquis sub principe credit
Servitium, nunquam Libertas gratior extat
Quam sub Rege pio. CLAUDIANUS. *

* This motto was prefixed to the four following Tracts, when Dr. Johnson reprinted them together, in 1776. C.

*** Mr. Boswell, in his Life of Johnson, remarks, that "several answers came out," in reply to this pamphlet. The numerous pamphlets written at that time on the subject of the Middlesex Election, may all be considered as belonging to the popular side of the dispute, but there were only three direct answers to the FALSE ALARM. These were, "The Crisis;" "A Letter to Dr. Samuel Johnson;" and "The Constitution Defender and Pensioner exposed, in Remarks on the False Alarm." None of them were deficient in a show of argument, but what they seem to rely upon chiefly, was personal abuse of our author as a pensioner; and this, it must owned, suited the taste of that turbulent period wonderfully. C.

THE

FALSE ALARM.

1770.

One of the chief advantages derived by the present generation from the improvement and diffusion of philosophy, is deliverance from unnecessary terrours, and exemption from false alarms. The unusual appearances, whether regular or accidental, which once spread consternation over ages of ignorance, are now the recreations of inquisitive security. The sun is no more lamented when it is eclipsed, than when it sets; and meteors play their coruscations without prognostick or prediction.

The advancement of political knowledge may be expected to produce in time the like effects. Causeless discontent and seditious violence will grow less frequent and less formidable, as the science of government is better ascertained, by a diligent study of the theory of man.

It is not, indeed, to be expected, that physical and political truth should meet with equal acceptance, or gain ground upon the world with equal facility. The notions of the naturalist find mankind in a state of neutrality, or at worst have nothing to encounter but prejudice and vanity; prejudice without malignity, and vanity without interest. But the politician's improvements are opposed by every passion

that can exclude conviction or suppress it; by ambition, by avarice, by hope, and by terrour, by publick faction, and private animosity.

It is evident whatever be the cause, that this nation, with all its renown for speculation and for learning, has yet made little proficiency in civil wisdom. We are still so much unacquainted with our own state, and so unskilful in the pursuit of happiness, that we shudder without danger, complain without grievances, and suffer our quiet to be disturbed, and our commerce to be interrupted, by an opposition to the Government, raised only by interest, and supported only by clamour, which yet has so far prevailed upon ignorance and timidity, that many favour it as reasonable, and many dread it as powerful.

What is urged by those who have been so industrious to spread suspicion, and incite fury from one end of the kingdom to the other, may be known by perusing the papers which have been at once presented as petitions to the king, and exhibited in print as remonstrances to the people. It may therefore not be improper to lay before the Publick the reflections of a man who cannot favour the opposition, for he thinks it wicked, and cannot fear it, for he thinks it weak.

The grievance which has produced all this tempest of outrage, the oppression in which all other oppressions are included, the invasion which has left us no property, the alarm that suffers no patriot to sleep in quiet, is comprised in a vote of the House of Commons, by which the freeholders of Middlesex are deprived of a Briton's birthright, representation in parliament.

They have, indeed, received the usual writ of election, but that writ, alas! was malicious mockery; they were insulted with the form, but denied the reality, for there was one man excepted from their choice.

Non de vi, neque cœde, nec veneno,
Sed lis est mihi de tribus capellis.

The character of the man thus fatally excepted, I have no purpose to delineate. Lampoon itself would disdain to speak ill of him of whom no man speaks well *. It is sufficient that he is expelled the House of Commons, and confined in jail as being legally convicted of sedition and impiety.

That this man cannot be appointed one of the guardians and counsellors of the church and state, is a grievance not to be endured. Every lover of liberty stands doubtful of the fate of posterity, because the chief county in England cannot take its representative from a jail.

Whence Middlesex should obtain the right of being denominated the chief county, cannot easily be discovered; it is, indeed, the county where the chief city happens to stand, but how that city treated the favourite of Middlesex, is not yet forgotten. The county, as distinguished from the city, has no claim to particular consideration.

That a man was in jail for sedition and impiety, would, I believe, have been within memory a suffi-

* The "Life of Wilkes," published a few years ago (1805) by Almon, amply confirms this severe allusion to private character, which was thought unjustifiable when this pamphlet was written. C.

cient reason why he should not come out of jail a legislator. This reason, notwithstanding the mutability of fashion, happens still to operate on the House of Commons. Their notions, however strange, may be justified by a common observation, that few are mended by imprisonment, and that he whose crimes have made confinement necessary, seldom makes any other use of his enlargement, than to do with greater cunning what he did before with less.

But the people have been told with great confidence, that the House cannot control the right of constituting representatives; that he who can persuade lawful electors to choose him, whatever be his character, is lawfully chosen, and has a claim to a seat in parliament, from which no human authority can depose him.

Here, however, the patrons of opposition are in some perplexity. They are forced to confess, that by a train of precedents sufficient to establish a custom of parliament, the House of Commons has jurisdiction over its own members; that the whole has power over individuals; and that this power has been exercised sometimes in imprisonment, and often in expulsion.

That such power should reside in the House of Commons in some cases, is inevitably necessary, since it is required by every polity, that where there is a possibility of offence, there should be a possibility of punishment. A member of the House cannot be cited for his conduct in parliament before any other court: and therefore if the House cannot punish him, he may attack with impunity the rights of the people, and the title of the king.

This exemption from the authority of other courts was, I think, first established in favour of the five members in the long parliament. It is not to be considered as an usurpation, for it is implied in the principles of government. If legislative powers are not coordinate, they cease in part to be legislative; and if they be coordinate, they are unaccountable; for to whom must that power account, which has no superiour?

The House of Commons is, indeed, dissoluble by the king, as the nation has of late been very clamourously told; but while it subsists it is coordinate with the other powers, and this coordination ceases only when the House by dissolution ceases to subsist.

As the particular representatives of the people are in their publick character above the control of the courts of law, they must be subject to the jurisdiction of the House; and as the House, in the exercise of its authority, can be neither directed nor restrained, its own resolutions must be its laws, at least, if there is no antecedent decision of the whole legislature.

This privilege, not confirmed by any written law or positive compact, but by the resistless power of political necessity, they have exercised, probably from their first institution, but certainly, as their records inform us, from the 23d of Elizabeth, when they expelled a member for derogating from their privileges.

It may perhaps be doubted, whether it was originally necessary, that this right of control and punishment should extend beyond offences in the exercise of parliamentary duty, since all other crimes

are cognizable by other courts. But they who are the only judges of their own rights, have exerted the power of expulsion on other occasions, and when wickedness arrived at a certain magnitude, have considered an offence against society as an offence against the House.

They have therefore divested notorious delinquents of their legislative character, and delivered them up to shame or punishment, naked and unprotected, that they might not contaminate the dignity of parliament.

It is allowed that a man attainted of felony cannot sit in Parliament, and the Commons probably judged, that not being bound to the forms of law, they might treat these as felons, whose crimes were in their opinion equivalent to felony; and that as a known felon could not be chosen, a man so like a felon, that he could not easily be distinguished, ought to be expelled.

The first laws had no law to enforce them, the first authority was constituted by itself. The power exercised by the House of Commons is of this kind, a power rooted in the principles of government and branched out by occasional practice; a power which necessity made just, and precedents have made legal.

It will occur that authority thus uncontrollable, may, in times of heat and contest, be oppressively and injuriously exerted, and that he who suffers injustice, is without redress, however innocent, however miserable.

The position is true, but the argument is useless. The Commons must be controlled, or be exempt

from control. If they are exempt they may do injury which cannot be redressed, if they are controlled they are no longer legislative.

If the possibility of abuse be an argument against authority, no authority ever can be established: if the actual abuse destroys its legality, there is no legal government now in the world.

This power, which the Commons have so long exercised, they ventured to use once more against Mr. Wilkes, and on the 3d of February, 1769, expelled him the House, "for having printed and published a seditious libel, and three obscene and impious libels."

If these imputations were just, the expulsion was surely seasonable; and that they were just, the House had reason to determine, as he had confessed himself, at the bar, the author of the libel which they term seditious, and was convicted in the King's Bench of both the publications.

But the freeholders of Middlesex were of another opinion. They either thought him innocent, or were not offended by his guilt. When a writ was issued for the election of a knight for Middlesex, in the room of John Wilkes, Esq., expelled the House, his friends on the sixteenth of February chose him again.

On the 17th, it was resolved, "that John Wilkes, Esq., having been in this session of parliament expelled the House, was, and is, incapable of being elected a member to serve in this present parliament."

As there was no other candidate, it was resolved, at the same time, that the election of the sixteenth was a void election.

The freeholders still continued to think that no other man was fit to represent them, and on the sixteenth of March elected him once more. Their resolution was now so well known, that no opponent ventured to appear.

The Commons began to find, that power without materials for operation can produce no effect. They might make the election void for ever, but if no other candidate could be found, their determination could only be negative. They, however, made void the last election, and ordered a new writ.

On the 13th of April was a new election, at which Mr. Lutterel, and others, offered themselves candidates. Every method of intimidation was used, and some acts of violence were done to hinder Mr. Lutterel from appearing. He was not deterred, and the poll was taken, which exhibited for

Mr. Wilkes	-	-	1143
Mr. Lutterel	-	-	296

The Sheriff returned Mr. Wilkes; but the House on April the fifteenth, determined that Mr. Lutterel was lawfully elected.

From this day begun the clamour which has continued till now. Those who had undertaken to oppose the ministry, having no grievance of greater magnitude, endeavoured to swell this decision into bulk, and distort it into deformity, and then held it out to terrify the nation.

Every artifice of sedition has been since practised to awaken discontent and inflame indignation. The papers of every day have been filled with exhortations and menaces of faction. The madness has

spread through all ranks and through both sexes; women and children have clamoured for Mr. Wilkes, honest simplicity has been cheated into fury, and only the wise have escaped infection.

The greater part may justly be suspected of not believing their own position, and with them it is not necessary to dispute. They cannot be convinced who are convinced already, and it is well known that they will not be ashamed.

The decision, however, by which the smaller number of votes was preferred to the greater, has perplexed the minds of some, whose opinions it were indecent to despise, and who by their integrity well deserve to have their doubts appeased.

Every diffuse and complicated question may be examined by different methods, upon different principles; and that truth, which is easily found by one investigator, may be missed by another, equally honest and equally diligent.

Those who enquire whether a smaller number of legal votes can elect a representative in opposition to a greater, must receive from every tongue the same answer.

The question, therefore, must be, whether a smaller number of legal votes, shall not prevail against a greater number of votes not legal?

It must be considered, that those votes only are legal which are legally given, and that those only are legally given, which are given for a legal candidate.

It remains then to be discussed, whether a man expelled can be so disqualified by a vote of the House, as that he shall be no longer eligible by lawful electors?

Here we must again recur, not to positive institutions, but to the unwritten law of social nature, to the great and pregnant principle of political necessity. All government supposes subjects, all authority implies obedience. To suppose in one the right to command what another has the right to refuse, is absurd and contradictory. A state so constituted must rest for ever in motionless equipoise, with equal attractions of contrary tendency, with equal weights of power balancing each other.

Laws which cannot be enforced, can neither prevent nor rectify disorders. A sentence which cannot be executed can have no power to warn or to reform. If the Commons have only the power of dismissing for a few days the man whom his constituents can immediately send back, if they can expel but cannot exclude, they have nothing more than nominal authority, to which perhaps obedience never may be paid.

The representatives of our ancestors had an opinion very different: they fined and imprisoned their members; on great provocation, they disabled them for ever; and this power of pronouncing perpetual disability is maintained by Selden himself.

These claims seem to have been made and allowed, when the constitution of our government had not yet been sufficiently studied. Such powers are not legal, because they are not necessary: and of that power which only necessity justifies, no more is to be admitted than necessity obtrudes.

The Commons cannot make laws, they can only pass resolutions, which, like all resolutions, are of force only to those that make them, and to those only while they are willing to observe them.

The vote of the House of Commons has therefore only so far the force of a law, as that force is necessary to preserve the vote from losing its efficacy; it must begin by operating upon themselves, and extend its influence to others, only by consequences arising from the first intention. He that starts game on his own manor, may pursue it into another.

They can properly make laws only for themselves: a member, while he keeps his seat, is subject to these laws; but when he is expelled, the jurisdiction ceases, for he is now no longer within their dominion.

The disability, which a vote can superinduce to expulsion, is no more than was included in expulsion itself; it is only a declaration of the Commons, that they will permit no longer him whom they thus censure to sit with them in parliament; a declaration made by that right which they necessarily possess, of regulating their own House, and of inflicting punishment on their own delinquents.

They have therefore no other way to enforce the sentence of incapacity, than that of adhering to it. They cannot otherwise punish the candidate so disqualified for offering himself, nor the electors for accepting him. But if he has any competitor, that competitor must prevail, and if he has none, his election will be void; for the right of the House to reject, annihilates with regard to the man so rejected the right of electing.

It has been urged, that the power of the House terminates with their session; since a prisoner committed by the Speaker's warrant cannot be detained during the recess. That power indeed ceases with the session, which must operate by the agency of

others, because, when they do not sit, they can employ no agent, having no longer any legal existence; but that which is exercised on themselves revives at their meeting, when the subject of that power still subsists. They can in the next session refuse to readmit him, whom in the former session they expelled.

That expulsion inferred exclusion in the present case, must be, I think, easily admitted. The expulsion and the writ issued for a new election were in the same session, and since the House is by the rule of parliament bound for the session by a vote once passed, the expelled member cannot be admitted. He that cannot be admitted, cannot be elected; and the votes given to a man ineligible being given in vain, the highest number for an eligible candidate becomes a majority.

To these conclusions, as to most moral, and to all political positions, many objections may be made. The perpetual subject of political disquisition is not absolute, but comparative good. Of two systems of government, or two laws relating to the same subject, neither will ever be such as theoretical nicety would desire, and therefore neither can easily force its way against prejudice and obstinacy; each will have its excellencies and defects, and every man, with a little help from pride, may think his own the best.

It seems to be the opinion of many, that expulsion is only a dismission of the representative to his constituents, with such a testimony against him as his sentence may comprise; and that if his constituents, notwithstanding the censure of the House, thinking

his case hard, his fault trifling, or his excellencies such as over balance it, should again choose him as still worthy of their trust, the House cannot refuse him, for his punishment has purged his fault, and the right of electors must not be violated.

This is plausible, but not cogent. It is a scheme of representation, which would make a specious appearance in a political romance, but cannot be brought into practice among us, who see every day the towering head of speculation bow down unwillingly to groveling experience.

Governments formed by chance, and gradually improved by such expedients, as the successive discovery of their defects happened to suggest, are never to be tried by a regular theory. They are fabricks of dissimilar materials, raised by different architects, upon different plans. We must be content with them as they are; should we attempt to mend their disproportions, we might easily demolish, and difficultly rebuild them.

Laws are now made, and customs are established; these are our rules, and by them we must be guided.

It is uncontrovertibly certain, that the Commons never intended to leave electors the liberty of returning them an expelled member, for they always require one to be chosen in the room of him that is expelled, and I see not with what propriety a man can be rechosen in his own room.

Expulsion, if this were its whole effect, might very often be desirable. Sedition, or obscenity, might be no greater crimes in the opinion of other electors, than in that of the freeholders of Middlesex; and

many a wretch, whom his colleagues should expel, might come back persecuted into fame, and provoke with harder front a second expulsion.

Many of the representatives of the people can hardly be said to have been chosen at all. Some by inheriting a borough inherit a seat; and some sit by the favour of others, whom perhaps they may gratify by the act which provoked the expulsion. Some are safe by their popularity, and some by their alliances. None would dread expulsion, if this doctrine were received, but those who bought their elections, and who would be obliged to buy them again at a higher price.

But as uncertainties are to be determined by things certain, and customs to be explained, where it is possible, by written law, the patriots have triumphed with a quotation from an act of the 4th and 5th of Anne, which permits those to be re-chosen, whose seats are vacated by the acceptance of a place of profit. This they wisely consider as an expulsion, and from the permission, in this case, of a re-election, infer that every other expulsion leaves the delinquent entitled to the same indulgence. This is the paragraph:

"If any person, *being chosen a member* of the House of Commons, shall accept of any office from the crown, *during such time as he shall continue a member*, his election shall be, and is hereby declared to be void, and a new writ shall issue for a new election, as if such person so accepting was naturally dead. *Nevertheless such person shall be capable of being again elected*, as if his place had not become void as aforesaid."

How this favours the doctrine of readmission by a second choice, I am not able to discover. The statute of 30 Ch. II. had enacted, "That he who should sit in the House of Commons, without taking the oaths and subscribing the test, should be disabled to sit in the House during that Parliament, and a writ should issue for the election of a new member in place of the member so disabled, as if such member had naturally died."

This last clause is apparently copied in the act of Anne, but with the common fate of imitators. In the act of Charles, the political death continued during the parliament; in that of Anne it was hardly worth the while to kill the man whom the next breath was to revive. It is, however, apparent, that in the opinion of the parliament, the dead-doing lines would have kept him motionless, if he had not been recovered by a kind exception. A seat vacated, could not be regained without express permission of the same statute.

The right of being chosen again to a seat thus vacated, is not enjoyed by any general right, but required a special clause, and solicitous provision.

But what resemblance can imagination conceive between one man vacating his seat by a mark of favour from the crown, and another driven from it for sedition and obscenity? The acceptance of a place contaminates no character; the crown that gives it, intends to give with it always dignity, sometimes authority. The Commons, it is well known, think not worse of themselves or others for their offices of profit: yet profit implies temptation, and may expose a representative to the suspicion of his

constituents; though if they still think him worthy of their confidence, they may again elect him.

Such is the consequence. When a man is dismissed by law to his constituents, with new trust and new dignity, they may, if they think him incorruptible, restore him to his seat; what can follow, therefore, but that, when the House drives out a varlet with publick infamy, he goes away with the like permission to return?

If infatuation be, as the proverb tells us, the forerunner of destruction, how near must be the ruin of a nation that can be incited against its governours by sophistry like this. I may be excused if I catch the panick, and join my groans at this alarming crisis, with the general lamentation of weeping patriots.

Another objection is, that the Commons, by pronouncing the sentence of disqualification, make a law, and take upon themselves the power of the whole legislature. Many quotations are then produced to prove that the House of Commons can make no laws.

Three Acts have been cited, disabling members for different terms on different occasions; and it is profoundly remarked, that if the Commons could by their own privilege have made a disqualification, their jealousy of their privileges would never have admitted the concurrent sanction of the other powers.

I must for ever remind these puny controvertists, that those Acts are laws of permanent obligation: that two of them are now in force, and that the other expired only when it had fulfilled its end. Such

laws the Commons cannot make: they could, perhaps, have determined for themselves, that they would expel all who should not take the test, but they could leave no authority behind them, that should oblige the next parliament to expel them. They could refuse the South-Sea directors, but they could not entail the refusal. They can disqualify by vote, but not by law; they cannot know that the sentence of disqualification pronounced to-day may not become void to-morrow, by the dissolution of their own House. Yet while the same parliament sits, the disqualification continues unless the vote be rescinded, and while it so continues, makes the votes, which freeholders may give to the interdicted candidate, useless and dead, since there cannot exist with respect to the same subject at the same time, an absolute power to choose and an absolute power to reject.

In 1614, the attorney-general was voted incapable of a seat in the House of Commons; and the nation is triumphantly told, that though the vote never was revoked, the attorney-general is now a member. He certainly may now be a member without revocation of the vote. A law is of perpetual obligation, but a vote is nothing when the voters are gone. A law is a compact reciprocally made by the legislative powers, and therefore not to be abrogated but by all the parties. A vote is simply a resolution, which binds only him that is willing to be bound.

I have thus punctiliously and minutely pursued this disquisition, because I suspect that these reasoners, whose business is to deceive others, have some-

times deceived themselves, and I am willing to free them from their embarrassment, though I do not expect much gratitude for my kindness.

Other objections are yet remaining, for of political objections there cannot easily be an end. It has been observed, that vice is no proper cause of expulsion, for if the worst man in the House were always to be expelled, in time none would be left. But no man is expelled for being worst, he is expelled for being enormously bad; his conduct is compared, not with that of others, but with the rule of action.

The punishment of expulsion being in its own nature uncertain, may be too great or too little for the fault.

This must be the case of many punishments. Forfeiture of chattels is nothing to him that has no possessions. Exile itself may be accidentally a good: and indeed any punishment less than death is very different to different men.

But if this precedent be admitted and established, no man can hereafter be sure that he shall be represented by him whom he would choose. One half of the House may meet early in the morning, and snatch an opportunity to expel the other, and the greater part of the nation may, by this stratagem, be without its lawful representatives.

He that sees all this, sees very far. But I can tell him of greater evils yet behind. There is one possibility of wickedness, which, at this alarming crisis, has not yet been mentioned. Every one knows the malice, the subtilty, the industry, the vigilance, and the greediness of the Scots. The Scotch members are about the number sufficient to make a house.

I propose it to the consideration of the supporters of the Bill of Rights, whether there is not reason to suspect that these hungry intruders from the North are now contriving to expel all the English. We may then curse the hour in which it was determined, that expulsion and exclusion are the same. For who can guess what may be done when the Scots have the whole House to themselves?

Thus agreeable to custom and reason, notwithstanding all objections, real or imaginary; thus consistent with the practice of former times, and thus consequential to the original principles of government, is that decision by which so much violence of discontent has been excited, which has been so dolorously bewailed, and so outrageously resented.

Let us, however, not be seduced to put too much confidence in justice or in truth; they have often been found inactive in their own defence, and give more confidence than help to their friends and their advocates. It may perhaps be prudent to make one momentary concession to falsehood, by supposing the vote in Mr. Lutterel's favour to be wrong.

All wrong ought to be rectified. If Mr. Wilkes is deprived of a lawful seat, both he and his electors have reason to complain: but it will not be easily found, why, among the innumerable wrongs of which a great part of mankind are hourly complaining, the whole care of the publick should be transferred to Mr. Wilkes and the freeholders of Middlesex, who might all sink into nonexistence, without any other effect, than that there would be room made for a new rabble, and a new retailer of sedition and obscenity. The cause of our country would suffer

little; the rabble, whencesoever they come, will be always patriots, and always supporters of the Bill of Rights.

The House of Commons decides the disputes arising from elections. Was it ever supposed, that in all cases their decisions were right? Every man whose lawful election is defeated, is equally wronged with Mr. Wilkes, and his constituents feel their disappointment with no less anguish than the freeholders of Middlesex. These decisions have often been apparently partial, and sometimes tyrannically oppressive. A majority has been given to a favourite candidate, by expunging votes which had always been allowed, and which therefore had the authority by which all votes are given, that of custom uninterrupted. When the Commons determine who shall be constituents, they may, with some propriety, be said to make law, because those determinations have hitherto, for the sake of quiet, been adopted by succeeding parliaments. A vote, therefore, of the House, when it operates as a law, is to individuals a law only temporary, but to communities perpetual.

Yet though all this has been done, and though at every new parliament much of this is expected to be done again, it has never produced in any former time such an *alarming crisis*. We have found by experience, that though a squire has given ale and venison in vain, and a borough has been compelled to see its dearest interest in the hands of him whom it did not trust, yet the general state of the nation has continued the same. The sun has risen, and the corn

has grown, and whatever talk has been of the danger of property, yet he that ploughed the field commonly reaped it, and he that built a house was master of the door: the vexation excited by injustice suffered, or supposed to be suffered, by any private man, or single community, was local and temporary, it neither spread far, nor lasted long.

The nation looked on with little care, because there did not seem to be much danger. The consequence of small irregularities was not felt, and we had not yet learned to be terrified by very distant enemies.

But quiet and security are now at an end. Our vigilance is quickened, and our comprehension is enlarged. We not only see events in their causes, but before their causes; we hear the thunder while the sky is clear, and see the mine sprung before it is dug. Political wisdom has, by the force of English genius, been improved at last not only to political intuition, but to political prescience.

But it cannot, I am afraid, be said, that as we are grown wise, we are made happy. It is said of those who have the wonderful power called second sight, that they seldom see any thing but evil: political second sight has the same effect; we hear of nothing but of an alarming crisis, of violated rights, and expiring liberties. The morning rises upon new wrongs, and the dreamer passes the night in imaginary shackles.

The sphere of anxiety is now enlarged; he that hitherto cared only for himself, now cares for the publick; for he has learned that the happiness of individuals is comprised in the prosperity of the

whole, and that his country never suffers, but he suffers with it, however it happens that he feels no pain.

Fired with this fever of epidemick patriotism, the tailor slips his thimble, the draper drops his yard, and the blacksmith lays down his hammer; they meet at an honest alehouse, consider the state of the nation, read or hear the last petition, lament the miseries of the time, are alarmed at the dreadful crisis, and subscribe to the support of the Bill of Rights.

It sometimes indeed happens, that an intruder of more benevolence than prudence attempts to disperse their cloud of dejection, and ease their hearts by seasonable consolation. He tells them, that though the government cannot be too diligently watched, it may be too hastily accused; and that, though private judgment is every man's right, yet we cannot judge of what we do not know; that we feel at present no evils which government can alleviate, and that the publick business is committed to men who have as much right to confidence as their adversaries; that the freeholders of Middlesex, if they could not choose Mr. Wilkes, might have chosen any other man, and that *he trusts we have within the realm five hundred as good as he;* that even if this which has happened to Middlesex had happened to every other county, that one man should be made incapable of being elected, it could produce no great change in the parliament, nor much contract the power of election; that what has been done is probably right, and that if it be wrong, it is of little consequence, since a like case cannot easily occur;

that expulsions are very rare, and if they should, by unbounded insolence of faction, become more frequent, the electors may easily provide a second choice.

All this he may say, but not half of this will be heard; his opponents will stun him and themselves with a confused sound of pensions and places, venality and corruption, oppression and invasion, slavery and ruin.

Outcries like these, uttered by malignity, and echoed by folly; general accusations of indeterminate wickedness; and obscure hints of impossible designs, dispersed among those that do not know their meaning, by those that know them to be false, have disposed part of the nation, though but a small part, to pester the court with ridiculous petitions.

The progress of a petition is well known. An ejected placeman goes down to his county or his borough, tells his friends of his inability to serve them, and his constituents of the corruption of the government. His friends readily understand that he who can get nothing, will have nothing to give. They agree to proclaim a meeting; meat and drink are plentifully provided; a crowd is easily brought together, and those who think that they know the reason of their meeting, undertake to tell those who know it not. Ale and clamour unite their powers, the crowd, condensed and heated, begins to ferment with the leaven of sedition. All see a thousand evils, though they cannot show them, and grow impatient for a remedy, though they know not what.

A speech is then made by the *Cicero* of the day; he says much, and suppresses more, and credit is

equally given to what he tells, and what he conceals. The petition is read and universally approved. Those who are sober enough to write, add their names, and the rest would sign it if they could.

Every man goes home and tells his neighbour of the glories of the day; how he was consulted and what he advised; how he was invited into the great room, where his lordship called him by his name; how he was caressed by Sir Francis, Sir Joseph, or Sir George; how he eat turtle and venison, and drank unanimity to the three brothers.

The poor loiterer, whose shop had confined him, or whose wife had locked him up, hears the tale of luxury with envy, and at last enquires what was their petition. Of the petition nothing is remembered by the narrator, but that it spoke much of fears and apprehensions, and something very alarming, and that he is sure it is against the government; the other is convinced that it must be right, and wishes he had been there, for he loves wine and venison, and is resolved as long as he lives to be against the government.

The petition is then handed from town to town, and from house to house, and wherever it comes the inhabitants flock together, that they may see that which must be sent to the king. Names are easily collected. One man signs because he hates the papists; another because he has vowed destruction to the turnpikes; one because it will vex the parson; another because he owes his landlord nothing; one because he is rich; another because he is poor; one to show that he is not afraid, and another to show that he can write.

The passage, however, is not always smooth. Those who collect contributions to sedition, sometimes apply to a man of higher rank and more enlightened mind, who, instead of lending them his name, calmly reproves them for being seducers of the people.

You who are here, says he, complaining of venality, are yourselves the agents of those who, having estimated themselves at too high a price, are only angry that they are not bought. You are appealing from the parliament to the rabble, and inviting those who scarcely, in the most common affairs, distinguish right from wrong, to judge of a question complicated with law written and unwritten, with the general principles of government, and the particular customs of the House of Commons; you are showing them a grievance, so distant that they cannot see it, and so light that they cannot feel it; for how, but by unnecessary intelligence and artificial provocation, should the farmers and shopkeepers of Yorkshire and Cumberland know or care how Middlesex is represented? instead of wandering thus round the county to exasperate the rage of party, and darken the suspicions of ignorance, it is the duty of men like you, who have leisure for enquiry, to lead back the people to their honest labour; to tell them, that submission is the duty of the ignorant, and content the virtue of the poor; that they have no skill in the art of government, nor any interest in the dissensions of the great; and when you meet with any, as some there are, whose understandings are capable of conviction, it will become you to allay this foaming ebullition, by showing them that they have as much happiness as

the condition of life will easily receive, and that a government, of which an erroneous or unjust representation of Middlesex is the greatest crime that interest can discover, or malice can upbraid, is government approaching nearer to perfection, than any that experience has known, or history related.

The drudges of sedition wish to change their ground, they hear him with sullen silence, feel conviction without repentance, and are confounded but not abashed; they go forward to another door, and find a kinder reception from a man enraged against the government, because he has just been paying the tax upon his windows.

That a petition for a dissolution of the parliament will at all times have its favourers, may be easily imagined. The people indeed do not expect that one House of Commons will be much honester or much wiser than another; they do not suppose that the taxes will be lightened; or though they have been so often taught to hope it, that soap and candles will be cheaper; they expect no redress of grievances, for of no grievances but taxes do they complain; they wish not the extension of liberty, for they do not feel any restraint; about the security of privilege or property they are totally careless, for they see no property invaded, nor know, till they are told, that any privilege has suffered violation.

Least of all do they expect, that any future parliament will lessen its own powers, or communicate to the people that authority which it has once obtained.

Yet a new parliament is sufficiently desirable. The year of election is a year of jollity; and what is

still more delightful, a year of equality. The glutton now eats the delicacies for which he longed when he could not purchase them, and the drunkard has the pleasure of wine without the cost. The drone lives a while without work, and the shopkeeper, in the flow of money, raises his price. The mechanick that trembled at the presence of Sir Joseph, now bids him come again for an answer; and the poacher whose gun has been seized, now finds an opportunity to reclaim it. Even the honest man is not displeased to see himself important, and willingly resumes in two years that power which he had resigned for seven. Few love their friends so well as not to desire superiority by unexpensive benefaction.

Yet notwithstanding all these motives to compliance, the promoters of petitions have not been successful. Few could be persuaded to lament evils which they did not suffer, or to solicit for redress which they do not want. The petition has been, in some places, rejected; and perhaps, in all but one, signed only by the meanest and grossest of the people.

Since this expedient, now invented or revived to distress the government, and equally practicable at all times by all who shall be excluded from power and from profit, has produced so little effect, let us consider the opposition as no longer formidable. The great engine has recoiled upon them. They thought that *the terms* they *sent were terms of weight*, which would have *amazed all and stumbled many;* but the consternation is now over, and their foes *stand upright*, as before.

With great propriety and dignity the king has, in his speech, neglected or forgotten them. He might easily know, that what was presented as the sense of the people, is the sense only of the profligate and dissolute; and that whatever parliament should be convened, the same petitioners would be ready, for the same reason, to request its dissolution.

As we once had a rebellion of the clowns, we have now an opposition of the pedlars. The quiet of the nation has been for years disturbed by a faction, against which all factions ought to conspire; for its original principle is the desire of levelling; it is only animated under the name of zeal, by the natural malignity of the mean against the great.

When, in the confusion which the English invasions produced in France, the villains, imagining that they had found the golden hour of emancipation, took arms in their hands, the knights of both nations considered the cause as common, and, suspending the general hostility, united to chastise them.

The whole conduct of this despicable faction is distinguished by plebeian grossness, and savage indecency. To misrepresent the actions and the principles of their enemies is common to all parties; but the insolence of invective, and brutality of reproach, which have lately prevailed, are peculiar to this.

An infallible characteristick of meanness is cruelty. This is the only faction that has shouted at the condemnation of a criminal, and that, when his innocence procured his pardon, has clamoured for his blood.

All other parties, however enraged at each other,

have agreed to treat the throne with decency; but these low-born railers have attacked not only the authority, but the character of their sovereign, and have endeavoured, surely without effect, to alienate the affections of the people from the only king, who, for almost a century, has much appeared to desire, or much endeavoured to deserve them. They have insulted him with rudeness and with menaces, which were never excited by the gloomy sullenness of William, even when half the nation denied him their allegiance: nor by the dangerous bigotry of James, unless when he was finally driven from his palace; and with which scarcely the open hostilities of rebellion ventured to vilify the unhappy Charles, even in the remarks on the cabinet of Naseby.

It is surely not unreasonable to hope that the nation will consult its dignity, if not its safety, and disdain to be protected or enslaved by the declaimers or the plotters of a city-tavern. Had Rome fallen by the Catilinarian conspiracy, she might have consoled her fate by the greatness of her destroyers; but what would have alleviated the disgrace of England, had her government been changed by Tiler or by Ket?

One part of the nation has never before contended with the other, but for some weighty and apparent interest. If the means were violent, the end was great. The civil war was fought for what each army called and believed the best religion and the best government. The struggle in the reign of Anne, was to exclude or restore an exile king. We are now disputing, with almost equal animosity, whether Middlesex shall be represented or not by a criminal from a jail.

The only comfort left in such degeneracy is, that a lower state can be no longer possible.

In this contemptuous censure, I mean not to include every single man. In all lead, says the chemist, there is silver; and in all copper there is gold. But mingled masses are justly denominated by the greater quantity, and when the precious particles are not worth extraction, a faction and a pig must be melted down together to the forms and offices that chance allots them.

"Fiunt urceoli, pelves, sartago, patellæ."

A few weeks will now show whether the government can be shaken by empty noise, and whether the faction which depends upon its influence, has not deceived alike the Publick and itself. That it should have continued till now, is sufficiently shameful. None can, indeed, wonder that it has been supported by the sectaries, the natural fomenters of sedition and confederates of the rabble, of whose religion little now remains but hatred of establishments, and who are angry to find separation now only tolerated, which was once rewarded: but every honest man must lament, that it has been regarded with frigid neutrality by the tories, who, being long accustomed to signalize their principles by opposition to the court, do not yet consider that they have at last a king who knows not the name of party, and who wishes to be the common father of all his people.

As a man inebriated only by vapours, soon recovers in the open air; a nation discontented to madness, without any adequate cause, will return to its wits

and its allegiance when a little pause has cooled it to reflection. Nothing, therefore, is necessary, at this *alarming crisis*, but to consider the alarm as false. To make concessions, is to encourage encroachment. Let the court despise the faction, and the disappointed people will soon deride it.

THOUGHTS

ON THE

LATE TRANSACTIONS

RESPECTING

FALKLAND'S ISLANDS.

1771.

To proportion the eagerness of contest to its importance seems too hard a task for human wisdom. The pride of wit has kept ages busy in the discussion of useless questions, and the pride of power has destroyed armies to gain or to keep unprofitable possessions.

Not many years have passed since the cruelties of war were filling the world with terrour and with sorrow; rage was at last appeased, or strength exhausted, and to the harassed nations peace was restored with its pleasures and its benefits. Of this state all felt the happiness, and all implored the continuance; but what continuance of happiness can be expected, when the whole system of European empire can be in danger of a new concussion, by a contention for a few spots of earth, which, in the deserts of the ocean, had almost escaped human notice, and which, if they had not happened to make a sea-mark, had perhaps never had a name?

Fortune often delights to dignify what nature has neglected, and that renown which cannot be claimed by intrinsick excellence or greatness, is sometimes derived from unexpected accidents. The Rubicon was ennobled by the passage of Cæsar, and the time is now come when Falkland's Islands demand their historian.

But the writer to whom this employment shall be assigned, will have few opportunities of descriptive splendour, or narrative elegance. Of other countries it is told how often they have changed their government; these islands have hitherto changed only their name. Of heroes to conquer, or legislators to civilize, here has been no appearance; nothing has happened to them but that they have been sometimes seen by wandering navigators, who passed by them in search of better habitations.

When the Spaniards, who, under the conduct of Columbus, discovered America, had taken possession of its most wealthy regions, they surprised and terrified Europe by a sudden and unexampled influx of riches. They were made at once insupportably insolent, and might perhaps have become irresistibly powerful, had not their mountainous treasures been scattered in the air with the ignorant profusion of unaccustomed opulence.

The greater part of the European potentates saw this stream of riches flowing into Spain without attempting to dip their own hands in the golden fountain. France had no naval skill or power; Portugal was extending her dominions in the east over regions formed in the gaiety of nature; the Hanseatick league, being planned only for the security of traffick, had no

tendency to discovery or invasion; and the commercial states of Italy growing rich by trading between Asia and Europe, and not lying upon the ocean, did not desire to seek by great hazards, at a distance, what was almost at home to be found with safety.

The English alone were animated by the success of the Spanish navigators, to try if any thing was left that might reward adventure, or incite appropriation. They sent Cabot into the north, but in the north there was no gold or silver to be found. The best regions were preoccupied, yet they still continued their hopes and their labours. They were the second nation that dared the extent of the Pacific Ocean, and the second circumnavigators of the globe.

By the war between Elizabeth and Philip, the wealth of America became lawful prize, and those who were less afraid of danger than of poverty, supposed that riches might easily be obtained by plundering the Spaniards. Nothing is difficult when gain and honour unite their influence; the spirit and vigour of these expeditions enlarged our views of the new world, and made us first acquainted with its remoter coasts.

In the fatal voyage of Cavendish (1592), Captain Davis, who, being sent out as his associate, was afterwards parted from him or deserted him, as he was driven by violence of weather about the straits of Magellan, is supposed to have been the first who saw the lands now called Falkland's Islands, but his distress permitted him not to make any observation, and he left them, as he found them, without a name.

Not long afterwards (1594) Sir Richard Hawkins being in the same seas with the same designs, saw these Islands again, if they are indeed the same islands, and, in honour of his mistress, called them Hawkins's Maiden Land.

This voyage was not of renown sufficient to procure a general reception to the new name; for when the Dutch, who had now become strong enough not only to defend themselves, but to attack their masters, sent (1598) Verhagen and Sebald de Wert into the South Seas, these islands, which were not supposed to have been known before, obtained the denomination of Sebald's Islands, and were from that time placed in the charts; though Frezier tells us, that they were yet considered as of doubtful existence.

Their present English name was probably given them (1689) by Strong, whose journal, yet unprinted, may be found in the Museum. This name was adopted by Halley, and has from that time, I believe, been received into our maps.

The privateers which were put into motion by the wars of William and Anne, saw those Islands and mention them; but they were yet not considered as territories worth a contest. Strong affirmed that there was no wood, and Dampier suspected that they had no water.

Frezier describes their appearance with more distinctness, and mentions some ships of St. Maloes, by which they had been visited, and to which he seems willing enough to ascribe the honour of discovering islands which yet he admits to have been seen by Hawkins, and named by Sebald de Wert. He, I suppose, in honour of his countrymen, called them the

Malouines, the denomination now used by the Spaniards, who seem not, till very lately, to have thought them important enough to deserve a name.

Since the publication of Anson's voyage, they have very much changed their opinion, finding a settlement in Pepys's or Falkland's Island recommended by the author as necessary to the success of our future expeditions against the coast of Chili, and as of such use and importance, that it would produce many advantages in peace, and in war would make us masters of the South Sea.

Scarcely any degree of judgment is sufficient to restrain the imagination from magnifying that on which it is long detained. The relator of Anson's voyage had heated his mind with its various events, had partaken the hope with which it was begun, and the vexation suffered by its various miscarriages, and then thought nothing could be of greater benefit to the nation than that which might promote the success of such another enterprise.

Had the heroes of that history even performed and attained all that, when they first spread their sails, they ventured to hope, the consequence would yet have produced very little hurt to the Spaniards, and very little benefit to the English. They would have taken a few towns; Anson and his companions would have shared the plunder or the ransom; and the Spaniards, finding their southern territories accessible, would for the future have guarded them better.

That such a settlement may be of use in war, no man that considers its situation will deny. But war

is not the whole business of life; it happens but seldom, and every man, either good or wise, wishes that its frequency were still less. That conduct which betrays designs of future hostility, if it does not excite violence, will always generate malignity; it must for ever exclude confidence and friendship, and continue a cold and sluggish rivalry, by a sly reciprocation of indirect injuries, without the bravery of war, or the security of peace.

The advantage of such a settlement in time of peace is, I think, not easily to be proved. For what use can it have but of a station for contraband traders, a nursery of fraud, and a receptacle of theft? Narborough, about a century ago, was of opinion, that no advantage could be obtained in voyages to the South Sea, except by such an armament as, with a sailor's morality, *might trade by force.* It is well known that the prohibitions of foreign commerce, are, in these countries, to the last degree rigorous, and that no man, not authorized by the king of Spain, can trade there but by force or stealth. Whatever profit is obtained must be gained by the violence of rapine, or dexterity of fraud.

Government will not, perhaps, soon arrive at such purity and excellence, but that some connivance at least will be indulged to the triumphant robber and successful cheat. He that brings wealth home is seldom interrogated by what means it was obtained. This, however, is one of those modes of corruption with which mankind ought always to struggle, and which they may in time hope to overcome. There is reason to expect, that, as the world is more en-

lightened, policy and morality will at last be reconciled, and that nations will learn not to do what they would not suffer.

But the silent toleration of suspected guilt is a degree of depravity far below that which openly incites and manifestly protects it. To pardon a pirate may be injurious to mankind; but how much greater is the crime of opening a port in which all pirates shall be safe! The contraband trader is not more worthy of protections: if, with Narborough, he trades by force, he is a pirate; if he trade secretly, he is only a thief. Those who honestly refuse his traffick he hates as obstructors of his profit: and those with whom he deals he cheats, because he knows that they dare not complain. He lives with a heart full of that malignity which fear of detection always generates in those who are to defend unjust acquisitions against lawful authority; and when he comes home with riches thus acquired, he brings a mind hardened in evil, too proud for reproof, and too stupid for reflection; he offends the high by his insolence, and corrupts the low by his example.

Whether these truths were forgotten or despised, or whether some better purpose was then in agitation, the representation made in Anson's voyage had such effect upon the statesmen of that time, that (in 1748) some sloops were fitted out for the fuller knowledge of Pepys's and Falkland's Islands, and for further discoveries in the South Sea. This expedition, though perhaps designed to be secret, was not long concealed from Wall, the Spanish ambassadour, who so vehemently opposed it, and so strongly main-

tained the right of the Spaniards to the exclusive dominion of the South Sea, that the English ministry relinquished part of their original design, and declared that the examination of those two islands was the utmost that their orders should comprise.

This concession was sufficiently liberal or sufficiently submissive; yet the Spanish court was neither gratified by our kindness, nor softened by our humility. Sir Benjamin Keene, who then resided at Madrid, was interrogated by Carvajal concerning the visit intended to Pepys's and Falkland's Islands in terms of great jealousy and discontent; and the intended expedition was represented, if not as a direct violation of the late peace, yet as an act inconsistent with amicable intentions, and contrary to the professions of mutual kindness which then passed between Spain and England. Keene was directed to protest that nothing more than mere discovery was intended, and that no settlement was to be established. The Spaniard readily replied, that if this was a voyage of wanton curiosity, it might be gratified with less trouble, for he was willing to communicate whatever was known; that to go so far only to come back, was no reasonable act: and it would be a slender sacrifice to peace and friendship to omit a voyage in which nothing was to be gained: that if we left the places as we found them, the voyage was useless; and if we took possession, it was a hostile armament, nor could we expect that the Spaniards would suppose us to visit the southern parts of America only from curiosity, after the scheme proposed by the author of Anson's voyage.

When [illegible] l all purpose of set-

tling, it is apparent that we could not defend the propriety of our expedition by arguments equivalent to Carvajal's objections. The ministry, therefore, dismissed the whole design, but no declaration was required by which our right to pursue it hereafter might be annulled.

From this time Falkland's Island was forgotten or neglected, till the conduct of naval affairs was intrusted to the Earl of Egmont, a man whose mind was vigorous and ardent, whose knowledge was extensive, and whose designs were magnificent; but who had somewhat vitiated his judgment by too much indulgence of romantick projects and airy speculations.

Lord Egmont's eagerness after something new determined him to make enquiry after Falkland's Island, and he sent out Captain Byron, who, in the beginning of the year 1765, took, he says, a formal possession in the name of his Britannick Majesty.

The possession of this place is, according to Mr. Byron's representation, no despicable acquisition. He conceived the island to be six or seven hundred miles round, and represented it a region naked indeed of wood, but which, if that defect were supplied, would have all that nature, almost all that luxury could want. The harbour he found capacious and secure, and therefore thought it worthy of the name of Egmont. Of water there was no want, and the ground he described as having all the excellencies of soil, and as covered with antiscorbutick herbs, the restoratives of the sailor. Provision was easily to be had, for they killed almost every day an hundred geese to each ship, by pelting them with

stones. Not content with physick and with food, he searched yet deeper for the value of the new dominion. He dug in quest of ore, found iron in abundance, and did not despair of nobler metals.

A country thus fertile and delightful, fortunately found where none would have expected it, about the fiftieth degree of southern latitude, could not without great supineness be neglected. Early in the next year (January 8, 1766) Captain Macbride arrived at Port Egmont, where he erected a small blockhouse, and stationed a garrison. His description was less flattering. He found, what he calls, a mass of islands and broken lands, of which the soil was nothing but a bog, with no better prospect than that of barren mountains, beaten by storms almost perpetual. Yet this, says he, is summer, and if the winds of winter hold their natural proportion, those who lie but two cables' length from the shore, must pass weeks without any communication with it. The plenty which regaled Mr. Byron, and which might have supported not only armies but armies of Patagons, was no longer to be found. The geese were too wise to stay when men violated their haunts, and Mr. Macbride's crew could only now and then kill a goose when the weather would permit. All the quadrupeds which he met there were foxes, supposed by him to have been brought upon the ice; but of useless animals, such as sea lions and penguins, which he calls vermin, the number was incredible. He allows, however, that those who touch at these islands may find geese and snipes, and in the summer months, wild celery and sorrel.

No token was seen by either, of any settlement ever made upon this island, and Mr. Macbride thought himself so secure from hostile disturbance, that when he erected his wooden blockhouse he omitted to open the ports and loopholes.

When a garrison was stationed at Port Egmont, it was necessary to try what sustenance the ground could be, by culture, excited to produce. A garden was prepared, but the plants that sprung up withered away in immaturity. Some fir-seeds were sown; but though this be the native tree of rugged climates, the young firs that rose above the ground died like weaker herbage. The cold continued long, and the ocean seldom was at rest.

Cattle succeeded better than vegetables. Goats, sheep, and hogs, that were carried thither, were found to thrive and increase as in other places.

Nil mortalibus arduum est. There is nothing which human courage will not undertake, and little that human patience will not endure. The garrison lived upon Falkland's Island, shrinking from the blast, and shuddering at the billows.

This was a colony which could never become independent, for it never could be able to maintain itself. The necessary supplies were annually sent from England, at an expence which the Admiralty began to think would not quickly be repaid. But shame of deserting a project, and unwillingness to contend with a projector that meant well, continued the garrison, and supplied it with regular remittances of stores and provision.

That of which we were almost weary ourselves, we did not expect any one to envy; and therefore

supposed that we should be permitted to reside in Falkland's Island, the undisputed lords of tempest-beaten barrenness.

But on the 28th of November, 1769, Captain Hunt, observing a Spanish schooner hovering about the island and surveying it, sent the commander a message, by which he required him to depart. The Spaniard made an appearance of obeying, but in two days came back with letters written by the Governour of Port Solidad, and brought by the chief officer of a settlement on the east part of Falkland's Island.

In this letter, dated Malouina, November 30, the governour complains, that Captain Hunt, when he ordered the schooner to depart, assumed a power to which he could have no pretensions, by sending an imperious message to the Spaniards in the king of Spain's own dominions.

In another letter, sent at the same time, he supposes the English to be in that part only by accident, and to be ready to depart at the first warning. This letter was accompanied by a present, of which, says he, "If it be neither equal to my desire nor to your merit, you must impute the deficiency to the situation of us both."

In return to this hostile civility, Captain Hunt warned them from the island, which he claimed in the name of the king, as belonging to the English by right of the first discovery and the first settlement.

This was an assertion of more confidence than certainty. The right of discovery, indeed, has already appeared to be probable, but the right which

priority of settlement confers I know not whether we yet can establish.

On December 10, the officer sent by the Governour of Port Solidad made three protests against Captain Hunt: for threatening to fire upon him; for opposing his entrance into Port Egmont; and for entering himself into Port Solidad. On the 12th the Governour of Port Solidad formally warned Captain Hunt to leave Port Egmont, and to forbear the navigation of these seas, without permission from the king of Spain.

To this Captain Hunt replied by repeating his former claim; by declaring that his orders were to keep possession; and by once more warning the Spaniards to depart.

The next month produced more protests and more replies, of which the tenour was nearly the same. The operations of such harmless enmity having produced no effect, were then reciprocally discontinued, and the English were left for a time to enjoy the pleasures of Falkland's Island without molestation.

This tranquillity, however, did not last long. A few months afterwards (June 4, 1770) the Industry, a Spanish frigate, commanded by an officer whose name was Madariaga, anchored in Port Egmont, bound, as was said, for Port Solidad, and reduced, by a passage from Buenos Ayres of fifty-three days, to want of water.

Three days afterwards four other frigates entered the port, and a broad pendant, such as is borne by the commander of a naval armament, was displayed from the Industry. Captain Farmer, of the Swift

frigate, who commanded the garrison, ordered the crew of the Swift to come on shore, and assist in its defence; and directed Captain Maltby to bring the Favourite frigate, which he commanded, nearer to the land. The Spaniards easily discovering the purpose of his motion, let him know, that if he weighed his anchor, they would fire upon his ship; but paying no regard to these menaces, he advanced toward the shore. The Spanish fleet followed, and two shots were fired, which fell at a distance from him. He then sent to enquire the reason of such hostility, and was told that the shots were intended only as signals.

Both the English captains wrote the next day to Madariaga, the Spanish commodore, warning him from the island, as from a place which the English held by right of discovery.

Madariaga, who seems to have had no desire of unnecessary mischief, invited them (June 9) to send an officer who should take a view of his forces, that they might be convinced of the vanity of resistance, and do that without compulsion which he was, upon refusal, prepared to enforce.

An officer was sent, who found sixteen hundred men, with a train of twenty-seven cannon, four mortars, and two hundred bombs. The fleet consisted of five frigates, from twenty to thirty guns, which were now stationed opposite to the block-house.

He then sent them a formal memorial, in which he maintained his master's right to the whole Magellanick region, and exhorted the English to retire

quietly from the settlement, which they could neither justify by right, nor maintain by power.

He offered them the liberty of carrying away whatever they were desirous to remove, and promised his receipt for what should be left, that no loss might be suffered by them.

His propositions were expressed in terms of great civility; but he concludes with demanding an answer in fifteen minutes.

Having, while he was writing, received the letters of warning written the day before by the English captains, he told them that he thought himself able to prove the king of Spain's title to all those countries, but that this was no time for verbal altercations. He persisted in his determination, and allowed only fifteen minutes for an answer.

To this it was replied by Captain Farmer, that though there had been prescribed yet a shorter time, he should still resolutely defend his charge; that this, whether menace or force, would be considered as an insult on the British flag, and that satisfaction would certainly be required.

On the next day (June 10) Madariaga landed his forces, and it may be easily imagined that he had no bloody conquest. The English had only a wooden blockhouse, built at Woolwich, and carried in pieces to the island, with a small battery of cannon. To contend with obstinacy had been only to lavish life without use or hope. After the exchange of a very few shots, a capitulation was proposed.

The Spanish commander acted with moderation; he exerted little of the conqueror; what he had offered before the attack, he granted after the victory;

the English were allowed to leave the place with every honour, only their departure was delayed, by the terms of the capitulation, twenty days; and to secure their stay, the rudder of the Favourite was taken off. What they desired to carry away they removed without molestation; and of what they left an inventory was drawn, for which the Spanish officer by his receipt promised to be accountable.

Of this petty revolution, so sudden and so distant, the English ministry could not possibly have such notice as might enable them to prevent it. The conquest, if such it may be called, cost but three days; for the Spaniards, either supposing the garrison stronger than it was, or resolving to trust nothing to chance, or considering that, as their force was greater, there was less danger of bloodshed, came with a power that made resistance ridiculous, and at once demanded and obtained possession.

The first account of any discontent expressed by the Spaniards was brought by Captain Hunt, who arriving at Plymouth, June 3, 1770, informed the Admiralty that the Island had been claimed in December by the Governour of Port Solidad.

This claim, made by an officer of so little dignity, without any known direction from his superiours, could be considered only as the zeal or officiousness of an individual, unworthy of publick notice, or the formality of remonstrance.

In August, Mr. Harris, the resident at Madrid, gave notice to lord Weymouth of an account newly brought to Cadiz, that the English were in possession of Port Cuizada, the same which we call Port Egmont, in the Magellanick sea; that in January

they had warned away two Spanish ships; and that an armament was sent out in May from Buenos Ayres to dislodge them.

It was, perhaps, not yet certain that this account was true; but the information, however faithful, was too late for prevention. It was easily known, that a fleet dispatched in May had before August succeeded or miscarried.

In October Captain Maltby came to England, and gave the account which I have now epitomised, of his expulsion from Falkland's Islands.

From this moment the whole nation can witness that no time was lost. The navy was surveyed, the ships refitted, and commanders appointed; and a powerful fleet was assembled, well manned and well stored, with expedition after so long a peace perhaps never known before, and with vigour, which, after the waste of so long a war, scarcely any other nation had been capable of exerting.

This preparation, so illustrious in the eyes of Europe, and so efficacious in its event, was obstructed by the utmost power of that noisy faction which has too long filled the kingdom, sometimes with the roar of empty menace, and sometimes with the yell of hypocritical lamentation. Every man saw, and every honest man saw with detestation, that they who desired to force their sovereign into war, endeavoured at the same time to disable him from action.

The vigour and spirit of the ministry easily broke through all the machinations of these pygmy rebels, and our armament was quickly such as was likely to make our negotiations effectual.

The Prince of Masseran, in his first conference with

the English ministers on this occasion, owned that he had from Madrid received intelligence that the English had been forcibly expelled from Falkland's Island by Buccarelli, the Governour of Buenos Ayres, without any particular orders from the king of Spain. But being asked, whether in his master's name he disavowed Buccarelli's violence, he refused to answer without direction.

The scene of negotiation was now removed to Madrid, and in September Mr. Harris was directed to demand from Grimaldi the Spanish minister, the restitution of Falkland's Island, and a disavowal of Buccarelli's hostilities.

It was to be expected that Grimaldi would object to us our own behaviour, who had ordered the Spaniards to depart from the same island. To this it was replied, That the English forces were indeed directed to warn other nations away; but if compliance were refused, to proceed quietly in making their settlement, and suffer the subjects of whatever power to remain there without molestation. By possession thus taken, there was only a disputable claim advanced, which might be peaceably and regularly decided, without insult and without force; and if the Spaniards had complained at the British court, their reasons would have been heard, and all injuries redressed; but that, by presupposing the justice of their own title, and having recourse to arms, without any previous notice or remonstrance, they had violated the peace, and insulted the British government; and therefore it was expected that satisfaction should be made by publick disavowal, and immediate restitution.

rians to suppose it politically, as it is physically true, that every effect has a proportionate cause. In the inanimate action of matter upon matter, the motion produced can be but equal to the force of the moving power; but the operations of life, whether private or publick, admits no such laws. The caprices of voluntary agents laugh at calculation. It is not always that there is a strong reason for a great event. Obstinacy and flexibility, malignity and kindness, give place alternately to each other, and the reason of these vicissitudes, however important may be the consequences, often escapes the mind in which the change is made.

Whether the alteration which began in January to appear in the Spanish counsels, had any other cause than conviction of the impropriety of their past conduct, and of the danger of a new war, it is not easy to decide; but they began, whatever was the reason, to relax their haughtiness, and Mr. Harris's departure was countermanded.

The demands first made by England were still continued, and on January 22d, the Prince of Masseran delivered a declaration, in which the king of Spain "disavows the violent enterprise of Buccarelli," and promises "to restore the port and fort called Egmont, with all the artillery and stores, according to the inventory."

To this promise of restitution is subjoined, that "this engagement to restore Port Egmont cannot, nor ought in any wise to affect the question of the prior right of sovereignty of the Malouine, otherwise called Falkland's Islands."

This concession was accepted by the Earl of Roch-

ford, who declared on the part of his master, that the Prince of Masseran being authorized by his catholick majesty, " to offer in his majesty's name to the king of Great Britain a satisfaction for the injury done him by dispossessing him of Port Egmont," and having signed a declaration expressing that his catholick majesty " disavows the expedition against Port Egmont, and engages to restore it in the state in which it stood before the 10th of June 1770, his Britannick majesty will look upon the said declaration, together with the full performance of the engagement on the part of his catholick majesty, as a satisfaction for the injury done to the crown of Great Britain."

This is all that was originally demanded. The expedition is disavowed, and the island is restored. An injury is acknowledged by the reception of Lord Rochford's paper, who twice mentions the word *injury* and twice the word *satisfaction.*

The Spaniards have stipulated that the grant of possession shall not preclude the question of prior right, a question which we shall probably make no haste to discuss, and a right of which no formal resignation was ever required. This reserve has supplied matter for much clamour, and perhaps the English ministry would have been better pleased had the declaration been without it. But when we have obtained all that was asked, why should we complain that we have not more? When the possession is conceded, where is the evil that the right, which that concession supposes to be merely hypothetical, is referred to the Greek calends for a future disquisition? Were the Switzers less free or less secure,

because after their defection from the house of Austria they had never been declared independent before the treaty of Westphalia? Is the king of France less a sovereign because the king of England partakes his title?

If sovereignty implies undisputed right, scarce any prince is a sovereign through his whole dominions; if sovereignty consists in this, that no superiour is acknowledged, our king reigns at Port Egmont with sovereign authority. Almost every new-acquired territory is in some degree controvertible, and till the controversy is decided, a term very difficult to be fixed, all that can be had is real possession and actual dominion.

This surely is a sufficient answer to the feudal gabble of a man who is every day lessening that splendour of character which once illuminated the kingdom, then dazzled, and afterwards inflamed it; and for whom it will be happy if the nation shall at last dismiss him to nameless obscurity, with that equipoise of blame and praise which Corneille allows to Richelieu, a man who, I think, had much of his merit, and many of his faults.

Chacun parle à son gré de ce grand Cardinal,
Mais pour moi je n'en dirai rien;
Il m'a fait trop de bien pour en dire du mal,
Il m'a fait trop de mal pour en dire du bien.

To push advantages too far is neither generous nor just. Had we insisted on a concession of antecedent right, it may not misbecome us, either as moralists or politicians, to consider what Grimaldi could have answered. We have already, he might

say, granted you the whole effect of right, and have not denied you the name. We have not said that the right was ours before this concession, but only that what right we had, is not by this concession vacated. We have now for more than two centuries ruled large tracts of the American continent, by a claim which perhaps is valid only upon this consideration, that no power can produce a better; by the right of discovery and prior settlement. And by such titles almost all the dominions of the earth are holden, except that their original is beyond memory, and greater obscurity gives them greater veneration. Should we allow this plea to be annulled, the whole fabrick of our empire shakes at the foundation. When you suppose yourselves to have first descried the disputed island, you suppose what you can hardly prove. We were at least the general discoverers of the Magellanick region, and have hitherto held it with all its adjacencies. The justice of this tenure the world has hitherto admitted, and yourselves at least tacitly allowed it, when about twenty years ago you desisted from your purposed expedition, and expressly disowned any design of settling, where you are now not content to settle and to reign, without extorting such a confession of original right, as may invite every other nation to follow you.

To considerations such as these, it is reasonable to impute that anxiety of the Spaniards, from which the importance of this island is inferred by Junius, one of the few writers of his despicable faction whose name does not disgrace the page of an opponent. The value of the thing disputed may be very dif-

ferent to him that gains and him that loses it. The Spaniards, by yielding Falkland's Island, have admitted a precedent of what they think encroachment; have suffered a breach to be made in the outworks of their empire; and, notwithstanding the reserve of prior right, have suffered a dangerous exception to the prescriptive tenure of their American territories.

Such is the loss of Spain; let us now compute the profit of Britain. We have, by obtaining a disavowal of Buccarelli's expedition, and a restitution of our settlement, maintained the honour of the crown, and the superiority of our influence. Beyond this what have we acquired? What, but a bleak and gloomy solitude, an island thrown aside from human use, stormy in winter, and barren in summer; an island which not the southern savages have dignified with habitation; where a garrison must be kept in a state that contemplates with envy the exiles of Siberia; of which the expence will be perpetual, and the use only occasional; and which, if fortune smile upon our labours, may become a nest of smugglers in peace, and in war the refuge of future Buccaniers. To all this the government has now given ample attestation, for the island has been since abandoned, and perhaps was kept only to quiet clamours, with an intention, not then wholly concealed, of quitting it in a short time.

This is the country of which we have now possession, and of which a numerous party pretends to wish that we had murdered thousands for the titular sovereignty. To charge any men with such madness, approaches to an accusation defeated by its own

incredibility. As they have been long accumulating falsehoods, it is possible that they are now only adding another to the heap, and that they do not mean all that they profess. But of this faction what evil may not be credited? They have hitherto shown no virtue, and very little wit, beyond that mischievous cunning for which it is held by Hale that children may be hanged.

As war is the last of remedies, *cuncta prius tentanda*, all lawful expedients must be used to avoid it. As war is the extremity of evil, it is surely the duty of those whose station intrusts them with the care of nations, to avert it from their charge. There are diseases of animal nature which nothing but amputation can remove; so there may, by the depravation of human passions, be sometimes a gangrene in collective life for which fire and the sword are the necessary remedies; but in what can skill or caution be better shown than preventing such dreadful operations, while there is yet room for gentler methods?

It is wonderful with what coolness and indifference the greater part of mankind see war commenced. Those that hear of it at a distance or read of it in books, but have never presented its evils to their minds, consider it as little more than a splendid game, a proclamation, an army, a battle, and a triumph. Some indeed must perish in the most successful field, but they die upon the bed of honour, *resign their lives amidst the joys of conquest, and, filled with England's glory, smile in death.*

The life of a modern soldier is ill represented by heroick fiction. War has means of destruction more formidable than the cannon and the sword. Of the

thousands and ten thousands that perished in our late contests with France and Spain, a very small part ever felt the stroke of an enemy; the rest languished in tents and ships, amidst damps and putrefaction; pale, torpid, spiritless, and helpless; gasping and groaning, unpitied among men, made obdurate by long continuance of hopeless misery; and were at last whelmed in pits, or heaved into the ocean, without notice and without remembrance. By incommodious encampments and unwholesome stations, where courage is useless, and enterprise impracticable, fleets are silently dispeopled, and armies sluggishly melted away.

Thus is a people gradually exhausted, for the most part, with little effect. The wars of civilized nations make very slow changes in the system of empire. The publick perceives scarcely any alteration but an increase of debt; and the few individuals who are benefited, are not supposed to have the clearest right to their advantages. If he that shared the danger enjoyed the profit, and after bleeding in the battle grew rich by the victory, he might show his gains without envy. But at the conclusion of a ten years' war, how are we recompensed for the death of multitudes and the expense of millions, but by contemplating the sudden glories of paymasters and agents, contractors and commissaries, whose equipages shine like meteors, and whose palaces rise like exhalations?

These are the men who, without virtue, labour, or hazard, are growing rich as their country is impoverished; they rejoice when obstinacy or ambition adds another year to slaughter and devastation; and laugh from their desks at bravery and science, while

they are adding figure to figure, and cipher to cipher, hoping for a new contract from a new armament, and computing the profits of a siege or tempest.

Those who suffer their minds to dwell on these considerations will think it no great crime in the ministry that they have not snatched with eagerness the first opportunity of rushing into the field, when they were able to obtain by quiet negotiation all the real good that victory could have brought us.

Of victory indeed every nation is confident before the sword is drawn; and this mutual confidence produces that wantonness of bloodshed that has so often desolated the world. But it is evident, that of contradictory opinions one must be wrong; and the history of mankind does not want examples that may teach caution to the daring, and moderation to the proud.

Let us not think our laurels blasted by condescending to enquire, whether we might not possibly grow rather less than greater by attacking Spain? Whether we should have to contend with Spain alone, whatever has been promised by our patriots, may very reasonably be doubted. A war declared for the empty sound of an ancient title to a Magellanick rock, would raise the indignation of the earth against us. These encroachers on the waste of nature, says our ally the Russian, if they succeed in their first effort of usurpation, will make war upon us for a title to Kamschatscha. These universal settlers, says our ally the Dane, will in a short time settle upon Greenland, and a fleet will batter Copenhagen, till we are willing to confess that it always was their own.

In a quarrel like this, it is not possible that any power should favour us, and it is very likely that some would oppose us. The French, we are told are otherwise employed: the contests between the king of France and his own subjects are sufficient to withhold him from supporting Spain. But who does not know that a foreign war has often put a stop to civil discords? It withdraws the attention of the publick from domestick grievances, and affords opportunities of dismissing the turbulent and restless to distant employments. The Spaniards have always an argument of irresistible persuasion. If France will not support them against England, they will strengthen England against France.

But let us indulge a dream of idle speculation, and suppose that we are to engage with Spain, and with Spain alone; it is not even yet very certain that much advantage will be gained. Spain is not easily vulnerable; her kingdom, by the loss or cession of many fragments of dominion, is become solid and compact. The Spaniards have, indeed, no fleet able to oppose us, but they will not endeavour actual opposition; they will shut themselves up in their own territories, and let us exhaust our seamen in a hopeless siege. They will give commissions to privateers of every nation, who will prey upon our merchants without possibility of reprisal. If they think their Plate fleet in danger, they will forbid it to set sail, and live awhile upon the credit of treasure which all Europe knows to be safe; and which, if our obstinacy should continue till they can no longer be without it, will be conveyed to them with secrecy

and security by our natural enemies the French, or by the Dutch our natural allies.

But the whole continent of Spanish America will lie open to invasion; we shall have nothing to do but march into these wealthy regions, and make their present masters confess that they were always ours by ancient right. We shall throw brass and iron out of our houses, and nothing but silver will be seen among us.

All this is very desirable, but it is not certain that it can be easily attained. Large tracts of America were added by the last war to the British dominions; but, if the faction credit their own Apollo, they were conquered in Germany. They at best are only the barren parts of the continent, the refuse of the earlier adventurers, which the French, who came last, had taken only as better than nothing.

Against the Spanish dominions we have never hitherto been able to do much. A few privateers have grown rich at their expence, but no scheme of conquest has yet been successful. They are defended not by walls mounted with cannons which by cannons may be battered, but by the storms of the deep and the vapours of the land, by the flames of calenture and blasts of pestilence.

In the reign of Elizabeth, the favourite period of English greatness, no enterprises against America had any other consequence than that of extending English navigation. Here Cavendish perished after all his hazards; and here Drake and Hawkins, great as they were in knowledge and in fame, having promised honour to themselves and dominion to the

country, sunk by desperation and misery in dishonourable graves.

During the protectorship of Cromwell, a time of which the patriotick tribes still more ardently desire the return, the Spanish dominions were again attempted; but here, and only here, the fortune of Cromwell made a pause. His forces were driven from Hispaniola, his hopes of possessing the West Indies vanished, and Jamaica was taken, only that the whole expedition might not grow ridiculous.

The attack of Carthagena is yet remembered, where the Spaniards from the ramparts saw their invaders destroyed by the hostility of the elements; poisoned by the air, and crippled by the dews; where every hour swept away battalions; and in the three days that passed between the descent and re-embarkation, half an army perished.

In the last war the Havanna was taken; at what expence is too well remembered. May my country be never cursed with such another conquest!

These instances of miscarriage, and these arguments of difficulty, may perhaps abate the military ardour of the publick. Upon the opponents of the government their operation will be different; they wish for war, but not for conquest; victory would defeat their purposes equally with peace, because prosperity would naturally continue the trust in those hands which had used it fortunately. The patriots gratified themselves with expectations that some sinistrous accident, or erroneous conduct, might diffuse discontent and inflame malignity. Their hope is malevolence, and their good is evil.

Of their zeal for their country we have already had a specimen. While they were terrifying the nation with doubts whether it was any longer to exist; while they represented invasive armies as hovering in the clouds, and hostile fleets as emerging from the deeps; they obstructed our levies of seamen, and embarrassed our endeavours of defence. Of such men he thinks with unnecessary candour who does not believe them likely to have promoted the miscarriage which they desired, by intimidating our troops or betraying our counsels.

It is considered as an injury to the publick by those sanguinary statesmen, that though the fleet has been refitted and manned, yet no hostilities have followed; and they who sat wishing for misery and slaughter are disappointed of their pleasure. But as peace is the end of war, it is the end likewise of preparations for war; and he may be justly hunted down as the enemy of mankind, that can choose to snatch by violence and bloodshed, what gentler means can equally obtain.

The ministry are reproached as not daring to provoke an enemy, lest ill success should discredit and displace them. I hope that they had better reasons; that they paid some regard to equity and humanity; and considered themselves as intrusted with the safety of their fellow-subjects, and as the destroyers of all that should be superfluously slaughtered. But let us suppose that their own safety had some influence on their conduct, they will not, however, sink to a level with their enemies. Though the motive might be selfish, the act was innocent. They who grow rich by administering physick, are not to

be numbered with them that get money by dispensing poison. If they maintain power by harmlessness and peace, they must for ever be at a great distance from ruffians who would gain it by mischief and confusion. The watch of a city may guard it for hire; but are well employed in protecting it from those who lie in wait to fire the streets and rob the houses amidst the conflagration.

An unsuccessful war would undoubtedly have had the effect which the enemies of the ministry so earnestly desire: for who could have sustained the disgrace of folly ending in misfortune? But had wanton invasion undeservedly prospered, had Falkland's Island been yielded unconditionally with every right prior and posterior; though the rabble might have shouted, and the windows have blazed, yet those who know the value of life, and the uncertainty of publick credit, would have murmured, perhaps unheard, at the increase of our debt and the loss of our people.

This thirst of blood, however the visible promoters of sedition may think it convenient to shrink from the accusation, is loudly avowed by Junius, the writer to whom his party owes much of its pride, and some of its popularity. Of Junius it cannot be said, as of Ulysses, that he scatters ambiguous expressions among the vulgar; for he cries havock without reserve, and endeavours to let slip the dogs of foreign or of civil war, ignorant whither they are going, and careless what may be their prey.

Junius has sometimes made his satire felt, but let

not injudicious admiration mistake the venom of the shaft for the vigour of the bow. He has sometimes sported with lucky malice; but to him that knows his company, it is not hard to be sarcastick in a mask. While he walks like Jack the Giant-killer in a coat of darkness, he may do much mischief with little strength. Novelty captivates the superficial and thoughtless; vehemence delights the discontented and turbulent. He that contradicts acknowledged truth, will always have an audience; he that vilifies established authority will always find abettors.

Junius burst into notice with a blaze of impudence which has rarely glared upon the world before, and drew the rabble after him as a monster makes a show. When he had once provided for his safety by impenetrable secrecy, he had nothing to combat but truth and justice, enemies whom he knows to be feeble in the dark. Being then at liberty to indulge himself in all the immunities of invisibility; out of the reach of danger, he has been bold; out of the reach of shame, he has been confident. As a rhetorician, he has had the art of persuading when he seconded desire; as a reasoner, he has convinced those who had no doubt before; as a moralist, he has taught that virtue may disgrace; and as a patriot, he has gratified the mean by insults on the high. Finding sedition ascendant, he has been able to advance it; finding the nation combustible, he has been able to inflame it. Let us abstract from his wit the vivacity of insolence, and withdraw from his efficacy the sympathetick favour of plebeian malig-

nity; I do not say that we shall leave him nothing; the cause that I defend scorns the help of falsehood; but if we leave him only his merit, what will be his praise?

It is not by his liveliness of imagery, his pungency of periods, or his fertility of allusion, that he detains the cits of London, and the boors of Middlesex. Of style and sentiment they take no cognizance. They admire him for virtues like their own, for contempt of order and violence of outrage, for rage of defamation and audacity of falsehood. The supporters of the Bill of Rights feel no niceties of composition, nor dexterities of sophistry: their faculties are better proportioned to the bawl of Bellas, or barbarity of Beckford; but they are told that Junius is on their side, and they are therefore sure that Junius is infallible. Those who know not whither he would lead them, resolve to follow him; and those who cannot find his meaning, hope he means rebellion.

Junius is an unusual phenomenon, on which some have gazed with wonder and some with terrour, but wonder and terrour are transitory passions. He will soon be more closely viewed or more attentively examined, and what folly has taken for a comet that from its flaming hair shook pestilence and war, enquiry will find to be only a meteor formed by the vapours of putrefying democracy, and kindled into flame by the effervescence of interest struggling with conviction; which after having plunged its followers in a bog, will leave us enquiring why we regard it.

Yet though I cannot think the style of Junius se-

cure from criticism, though his expressions are often trite, and his periods feeble, I should never have stationed him where he has placed himself, had I not rated him by his morals rather than his faculties. What, says Pope, must be the priest, where a monkey is the god? What must be the drudge of a party, of which the heads are Wilkes and Crosby, Sawbridge and Townsend?

Junius knows his own meaning, and can therefore tell it. He is an enemy to the ministry, he sees them growing hourly stronger. He knows that a war at once unjust and unsuccessful would have certainly displaced them, and is therefore, in his zeal for his country, angry that war was not unjustly made, and unsuccessfully conducted. But there are others whose thoughts are less clearly expressed, and whose schemes perhaps are less consequentially digested; who declare that they do not wish for a rupture, yet condemn the ministry for not doing that, by which a rupture would naturally have been made.

If one party resolves to demand what the other resolves to refuse, the dispute can be determined only by arbitration; and between powers who have no common superiour, there is no other arbitrator than the sword.

Whether the ministry might not equitably have demanded more, is not worth a question. The utmost exertion of right is always invidious, and where claims are not easily determinable, is always dangerous. We asked all that was necessary, and persisted in our first claim without mean recession, or wanton aggravation. The Spaniards found us resolute, and complied after a short struggle.

The real crime of the ministry is, that they have found the means of avoiding their own ruin; but the charge against them is multifarious and confused, as will happen, when malice and discontent are ashamed of their complaint. The past and the future are complicated in the censure. We have heard a tumultuous clamour about honour and rights, injuries and insults, the British flag, and the Favourite's rudder, Buccarelli's conduct, and Grimaldi's declarations, the Manilla ransom, delays and reparation.

Through the whole argument of the faction runs the general errour, that our settlement on Falkland's Island was not only lawful but unquestionable; that our right was not only certain but acknowledged; and that the equity of our conduct was such, that the Spaniards could not blame or obstruct it without combating their own conviction, and opposing the general opinion of mankind.

If once it be discovered that, in the opinion of the Spaniards, our settlement was usurped, our claim arbitrary, and our conduct insolent, all that has happened will appear to follow by a natural concatenation. Doubts will produce disputes and disquisition, disquisition requires delay, and delay causes inconvenience.

Had the Spanish government immediately yielded unconditionally all that was required, we might have been satisfied; but what would Europe have judged of their submission? that they shrunk before us as a conquered people, who having lately yielded to our arms, were now compelled to sacrifice to our pride. The honour of the publick is indeed of high

importance; but we must remember that we have had to transact with a mighty king and a powerful nation, who have unluckily been taught to think that they have honour to keep or lose as well as ourselves.

When the Admiralty were told in June of the warning given to Hunt, they were, I suppose, informed that Hunt had first provoked it by warning away the Spaniards, and naturally considered one act of insolence as balanced by another, without expecting that more would be done on either side. Of representations and remonstrances there would be no end, if they were to be made whenever small commanders are uncivil to each other; nor could peace ever be enjoyed, if upon such transient provocations it be imagined necessary to prepare for war. We might then, it is said, have increased our force with more leisure and less inconvenience; but this is to judge only by the event. We omitted to disturb the publick, because we did not suppose that an armament would be necessary.

Some months afterwards, as has been told, Buccarelli, the governour of Buenos Ayres, sent against the settlement of Port Egmont a force which ensured the conquest. The Spanish commander required the English captains to depart, but they, thinking that resistance necessary which they knew to be useless, gave the Spaniards the right of prescribing terms of capitulation. The Spaniards imposed no new condition, except that the sloop should not sail under twenty days; and of this they secured the performance by taking off the rudder.

To an inhabitant of the land there appears nothing

in all this unreasonable or offensive. If the English intended to keep their stipulation, how were they injured by the detention of the rudder? If the rudder be to a ship what his tail is in fables to a fox, the part in which honour is placed, and of which the violation is never to be endured, I am sorry that the Favourite suffered an indignity, but cannot yet think it a cause for which nations should slaughter one another.

When Buccarelli's invasion was known, and the dignity of the crown infringed, we demanded reparation and prepared for war, and we gained equal respect by the moderation of our terms, and the spirit of our exertion. The Spanish minister immediately denied that Buccarelli had received any particular orders to seize Port Egmont, nor pretended that he was justified, otherwise than by the general instructions by which the American governours are required to exclude the subjects of other powers.

To have enquired whether our settlement at Port Egmont was any violation of the Spanish rights, had been to enter upon a discussion which the pertinacity of political disputants might have continued without end. We therefore called for restitution, not as a confession of right, but as a reparation of honour, which required that we should be restored to our former state upon the island, and that the king of Spain should disavow the action of his governour.

In return to this demand, the Spaniards expected from us a disavowal of the menaces with which they had been first insulted by Hunt; and if the claim to the island be supposed doubtful, they certainly expected it with equal reason. This, however, was

refused, and our superiority of strength gave validity to our arguments.

But we are told that the disavowal of the king of Spain is temporary and fallacious; that Buccarelli's armament had all the appearance of regular forces and a concerted expedition; and that he is not treated at home as a man guilty of piracy, or as disobedient to the orders of his master.

That the expedition was well planned, and the forces properly supplied, affords no proof of communication between the governour and his court. Those who are intrusted with the care of kingdoms in another hemisphere, must always be trusted with power to defend them.

As little can be inferred from his reception at the Spanish court. He is not punished indeed, for what has he done that deserves punishment? He was sent into America to govern and defend the dominions of Spain. He thought the English were encroaching, and drove them away. No Spaniard thinks that he has exceeded his duty, nor does the king of Spain charge him with excess. The boundaries of dominion in that part of the world have not yet been settled; and he mistook, if a mistake there was, like a zealous subject, in his master's favour.

But all this enquiry is superfluous. Considered as a reparation of honour, the disavowal of the king of Spain, made in the sight of all Europe, is of equal value whether true or false. There is indeed no reason to question its veracity; they, however, who do not believe it, must allow the weight of that influence by which a great prince is reduced to disown his own commission.

But the general orders upon which the governour is acknowledged to have acted, are neither disavowed nor explained. Why the Spaniards should disavow the defence of their own territories, the warmest disputant will find it difficult to tell; and if by an explanation is meant an accurate delineation of the southern empire, and the limitation of their claims beyond the line, it cannot be imputed to any very culpable remissness, that what has been denied for two centuries to the European powers, was not obtained in a hasty wrangle about a petty settlement.

The ministry were too well acquainted with negotiation to fill their heads with such idle expectations. The question of right was inexplicable and endless. They left it as it stood. To be restored to actual possession was easily practicable. This restoration they required and obtained.

But they should, say their opponents, have insisted upon more; they should have exacted not only reparation of our honour, but repayment of our expence. Nor are they all satisfied with the recovery of the costs and damages of the present contest; they are for taking this opportunity of calling in old debts, and reviving our right to the ranson of Manilla.

The Manilla ransom has, I think, been most mentioned by the inferiour bellowers of sedition. Those who lead the faction know that it cannot be remembered much to their advantage. The followers of Lord Rockingham remember that his ministry began and ended without obtaining it; the adherents to Grenville would be told, that he could never be

taught to understand our claim. The law of nations made little of his knowledge. Let him not, however, be depreciated in his grave. If he was sometimes wrong, he was often right.*

Of reimbursement the talk has been more confident, though not more reasonable. The expences of war have been often desired, have been sometimes required, but were never paid; or never, but when resistance was hopeless, and there remained no choice between submission and destruction.

Of our late equipments I know not from whom the charge can be very properly expected. The king of Spain disavows the violence which provoked us to arm, and for the mischiefs which he did not do, why should he pay? Buccarelli, though he had learned all the arts of an East-Indian governour, could hardly have collected at Buenos Ayres a sum sufficient to satisfy our demands. If he be honest, he is hardly rich; and if he be disposed to rob, he has the misfortune of being placed where robbers have been before him.

The king of Spain, indeed, delayed to comply with our proposals, and our armament was made necessary by unsatisfactory answers and dilatory debates. The delay certainly increased our expences, and it is not unlikely that the increase of our expences put an end to delay.

But this is the inevitable process of human affairs.

* In the first edition, this passage stood thus: "Let him not, however, be depreciated in his grave. He had powers not universally possessed; could he have enforced payment of the Manilla ransom, *he could have counted it.*" There were some other alterations suggested, it would appear, by Lord North. C.

Negotiation requires time. What is not apparent to intuition must be found by enquiry. Claims that have remained doubtful for ages cannot be settled in a day. Reciprocal complaints are not easily adjusted but by reciprocal compliance. The Spaniards thinking themselves entitled to the island, and injured by Captain Hunt, in their turn demanded satisfaction, which was refused; and where is the wonder if their concessions were delayed! They may tell us, that an independent nation is to be influenced not by command, but by persuasion; that if we expect our proposals to be received without deliberation, we assume that sovereignty which they do not grant us; and that if we arm while they are deliberating, we must indulge our martial ardour at our own charge.

The English ministry asked all that was reasonable, and enforced all that they asked. Our national honour is advanced, and our interest, if any interest we have, is sufficiently secured. There can be none amongst us to whom this transaction does not seem happily concluded, but those who, having fixed their hopes on publick calamities, sat like vultures waiting for a day of carnage. Having worn out all the arts of domestick sedition, having wearied violence, and exhausted falsehood, they yet flattered themselves with some assistance from the pride or malice of Spain; and when they could no longer make the people complain of grievances which they did not feel, they had the comfort yet of knowing that real evils were possible, and their resolution is well known of charging all evil on their governours.

The reconciliation was therefore considered as the loss of their last anchor; and received not only with

the fretfulness of disappointment but the rage of desperation. When they found that all were happy in spite of their machinations, and the soft effulgence of peace shone out upon the nation, they felt no motion but that of sullen envy; they could not, like Milton's prince of hell, abstract themselves a moment from their evil; as they have not the wit of Satan, they have not his virtue; they tried once again what could be done by sophistry without art, and confidence without credit. They represented their sovereign as dishonoured, and their country as betrayed, or, in their fiercer paroxysms of fury, reviled their sovereign as betraying it.

Their pretences I have here endeavoured to expose, by showing that more than has been yielded was not to be expected, that more perhaps was not to be desired, and that, if all had been refused, there had scarcely been an adequate reason for a war.

There was perhaps never much danger of war or of refusal, but what danger there was proceeded from the faction. Foreign nations, unacquainted with the insolence of Common Councils, and unaccustomed to the howl of plebeian patriotism, when they heard of rabbles and riots, of petitions and remonstrances, of discontent in Surrey, Derbyshire, and Yorkshire, when they saw the chain of subordination broken, and the legislature threatened and defied, naturally imagined that such a government had little leisure for Falkland's Island; they supposed that the English, when they returned ejected from Port Egmont, would find Wilkes invested with the protectorate; or see the Mayor of London, what the French have formerly seen their mayors of the pa-

lace, the commander of the army and tutor of the king; that they would be called to tell their tale before the Common Council; and that the world was to expect war or peace from a vote of the subscribers to the Bill of Rights.

But our enemies have now lost their hopes, and our friends, I hope, are recovered from their fears. To fancy that our government can be subverted by the rabble, whom its lenity has pampered into impudence, is to fear that a city may be drowned by the overflowing of its kennels. The distemper which cowardice or malice thought either decay of the vitals, or resolution of the nerves, appears at last to have been nothing more than a political *phthiriasis*, a disease too loathsome for a plainer name; but the effect of negligence rather than of weakness, and of which the shame is greater than the danger.

Among the disturbers of our quiet are some animals of greater bulk, whom their power of roaring persuaded us to think formidable, but we now perceive that sound and force do not always go together. The noise of a savage proves nothing but his hunger.

After all our broils, foreign and domestick, we may at last hope to remain a while in quiet, amused with the view of our own success. We have gained political strength by the increase of our reputation; we have gained real strength by the reparation of our navy; we have shown Europe that ten years of war have not yet exhausted us; and we have enforced our settlement on an island on which twenty years ago we durst not venture to look.

These are the gratifications only of honest minds; but there is a time in which hope comes to all.

From the present happiness of the publick, the patriots themselves may derive advantage. To be harmless, though by impotence, obtains some degree of kindness: no man hates a worm as he hates a viper; they were once dreaded enough to be detested, as serpents that could bite; they have now shown that they can only hiss, and may therefore quietly slink into holes, and change their slough unmolested and forgotten.

THE

PATRIOT.

ADDRESSED TO THE

ELECTORS OF GREAT BRITAIN.

1774.

They bawl for freedom in their senseless mood,
Yet still revolt when truth would set them free;
License they mean, when they cry liberty,
For who loves that must first be wise and good.

MILTON.

To improve the golden moment of opportunity, and catch the good that is within our reach, is the great art of life. Many wants are suffered, which might once have been supplied; and much time is lost in regretting the time which had been lost before.

At the end of every seven years comes the Saturnalian season, when the freemen of Great Britain may please themselves with the choice of their representatives. This happy day has now arrived, somewhat sooner than it could be claimed.

To select and depute those, by whom laws are to be made, and taxes to be granted, is a high dignity and an important trust: and it is the business of every elector to consider, how this dignity may be well sustained, and this trust faithfully discharged.

It ought to be deeply impressed on the minds of all who have voices in this national deliberation, that no man can deserve a seat in parliament who is not a PATRIOT. No other man will protect our rights, no other man can merit our confidence.

A PATRIOT is he whose publick conduct is regulated by one single motive, the love of his country; who, as an agent in parliament, has for himself neither hope nor fear, neither kindness nor resentment, but refers every thing to the common interest.

That of five hundred men, such as this degenerate age affords, a majority can be found thus virtuously abstracted, who will affirm? Yet there is no good in despondence: vigilance and activity often effect more than was expected. Let us take a Patriot where we can meet him; and that we may not flatter ourselves by false appearances, distinguish those marks which are certain from those which may deceive: for a man may have the external appearance of a Patriot, without the constituent qualities; as false coins have often lustre, though they want weight.

Some claim a place in the list of Patriots by an acrimonious and unremitting opposition to the court.

This mark is by no means infallible. Patriotism is not necessarily included in rebellion. A man may hate his king, yet not love his country. He that has been refused a reasonable or unreasonable request, who thinks his merit underrated, and sees his influence declining, begins soon to talk of natural equality, the absurdity of *many made for one*, the original compact, the foundation of authority, and the majesty of the people. As his political melancholy increases, he tells, and perhaps dreams, of the

advances of the prerogative, and the dangers of arbitrary power; yet his design in all his declamation is not to benefit his country, but to gratify his malice.

These, however, are the most honest of the opponents of government; their patriotism is a species of disease; and they feel some part of what they express. But the greater, far the greater number of those who rave and rail, and enquire and accuse, neither suspect nor fear, nor care for the publick; but hope to force their way to riches by virulence and invective, and are vehement and clamorous, only that they may be sooner hired to be silent.

A man sometimes starts up a Patriot, only by disseminating discontent, and propagating reports of secret influence, of dangerous counsels, of violated rights, and encroaching usurpation.

This practice is no certain note of patriotism. To instigate the populace with rage beyond the provocation, is to suspend publick happiness, if not to destroy it. He is no lover of his country, that unnecessarily disturbs its peace. Few errours, and few faults of government can justify an appeal to the rabble; who ought not to judge of what they cannot understand, and whose opinions are not propagated by reason, but caught by contagion.

The fallaciousness of this note of patriotism is particularly apparent, when the clamour continues after the evil is past. They who are still filling our ears with Mr. Wilkes, and the Freeholders of Middlesex, lament a grievance that is now at an end. Mr. Wilkes may be chosen, if any will choose him, and the precedent of his exclusion makes not any honest, or any decent man, think himself in danger.

It may be doubted whether the name of a Patriot can be fairly given as the reward of secret satire, or open outrage. To fill the newspapers with sly hints of corruption and intrigue, to circulate the Middlesex Journal and London Pacquet, may, indeed, be zeal; but it may likewise be interest and malice. To offer a petition, not expected to be granted: to insult a king with a rude remonstrance, only because there is no punishment for legal insolence, is not courage, for there is no danger; nor patriotism, for it tends to the subversion of order, and lets wickedness loose upon the land, by destroying the reverence due to sovereign authority.

It is the quality of patriotism to be jealous and watchful, to observe all secret machinations, and to see publick dangers at a distance. The true lover of his country is ready to communicate his fears, and to sound the alarm, whenever he perceives the approach of mischief. But he sounds no alarm, when there is no enemy: he never terrifies his countrymen till he is terrified himself. The patriotism therefore may be justly doubted of him, who professes to be disturbed by incredibilities; who tells, that the last peace was obtained by bribing the Princess of Wales; that the king is grasping at arbitrary power; and that because the French in the new conquests enjoy their own laws, there is a design at court of abolishing in England the trial by juries.

Still less does the true Patriot circulate opinions which he knows to be false. No man, who loves his country, fills the nation with clamorous complaints, that the protestant religion is in danger, because *popery is established in the extensive province*

of Quebec—a falsehood so open and shameless, that it can need no confutation among those who know that of which it is almost impossible for the most unenlightened zealot to be ignorant,

That Quebec is on the other side of the Atlantick, at too great a distance to do much good or harm to the European world:

That the inhabitants, being French, were always papists, who are certainly more dangerous as enemies, than as subjects:

That though the province be wide, the people are few, probably not so many as may be found in one of the larger English counties:

That persecution is not more virtuous in a protestant than a papist; and that while we blame Lewis the Fourteenth for his dragoons and his galleys, we ought, when power comes into our hands, to use it with greater equity:

That when Canada with its inhabitants was yielded, the free enjoyment of their religion was stipulated; a condition, of which king William, who was no propagator of popery, gave an example nearer home, at the surrender of Limerick:

That in an age, where every mouth is open for *liberty of conscience*, it is equitable to show some regard to the conscience of a papist, who may be supposed, like other men, to think himself safest in his own religion; and that those, at least, who enjoy a toleration, ought not to deny it to our new subjects.

If liberty of conscience be a natural right, we have no power to withhold it; if it be an indulgence, it

may be allowed to papists, while it is not denied to other sects.

A Patriot is necessarily and invariably a lover of the people. But even this mark may sometimes deceive us.

The people is a very heterogeneous and confused mass of the wealthy and the poor, the wise and the foolish, the good and the bad. Before we confer on a man, who caresses the people, the title of Patriot, we must examine to what part of the people he directs his notice. It is proverbially said, that he who dissembles his own character, may be known by that of his companions. If the candidate of patriotism endeavours to infuse right opinions into the higher ranks, and by their influence to regulate the lower; if he consorts chiefly with the wise, the temperate, the regular, and the virtuous, his love of the people may be rational and honest. But if his first or principal application be to the indigent, who are always inflammable; to the weak, who are naturally suspicious; to the ignorant, who are easily misled; and to the profligate, who have no hope but from mischief and confusion; let his love of the people be no longer boasted. No man can reasonably be thought a lover of his country, for roasting an ox, or burning a boot, or attending the meeting at Mile-End, or registering his name in the Lumber Troop. He may, among the drunkards, be a hearty fellow, and among sober handicraftsmen, a free-spoken gentleman; but he must have some better distinction before he is a Patriot.

A Patriot is always ready to countenance the just

claims, and animate the reasonable hopes of the people; he reminds them frequently of their rights, and stimulates them to resent encroachments, and to multiply securities.

But all this may be done in appearance, without real patriotism. He that raises false hopes to serve a present purpose, only makes a way for disappointment and discontent. He who promises to endeavour, what he knows his endeavours unable to effect, means only to delude his followers by an empty clamour of ineffectual zeal.

A true Patriot is no lavish promiser: he undertakes not to shorten parliaments; to repeal laws; or to change the mode of representation, transmitted by our ancestors: he knows that futurity is not in his power, and that all times are not alike favourable to change.

Much less does he make a vague and indefinite promise of obeying the mandates of his constituents. He knows the prejudices of faction, and the inconstancy of the multitude. He would first enquire, how the opinion of his constituents shall be taken. Popular instructions are commonly the work, not of the wise and steady, but the violent and rash; meetings held for directing representatives are seldom attended but by the idle and the dissolute; and he is not without suspicion, that of his constituents, as of other numbers of men, the smaller part may often be the wiser.

He considers himself as deputed to promote the publick good, and to preserve his constituents, with the rest of his countrymen, not only from being hurt by others, but from hurting themselves.

The common marks of patriotism having been examined, and shown to be such as artifice may counterfeit, or folly misapply, it cannot be improper to consider, whether there are not some characteristical modes of speaking or acting, which may prove a man to be NOT A PATRIOT.

In this enquiry, perhaps, clearer evidence may be discovered, and firmer persuasion attained; for it is commonly easier to know what is wrong than what is right; to find what we should avoid, than what we should pursue.

As war is one of the heaviest of national evils, a calamity in which every species of misery is involved; as it sets the general safety to hazard, suspends commerce, and desolates the country; as it exposes great numbers to hardships, dangers, captivity, and death; no man, who desires the publick prosperity, will inflame general resentment by aggravating minute injuries, or enforcing disputable rights of little importance.

It may therefore be safely pronounced, that those men are no Patriots, who, when the national honour was vindicated in the sight of Europe, and the Spaniards having invaded what they call their own, had shrunk to a disavowal of their attempt and a relaxation of their claim, would still have instigated us to a war for a bleak and barren spot in the Magellanick ocean, of which no use could be made, unless it were a place of exile for the hypocrites of patriotism.

Yet let it not be forgotten, that, by the howling violence of patriotic rage, the nation was for a time exasperated to such madness, that for a barren rock, under a stormy sky, we might have now been fighting

and dying, had not our competitors been wiser than ourselves; and those who are now courting the favour of the people by noisy professions of publick spirit, would, while they were counting the profits of their artifice, have enjoyed the patriotick pleasure of hearing sometimes, that thousands had been slaughtered in a battle, and sometimes that a navy had been dispeopled by poisoned air and corrupted food.

He that wishes to see his country robbed of its rights cannot be a patriot.

That man therefore is no patriot, who justifies the ridiculous claims of American usurpation; who endeavours to deprive the nation of its natural and lawful authority over its own colonies; those colonies, which were settled under English protection; were constituted by an English charter; and have been defended by English arms.

To suppose, that by sending out a colony, the nation established an independent power; that when, by indulgence and favour, emigrants are become rich, they shall not contribute to their own defence, but at their own pleasure; and that they shall not be included, like millions of their fellow-subjects, in the general system of representation; involves such an accumulation of absurdity, as nothing but the show of patriotism could palliate.

He that accepts protection, stipulates obedience. We have always protected the Americans; we may therefore subject them to government.

The less is included in the greater. That power which can take away life, may seize upon property. The parliament may enact for America a law of ca-

pital punishment; it may therefore establish a mode and proportion of taxation.

But there are some who lament the state of the poor Bostonians, because they cannot all be supposed to have committed acts of rebellion, yet all are involved in the penalty imposed. This, they say, is to violate the first rule of justice, by condemning the innocent to suffer with the guilty.

This deserves some notice, as it seems dictated by equity and humanity, however it may raise contempt by the ignorance which it betrays of the state of man, and the system of things. That the innocent should be confounded with the guilty, is undoubtedly an evil; but it is an evil which no care or caution can prevent. National crimes require national punishments, of which many must necessarily have their part, who have not incurred them by personal guilt. If rebels should fortify a town, the cannon of lawful authority will endanger equally the harmless burghers and the criminal garrison.

In some cases, those suffer most who are least intended to be hurt. If the French, in the late war, had taken an English city, and permitted the natives to keep their dwellings, how could it have been recovered, but by the slaughter of our friends? A bomb might as well destroy an Englishman as a Frenchman; and by famine we know that the inhabitants would be the first that should perish.

This infliction of promiscuous evil may therefore be lamented, but cannot be blamed. The power of lawful government must be maintained; and the miseries which rebellion produces can be charged only on the rebels.

That man, likewise, is *not a Patriot*, who denies his governours their due praise, and who conceals from the people the benefits which they receive. Those, therefore, can lay no claim to this illustrious appellation, who impute want of publick spirit to the late parliament; an assembly of men, whom, notwithstanding some fluctuation of counsel, and some weakness of agency, the nation must always remember with gratitude, since it is indebted to them for a very ample concession in the resignation of protections, and a wise and honest attempt to improve the constitution, in the new judicature instituted for the trial of elections.

The right of protection, which might be necessary when it was first claimed, and was very consistent with that liberality of immunities in which the feudal constitution delighted, was, by its nature, liable to abuse, and had in reality been sometimes misapplied, to the evasion of the law, and the defeat of justice. The evil was perhaps not adequate to the clamour; nor is it very certain, that the possible good of this privilege was not more than equal to the possible evil. It is, however, plain, that whether they gave any thing or not to the publick, they at least lost something from themselves. They divested their dignity of a very splendid distinction, and showed that they were more willing than their predecessors to stand on a level with their fellow-subjects.

The new mode of trying elections, if it be found effectual, will diffuse its consequences further than seems yet to be foreseen. It is, I believe, generally considered as advantageous only to those who claim seats in parliament; but, if to choose representatives

be one of the most valuable rights of Englishmen, every voter must consider that law as adding to his happiness, which makes his suffrage efficacious; since it was vain to choose, while the election could be controlled by any other power.

With what imperious contempt of ancient rights, and what audaciousness of arbitrary authority former parliaments have judged the disputes about elections, it is not necessary to relate. The claim of a candidate, and the right of electors, are said scarcely to have been, even in appearance, referred to conscience; but to have been decided by party, by passion, by prejudice, or by frolick. To have friends in the borough was of little use to him, who wanted friends in the house; a pretence was easily found to evade a majority, and the seat was at last his, that was chosen not by his electors, but his fellow-senators.

Thus the nation was insulted with a mock election, and the parliament was filled with spurious representatives; one of the most important claims, that of right to sit in the supreme council of the kingdom, was debated in jest, and no man could be confident of success from the justice of his cause.

A disputed election is now tried with the same scrupulousness and solemnity, as any other title. The candidate that has deserved well of his neighbours, may now be certain of enjoying the effect of their approbation; and the elector, who has voted honestly for known merit, may be certain that he has not voted in vain.

Such was the parliament, which some of those, who are now aspiring to sit in another, have taught the rabble to consider as an unlawful convention of men,

worthless, venal, and prostitute, slaves of the court, and tyrants of the people.

That the next House of Commons may act upon the principles of the last, with more constancy and higher spirit, must be the wish of all who wish well to the publick; and it is surely not too much to expect that the nation will recover from its delusion, and unite in a general abhorrence of those who, by deceiving the credulous with fictitious mischiefs, overbearing the weak by audacity of falsehood, by appealing to the judgment of ignorance, and flattering the vanity of meanness, by slandering honesty and insulting dignity, have gathered round them whatever the kingdom can supply of base, and gross, and profligate; and, *raised by merit to this bad eminence*, arrogate to themselves the name of PATRIOTS.

TAXATION NO TYRANNY;

AN

ANSWER

TO THE

RESOLUTIONS AND ADDRESS

OF THE

AMERICAN CONGRESS.

1775.

In all the parts of human knowledge, whether terminating in science merely speculative, or operating upon life private or civil, are admitted some fundamental principles, or common axioms, which being generally received are little doubted, and being little doubted have been rarely proved.

Of these gratuitous and acknowledged truths it is often the fate to become less evident by endeavours to explain them, however necessary such endeavours may be made by the misapprehensions of absurdity, or the sophistries of interest. It is difficult to prove the principles of science; because notions cannot always be found more intelligible than those which are questioned. It is difficult to prove the principles of practice, because they have for the most part not been discovered by investiga-

tion, but obtruded by experience; and the demonstrator will find, after an operose deduction, that he has been trying to make that seen which can be only felt.

Of this kind is the position, that "the supreme power of every community has the right of requiring from all its subjects, such contributions as are necessary to the publick safety or publick prosperity," which was considered by all mankind as comprising the primary and essential condition of all political society, till it became disputed by those zealots of anarchy, who have denied to the parliament of Britain the right of taxing the American Colonies.

In favour of this exemption of the Americans from the authority of their lawful sovereign, and the dominion of their mother-country, very loud clamours have been raised, and many wild assertions advanced, which by such as borrow their opinions from the reigning fashion have been admitted as arguments; and what is strange, though their tendency is to lessen English honour, and English power, have been heard by Englishmen with a wish to find them true. Passion has in its first violence controlled interest, as the eddy for a while runs against the stream.

To be prejudiced is always to be weak; yet there are prejudices so near to laudable, that they have been often praised, and are always pardoned. To love their country has been considered as virtue in men, whose love could not be otherwise than blind, because their preference was made without a comparison; but it has never been my fortune to find, either in ancient or modern writers, any honourable

mention of those, who have with equal blindness hated their country.

These antipatriotick prejudices are the abortions of folly impregnated by faction, which being produced against the standing order of nature, have not strength sufficient for long life. They are born only to scream and perish, and leave those to contempt or detestation, whose kindness was employed to nurse them into mischief.

To perplex the opinion of the publick many artifices have been used, which, as usually happens when falsehood is to be maintained by fraud, lose their force by counteracting one another.

The nation is sometimes to be mollified by a tender tale of men, who fled from tyranny to rocks and deserts, and is persuaded to lose all claims of justice, and all sense of dignity, in compassion for a harmless people, who having worked hard for bread in a wild country, and obtained by the slow progression of manual industry the accommodations of life, are now invaded by unprecedented oppression, and plundered of their properties by the harpies of taxation.

We are told how their industry is obstructed by unnatural restraints, and their trade confined by rigorous prohibitions; how they are forbidden to enjoy the products of their own soil, to manufacture the materials which nature spreads before them, or to carry their own goods to the nearest market: and surely the generosity of English virtue will never heap new weight upon those that are already overladen; will never delight in that dominion, which cannot be exercised but by cruelty and outrage.

chant's desire is not of glory, but of gain; not of publick wealth, but of private emolument; he is therefore rarely to be consulted about war and peace, or any designs of wide extent and distant consequence.

Yet this, like other general characters, will sometimes fail. The traders of Birmingham have rescued themselves from all imputation of narrow selfishness by a manly recommendation to parliament of the rights and dignity of their native country.

To these men I do not intend to ascribe an absurd and enthusiastick contempt of interest, but to give them the rational and just praise of distinguishing real from seeming good, of being able to see through the cloud of interposing difficulties, to the lasting and solid happiness of victory and settlement.

Lest all these topicks of persuasion should fail, the greater actor of patriotism has tried another, in which terrour and pity are happily combined, not without a proper superaddition of that admiration which latter ages have brought into the drama. The heroes of Boston, he tells us, if the stamp act had not been repealed, would have left their town, their port, and their trade, have resigned the splendour of opulence, and quitted the delights of neighbourhood, to disperse themselves over the country, where they would till the ground, and fish in the rivers, and range the mountains, AND BE FREE.

These surely are brave words. If the mere sound of freedom can operate thus powerfully, let no man hereafter doubt the story of the Pied Piper. *The*

removal of the people of Boston into the country seems even to the Congress not only *difficult in its execution*, but *important in its consequences*. The difficulty of execution is best known to the Bostonian themselves; the consequence, alas! will only be, that they will leave good houses to wiser men.

Yet before they quit the comforts of a warm home for the sounding something which they think better, he cannot be thought their enemy who advises them to consider well whether they shall find it. By turning fishermen or hunters, woodmen or shepherds, they may become wild, but it is not so easy to conceive them free; for who can be more a slave than he that is driven by force from the comforts of life, is compelled to leave his house to a casual comer, and whatever he does, or wherever he wanders, finds every moment some new testimony of his own subjection? If choice of evil be freedom, the felon in the galleys has his option of labour or of stripes. The Bostonian may quit his house to starve in the fields; his dog may refuse to set, and smart under the lash, and they may then congratulate each other upon the smiles of liberty, *profuse of bliss and pregnant with delight.*

To treat such designs as serious, would be to think too contemptuously of Bostonian understandings. The artifice indeed is not new: the blusterer who threatened in vain to destroy his opponent, has sometimes obtained his end, by making it believed that he would hang himself.

But terrours and pity are not the only means by which the taxation of the Americans is opposed. There are those who profess to use them only as

auxiliaries to reason and justice, who tell us, that to tax the Colonies is usurpation and oppression, an invasion of natural and legal rights, and a violation of those principles which support the constitution of English government.

This question is of great importance. That the Americans are able to bear taxation is indubitable; that their refusal may be overruled is highly probable; but power is no sufficient evidence of truth. Let us examine our own claim, and the objections of the recusants, with caution proportioned to the event of the decision, which must convict one part of robbery, or the other of rebellion.

A tax is a payment exacted by authority from part of the community for the benefit of the whole. From whom, and in what proportion such payment shall be required, and to what uses it shall be applied, those only are to judge to whom government is intrusted. In the British dominions taxes are apportioned, levied, and appropriated by the states assembled in parliament.

Of every empire all the subordinate communities are liable to taxation, because they all share the benefits of government, and therefore ought all to furnish their proportion of the expence.

This the Americans have never openly denied. That it is their duty to pay the costs of their own safety they seem to admit; nor do they refuse their contribution to the exigencies, whatever they may be, of the British empire; but they make this participation of the publick burden a duty of very uncertain extent, and imperfect obligation, a duty temporary, occasional, and elective, of which they re-

serve to themselves the right of settling the degree, the time, and the duration, of judging when it may be required, and when it has been performed.

They allow to the supreme power nothing more than the liberty of notifying to them its demands or its necessities. Of this notification they profess to think for themselves, how far it shall influence their counsels, and of the necessities alleged, how far they shall endeavour to relieve them. They assume the exclusive power of settling not only the mode but the quantity of this payment. They are ready to co-operate with all the other dominions of the king; but they will co-operate by no means which they do not like, and at no greater charge than they are willing to bear.

This claim, wild as it may seem, this claim, which supposes dominion without authority, and subjects without subordination, has found among the libertines of policy many clamorous and hardy vindicators. The laws of nature, the rights of humanity, the faith of charters, the danger of liberty, the encroachments of usurpation, have been thundered in our ears, sometimes by interested faction, and sometimes by honest stupidity.

It is said by Fontenelle, that if twenty philosophers shall resolutely deny that the presence of the sun makes the day, he will not despair but whole nations may adopt the opinion. So many political dogmatists have denied to the Mother-country the power of taxing the Colonies, and have enforced their denial with so much violence of outcry, that their sect is already very numerous, and the publick voice suspends its decision.

In moral and political questions the contest between interest and justice has been often tedious and often fierce, but perhaps it never happened before, that justice found much opposition with interest on her side.

For the satisfaction of this enquiry, it is necessary to consider how a Colony is constituted, what are the terms of migration as dictated by nature, or settled by compact, and what social or political rights the man loses, or acquires, that leaves his country to establish himself in a distant plantation.

Of two modes of migration the history of mankind informs us, and so far as I can yet discover, of two only.

In countries where life was yet unadjusted, and policy unformed, it sometimes happened that by the dissensions of heads of families, by the ambition of daring adventurers, by some accidental pressure of distress, or by the mere discontent of idleness, one part of the community broke off from the rest, and numbers, greater or smaller, forsook their habitations, put themselves under the command of some favourite of fortune, and with or without the consent of their countrymen or governors, went out to see what better regions they could occupy, and in what place, by conquest or by treaty, they could gain a habitation.

Sons of enterprise like these, who committed to their own swords their hopes and their lives, when they left their country, became another nation, with designs, and prospects, and interests, of their own. They looked back no more to their former home; they expected no help from those whom they had left behind; if they conquered, they conquered for

themselves; if they were destroyed, they were not by any other power either lamented or revenged.

Of this kind seem to have been all the migrations of the early world, whether historical or fabulous, and of this kind were the eruptions of those nations which from the North invaded the Roman empire, and filled Europe with new sovereignties.

But when by the gradual admission of wiser laws and gentler manners, society became more compacted and better regulated, it was found that the power of every people consisted in union, produced by one common interest, and operating in joint efforts and consistent counsels.

From this time independence perceptibly wasted away. No part of the nation was permitted to act for itself. All now had the same enemies and the same friends; the government protected individuals, and individuals were required to refer their designs to the prosperity of the government.

By this principle it is, that states are formed and consolidated. Every man is taught to consider his own happiness as combined with the publick prosperity, and to think himself great and powerful, in proportion to the greatness and power of his governours.

Had the Western continent been discovered between the fourth and tenth century, when all the northern world was in motion; and had navigation been at that time sufficiently advanced to make so long a passage easily practicable, there is little reason for doubting but the intumescence of nations would have found its vent, like all other expansive violence, where there was least resistance; and that Huns and

Vandals, instead of fighting their way to the south of Europe, would have gone by thousands and by myriads under their several chiefs to take possession of regions smiling with pleasure and waving with fertility, from which the naked inhabitants were unable to repel them.

Every expedition would in those days of laxity have produced a distinct and independent state. The Scandinavian heroes might have divided the country among them, and have spread the feudal subdivision of regality from Hudson's Bay to the Pacifick Ocean.

But Columbus came five or six hundred years too late for the candidates of sovereignty. When he formed his project of discovery, the fluctuations of military turbulence had subsided, and Europe began to regain a settled form, by established government and regular subordination. No man could any longer erect himself into a chieftain, and lead out his fellow subjects by his own authority to plunder or to war. He that committed any act of hostility by land or sea, without the commission of some acknowledged sovereign, was considered by all mankind as a robber or pirate, names which were now of little credit, and of which therefore no man was ambitious.

Columbus in a remoter time would have found his way to some discontented Lord, or some younger brother of a petty sovereign, who would have taken fire at his proposal, and have quickly kindled with equal heat a troop of followers: they would have built ships, or have seized them, and have wandered with him at all adventures as far as they could keep

hope in their company. But the age being now past of vagrant excursion and fortuitous hostility, he was under the necessity of travelling from court to court, scorned and repulsed as a wild projector, an idle promiser of kingdoms in the clouds: nor has any part of the world yet had reason to rejoice that he found at last reception and employment.

In the same year, in a year hitherto disastrous to mankind, by the Portuguese was discovered the passage of the Indies, and by the Spaniards the coast of America. The nations of Europe were fired with boundless expectations, and the discoverers pursuing their enterprise, made conquests in both hemispheres of wide extent. But the adventurers were not contented with plunder: though they took gold and silver to themselves, they seized islands and kingdoms in the name of their sovereigns. When a new region was gained, a governour was appointed by that power which had given the commission to the conqueror; nor have I met with any European but Stukeley of London that formed a design of exalting himself in the newly found countries to independent dominion.

To secure a conquest, it was always necessary to plant a colony, and territories thus occupied and settled were rightly considered as mere extensions, or processes of empire; as ramifications which, by the circulation of one publick interest, communicated with the original source of dominion, and which were kept flourishing and spreading by the radical vigour of the Mother-country.

The Colonies of England differ no otherwise from those of other nations, than as the English constitu-

tion differs from theirs. All government is ultimately and essentially absolute, but subordinate societies may have more immunities, or individuals greater liberty, as the operations of government are differently conducted. An Englishman in the common course of life and action feels no restraint. An English Colony has very liberal powers of regulating its own manners and adjusting its own affairs. But an English individual may by the supreme authority be deprived of liberty, and a Colony divested of its powers, for reasons of which that authority is the only judge.

In sovereignty there are no gradations. There may be limited royalty, there may be limited consulship; but there can be no limited government. There must in every society be some power or other from which there is no appeal, which admits no restrictions, which pervades the whole mass of the community, regulates and adjusts all subordination, enacts laws or repeals them, erects or annuls judicatures, extends or contracts privileges, exempt itself from question or control, and bounded only by physical necessity.

By this power, wherever it subsists, all legislation and jurisdiction is animated and maintained. From this all legal rights are emanations, which, whether equitably or not, may be legally recalled. It is not infallible, for it may do wrong; but it is irresistible, for it can be resisted only by rebellion, by an act which makes it questionable what shall be thenceforward the supreme power.

An English Colony is a number of persons, to whom the King grants a charter, permitting them to

settle in some distant country, and enabling them to constitute a corporation, enjoying such powers as the charter grants, to be administered in such forms as the charter prescribes. As a corporation they make laws for themselves, but as a corporation subsisting by a grant from higher authority, to the control of that authority they continue subject.

As men are placed at a greater distance from the supreme council of the kingdom, they must be intrusted with ampler liberty of regulating their conduct by their own wisdom. As they are more secluded from easy recourse to national judicature, they must be more extensively commissioned to pass judgment on each other.

For this reason our more important and opulent Colonies see the appearance and feel the effect of a regular legislature, which in some places has acted so long with unquestioned authority, that it has forgotten whence that authority was originally derived.

To their charters the colonies owe, like other corporations, their political existence. The solemnities of legislation, the administration of justice, the security of property, are all bestowed upon them by the royal grant. Without their charter there would be no power among them, by which any law could be made, or duties enjoined, any debt recovered, or criminal punished.

A charter is a grant of certain powers or privileges given to a part of the community for the advantage of the whole, and is therefore liable by its nature to change or to revocation. Every act of government aims at publick good. A charter, which experience has shown to be detrimental to the nation,

is to be repealed; because general prosperity must always be preferred to particular interest. If a charter be used to evil purposes, it is forfeited, as the weapon is taken away which is injuriously employed.

The charter therefore by which provincial governments are constituted, may be always legally, and where it is either inconvenient in its nature or misapplied in its use, may be equitably repealed; by such repeal the whole fabrick of subordination is immediately destroyed, and the constitution sunk at once into a chaos: the society is dissolved into a tumult of individuals, without authority to command, or obligation to obey; without any punishment of wrongs but by personal resentment, or any protection of right but by the hand of the possessor.

A Colony is to the Mother-country as a member to the body, deriving its action and its strength from the general principle of vitality; receiving from the body, and communicating to it, all the benefits and evils of health and disease; liable in dangerous maladies to sharp applications, of which the body however must partake the pain; and exposed, if incurably tainted, to amputation, by which the body likewise will be mutilated.

The Mother-country always considers the Colonies thus connected, as parts of itself; the prosperity or unhappiness of either is the prosperity or unhappiness of both; not perhaps of both in the same degree, for the body may subsist, though less commodiously, without a limb, but the limb must perish if it be parted from the body.

Our Colonies therefore, however distant, have been hitherto treated as constituent parts of the

British empire. The inhabitants incorporated by English charters, are entitled to all the rights of Englishmen. They are governed by English laws, entitled to English dignities, regulated by English counsels, and protected by English arms; and it seems to follow by consequence not easily avoided, that they are subject to English government, and chargeable by English taxation.

NOT TRUE MASS.

To him that considers the nature, the original, the progress, and the constitution of the Colonies, who remembers that the first discoverers had commissions from the crown, that the first settlers owe to a charter their civil forms and regular magistracy, and that all personal immunities and legal securities, by which the condition of the subject has been from time to time improved, have been extended to the Colonists, it will not be doubted but the parliament of England has a right to bind them by statutes, and *to bind them in all cases whatsoever*, and has therefore a natural and constitutional power of laying upon them any tax or impost, whether external or internal, upon the product of land, or the manufactures of industry, in the exigencies of war, or in the time of profound peace, for the defence of America, *for the purpose of raising a revenue*, or for any other end beneficial to the empire.

There are some, and those not inconsiderable for number, nor contemptible for knowledge, who except the power of taxation from the general dominion of parliament, and hold, that whatever degrees of obedience may be exacted, or whatever authority may be exercised in other acts of government, there is still reverence to be paid to money, and that

legislation passes its limits when it violates the purse.

Of this exception, which, by a head not fully impregnated with politicks, is not easily comprehended, it is alleged as an unanswerable reason, that the Colonies send no representatives to the House of Commons.

It is, say the American advocates, the natural distinction of a freeman, and the legal privilege of an Englishman, that he is able to call his possessions his own, that he can sit secure in the enjoyment of inheritance or acquisition, that his house is fortified by the law, and that nothing can be taken from him but by his own consent. This consent is given for every man by his representative in parliament. The Americans unrepresented cannot consent to English taxations, as a corporation, and they will not consent as individuals.

Of this argument, it has been observed by more than one, that its force extends equally to all other laws, for a freeman is not to be exposed to punishment, or be called to any onerous service, but by his own consent. The Congress has extracted a position from the fanciful Montesquieu, that, "in a free state every man being a free agent ought to be concerned in his own government." Whatever is true of taxation, is true of every other law, that he who is bound by it, without his consent, is not free, for he is not concerned in his own government.

He that denies the English parliament the right of taxation, denies it likewise the right of making any other laws civil or criminal, yet this power over the Colonies was never yet disputed by themselves.

They have always admitted statutes for the punishment of offences, and for the redress or prevention of inconveniencies; and the reception of any law draws after it, by a chain which cannot be broken, the unwelcome necessity of submitting to taxation.

That a freeman is governed by himself, or by laws to which he has consented, is a position of mighty sound: but every man that utters it, with whatever confidence, and every man that hears it, with whatever acquiescence, if consent be supposed to imply the power of refusal, feels it to be false. We virtually and implicitly allow the institutions of any government of which we enjoy the benefit, and solicit the protection. In wide-extended dominions, though power has been diffused with the most even hand, yet a very small part of the people are either primarily or secondarily consulted in legislation. The business of the publick must be done by delegation. The choice of delegates is made by a select number, and those who are not electors stand idle and helpless spectators of the commonweal, *wholly unconcerned in the government of themselves.*

Of the electors the hap is but little better. They are often far from unanimity in their choice, and where the numbers approach to equality, almost half must be governed not only without, but against their choice.

How any man can have consented to institutions established in distant ages, it will be difficult to explain. In the most favourite residence of liberty, the consent of individuals is merely passive, a tacit admission, in every community, of the terms which that community grants and requires. As all are

born the subjects of some state or other, we may be said to have been all born consenting to some system of government. Other consent than this, the condition of civil life does not allow. It is the unmeaning clamour of the pedants of policy, the delirious dream of republican fanaticism.

But hear, ye sons and daughters of liberty, the sounds which the winds are wafting from the Western Continent. The Americans are telling one another, what, if we may judge from their noisy triumph, they have but lately discovered, and what yet is a very important truth: "That they are entitled to life, liberty, and property, and that they have never ceded to any sovereign power whatever a right to dispose of either without their consent."

While this resolution stands alone, the Americans are free from singularity of opinion; their wit has not yet betrayed them to heresy. While they speak as the naked sons of nature, they claim but what is claimed by other men, and have withheld nothing but what all withhold. They are here upon firm ground, behind entrenchments which never can be forced.

Humanity is very uniform. The Americans have this resemblance to Europeans, that they do not always know when they are well. They soon quit the fortress that could neither have been mined by sophistry, nor battered by declamation. Their next resolution declares, that "Their ancestors, who first settled the Colonies, were, at the time of their emigration from the mother-country, entitled to all the rights, liberties, and immunities of free and natural-born subjects within the realm of England."

This likewise is true; but when this is granted, their boast of original rights is at an end; they are no longer in a state of nature. These Lords of themselves, these kings of *me*, these demigods of independence, sink down to Colonists, governed by a charter. If their ancestors were subjects, they acknowledged a sovereign: if they had a right to English privileges, they were accountable to English laws, and what must grieve the lover of liberty to discover, had ceded to the king and parliament, whether the right or not, at least the power of disposing *without their consent, of their lives, liberties, and properties.* It therefore is required of them to prove, that the parliament ever ceded to them a dispensation from that obedience, which they owe as natural-born subjects, or any degree of independence or immunity not enjoyed by other Englishmen.

They say, That by such emigration they by no means forfeited, surrendered, or lost any of those rights; but that *they were, and their descendants now are, entitled to the exercise and enjoyment of all such of them as their local and other circumstances enable them to exercise and enjoy.*

That they who form a settlement by a lawful charter, having committed no crime, forfeit no privileges, will be readily confessed: but what they do not forfeit by any judicial sentence, they may lose by natural effects. As man can be but in one place at once, he cannot have the advantages of multiplied residence. He that will enjoy the brightness of sunshine, must quit the coolness of the shade. He who goes voluntarily to America, cannot complain of losing what he leaves in Europe. He perhaps

had a right to vote for a knight or burgess; by crossing the Atlantick he has not nullified his right; but he has made its exertion no longer possible.* By his own choice he has left a country where he had a vote and little property, for another where he has great property, but no vote. But as this preference was deliberate and unconstrained, he is still *concerned in the government of himself;* he has reduced himself from a voter to one of the innumerable multitude that have no vote. He has truly *ceded his right,* but he still is governed by his own consent; because he has consented to throw his atom of interest into the general mass of the community. Of the consequences of his own act he has no cause to complain; he has chosen, or intended to choose, the greater good; he is represented, as himself desired, in the general representation.

But the privileges of an American scorn the limits of place; they are part of himself, and cannot be lost by departure from his country; they float in the air or glide under the ocean.

Doris amara suam non intermisceat undam.

A planter, wherever he settles, is not only a freeman, but a legislator, *ubi imperator, ibi Roma.* "As the English Colonists are not represented in the British parliament, they are entitled to a free and exclusive power of legislation in their several legislatures, in all cases of taxation and internal polity, subject only to the negative of the sovereign, in

* Of this reasoning, I owe part to a conversation with Sir John Hawkins.

such manner as has been heretofore used and accustomed. We cheerfully consent to the operation of such acts of the British parliament as are *bona fide* restrained to the regulation of our external commerce—excluding every idea of taxation, internal or external, for raising a revenue on the subjects of America without their consent."

Their reason for this claim is, "That the foundation of English liberty, and of all government, is a right in the people to participate in their legislative council."

"They inherit," they say, "from their ancestors, the right which their ancestors possessed, of enjoying all the privileges of Englishmen." That they inherit the right of their ancestors is allowed; but they can inherit no more. Their ancestors left a country where the representatives of the people were elected by men particularly qualified, and where those who wanted qualifications, or who did not use them, were bound by the decisions of men, whom they had not deputed.

The Colonists are the descendants of men, who either had no vote in elections, or who voluntarily resigned them for something, in their opinion, of more estimation; they have therefore exactly what their ancestors left them, not a vote in making laws, or in constituting legislators, but the happiness of being protected by law, and the duty of obeying it.

What their ancestors did not carry with them, neither they nor their descendants have since acquired. They have not, by abandoning their part in one legislature, obtained the power of constituting another,

exclusive and independent, any more than the multitudes, who are now debarred from voting, have a right to erect a separate parliament for themselves.

Men are wrong for want of sense, but they are wrong by halves for want of spirit. Since the Americans have discovered that they can make a parliament, whence comes it that they do not think themselves equally empowered to make a king? If they are subjects, whose government is constituted by a charter, they can form no body of independent legislature. If their rights are inherent and underived, they may by their own suffrages encircle with a diadem the brows of Mr. Cushing.

It is farther declared by the Congress of Philadelphia, "That his Majesty's Colonies are entitled to all the privileges and immunities granted and confirmed to them by royal charters, or secured to them by their several codes of provincial laws."

The first clause of this resolution is easily understood, and will be readily admitted. To all the privileges which a charter can convey, they are by a royal charter evidently entitled. The second clause is of greater difficulty; for how can a provincial law secure privileges or immunities to a province? Provincial laws may grant to certain individuals of the province the enjoyment of gainful, or an immunity from onerous offices; they may operate upon the people to whom they relate; but no province can confer provincial privileges on itself. They may have a right to all which the king has given them; but it is a conceit of the other hemisphere, that men have a right to all which they have given to themselves.

A corporation is considered in law as an individual, and can no more extend its own immunities, than a man can by his own choice assume dignities or titles.

The legislature of a Colony (let not the comparison be too much disdained) is only the vestry of a larger parish, which may lay a cess on the inhabitants, and enforce the payment; but can extend no influence beyond its own district, must modify its particular regulations by the general law, and whatever may be its internal expences, is still liable to taxes laid by superiour authority.

The charters given to different provinces are different, and no general right can be extracted from them. The charter of Pennsylvania, where this Congress of anarchy has been impudently held, contains a clause admitting in express terms taxation by the parliament. If in the other charters no such reserve is made, it must have been omitted as not necessary, because it is implied in the nature of subordinate government. They who are subject to laws, are liable to taxes. If any such immunity had been granted, it is still revocable by the legislature, and ought to be revoked, as contrary to the publick good, which is in every charter ultimately intended.

Suppose it true, that any such exemption is contained in the charter of Maryland, it can be pleaded only by the Marylanders. It is of no use for any other province; and, with regard even to them, must have been considered as one of the grants in which the king has been deceived, and annulled as mischievous to the publick, by sacrificing to one little settlement the general interest of the empire; as in-

fringing the system of dominion, and violating the compact of government. But Dr. Tucker has shown, that even this charter promises no exemption from parliamentary taxes.

In the controversy agitated about the beginning of this century, whether the English laws could bind Ireland, Davenant, who defended against Molyneux the claims of England, considered it as necessary to prove nothing more, than that the present Irish must be deemed a Colony.

The necessary connexion of representatives with taxes, seems to have sunk deep into many of those minds, that admit sounds without their meaning.

Our nation is represented in parliament by an assembly as numerous as can well consist with order and despatch, chosen by persons so differently qualified in different places, that the mode of choice seems to be, for the most part, formed by chance, and settled by custom. Of individuals, far the greater part have no vote, and of the voters, few have any personal knowledge of him to whom they intrust their liberty and fortune.

Yet this representation has the whole effect expected or desired; that of spreading so wide the care of general interest, and the participation of publick counsels, that the advantage or corruption of particular men can seldom operate with much injury to the publick.

For this reason many populous and opulent towns neither enjoy nor desire particular representatives; they are included in the general scheme of publick administration, and cannot suffer but with the rest of the empire.

It is urged that the Americans have not the same security, and that a British legislator may wanton with their property; yet if it be true, that their wealth is our wealth, and that their ruin will be our ruin, the parliament has the same interest in attending to them, as to any other part of the nation. The reason why we place any confidence in our representatives is, that they must share in the good or evil which their counsels shall produce. Their share is, indeed, commonly consequential and remote; but it is not often possible that any immediate advantage can be extended to such numbers as may prevail against it. We are therefore as secure against intentional depravations of government as human wisdom can make us, and upon this security the Americans may venture to repose.

It is said by the Old Member who has written an Appeal against the tax, that "as the produce of American labour is spent in British manufactures, the balance of trade is greatly against them; whatever you take directly in taxes, is in effect taken from your own commerce. If the minister seizes the money with which the American should pay his debts and come to market, the merchant cannot expect him as a customer, nor can the debts already contracted be paid.—Suppose we obtain from America a million, instead of one hundred thousand pounds, it would be supplying one personal exigence by the future ruin of our commerce."

Part of this is true; but the Old Member seems not to perceive, that if his brethren of the legislature know this as well as himself, the Americans are in no danger of oppression, since by men commonly pro-

vident they must be so taxed, as that we may not lose one way what we gain another.

The same Old Member has discovered that the judges formerly thought it illegal to tax Ireland, and declares that no cases can be more alike than those of Ireland and America: yet the judges whom he quotes have mentioned a difference. Ireland, they say, *hath a parliament of its own.* When any Colony has an independent parliament acknowledged by the parliament of Britain, the cases will differ less. Yet by the 6 Geo. I. chap. 5. the acts of the British parliament bind Ireland.

It is urged that when Wales, Durham, and Chester, were divested of their particular privileges or ancient government, and reduced to the state of English counties, they had representatives assigned them.

To those from whom something had been taken, something in return might properly be given. To the Americans their charters are left as they were, nor have they lost any thing except that of which their sedition has deprived them. If they were to be represented in parliament, something would be granted, though nothing is withdrawn.

The inhabitants of Chester, Durham, and Wales, were invited to exchange their peculiar institutions for the power of voting, which they wanted before. The Americans have voluntarily resigned the power of voting, to live in distant and separate governments, and what they have voluntarily quitted, they have no right to claim.

It must always be remembered, that they are represented by the same virtual representation as the

greater part of Englishmen; and that if by change of place they have less share in the legislature than is proportionate to their opulence, they by their removal gained that opulence, and had originally, and have now, their choice of a vote at home, or riches at a distance.

We are told, what appears to the Old Member and to others a position that must drive us into inextricable absurdity, that we have either no right, or the sole right of taxing the Colonies. The meaning is, that if we can tax them, they cannot tax themselves; and that if they can tax themselves, we cannot tax them. We answer, with very little hesitation, that for the general use of the empire we have the sole right of taxing them. If they have contributed any thing in their own assemblies, what they contributed was not paid but given; it was not a tax or tribute, but a present. Yet they have the natural and legal power of levying money on themselves for provincial purposes, of providing for their own expence, at their own discretion. Let not this be thought new or strange; it is the state of every parish in the kingdom.

The friends of the Americans are of different opinions. Some think that being unrepresented they ought to tax themselves, and others that they ought to have representatives in the British parliament.

If they are to tax themselves, what power is to remain in the supreme legislature? That they must settle their own mode of levying their money is supposed. May the British parliament tell them how much they shall contribute? If the sum may be prescribed, they will return few thanks for the power of

raising it; if they are at liberty to grant or to deny, they are no longer subjects.

If they are to be represented, what number of these western orators are to be admitted? This, I suppose, the parliament must settle; yet if men have a natural and unalienable right to be represented, who shall determine the number of their delegates? Let us however suppose them to send twenty-three, half as many as the kingdom of Scotland, what will this representation avail them? To pay taxes will be still a grievance. The love of money will not be lessened, nor the power of getting it increased.

Whither will this necessity of representation drive us? Is every petty settlement to be out of the reach of government, till it has sent a senator to parliament; or may two of them or a greater number be forced to unite in a single deputation? What at last is the difference between him that is taxed by compulsion without representation, and him that is represented by compulsion in order to be taxed?

For many reigns the House of Commons was in a state of fluctuation: new burgesses were added from time to time, without any reason now to be discovered; but the number has been fixed for more than a century and a half, and the king's power of increasing it has been questioned. It will hardly be thought fit to new-model the constitution in favour of the planters, who, as they grow rich, may buy estates in England, and, without any innovation, effectually represent their native colonies.

The friends of the Americans, indeed, ask for them what they do not ask for themselves. This inestima-

ble right of representation they have never solicited. They mean not to exchange solid money for such airy honour. They say, and say willingly, that they cannot conveniently be represented; because their inference is, that they cannot be taxed. They are too remote to share the general government, and therefore claim the privilege of governing themselves.

Of the principles contained in the resolutions of the Congress, however wild, indefinite, and obscure, such has been the influence upon American understanding, that from New England to South Carolina there is formed a general combination of all the provinces against their Mother-country. The madness of independence has spread from Colony to Colony, till order is lost and government despised, and all is filled with misrule, uproar, violence, and confusion. To be quiet is disaffection, to be loyal is treason.

The Congress of Philadelphia, an assembly convened by its own authority, has promulgated a declaration, in compliance with which the communication between Britain and the greatest part of North America is now suspended. They ceased to admit the importation of English goods in December 1774, and determine to permit the exportation of their own no longer than to November 1775.

This might seem enough, but they have done more. They have declared, that they shall treat all as enemies who do not concur with them in disaffection and perverseness, and that they will trade with none that shall trade with Britain.

They threaten to stigmatize in their Gazette those who shall consume the products or merchandise of

their Mother-country, and are now searching suspected houses for prohibited goods.

These hostile declarations they profess themselves ready to maintain by force. They have armed the militia of their provinces, and seized the publick stores of ammunition. They are therefore no longer subjects, since they refuse the laws of their Sovereign, and in defence of that refusal are making open preparations for war.

Being now in their own opinion free states, they are not only raising armies, but forming alliances, not only hastening to rebel themselves, but seducing their neighbours to rebellion. They have published an address to the inhabitants of Quebec, in which discontent and resistance are openly incited, and with very respectful mention of *the sagacity of Frenchmen*, invite them to send deputies to the Congress of Philadelphia, to that seat of Virtue and Veracity, whence the people of England are told, that to establish popery, *a religion fraught with sanguinary and impious tenets*, even in Quebec, a country of which the inhabitants are papists, is so contrary to the constitution, that it cannot be lawfully done by the legislature itself; where it is made one of the articles of their association, to deprive the conquered French of their religious establishment; and whence the French of Quebec are, at the same time, flattered into sedition, by professions of expecting "from the liberality of sentiment distinguishing *their* nation, that difference of religion will not prejudice them against a hearty amity, *because* the transcendant nature of freedom elevates all, who unite in the cause, above such low-minded infirmities."

Quebec, however, is at a great distance. They have aimed a stroke from which they may hope for greater and more speedy mischief. They have tried to infect the people of England with the contagion of disloyalty. Their credit is happily not such as gives them influence proportionate to their malice. When they talk of their pretended immunities *guaranteed by the plighted faith of Government, and the most solemn compacts with English Sovereigns*, we think ourselves at liberty to enquire when the faith was plighted, and the compact made; and when we can only find that king James and king Charles the First promised the settlers in Massachusett's Bay, now famous by the appellation of Bostonians, exemption from taxes for seven years, we infer with Mr. Mauduit, that by this *solemn compact* they were after the expiration of the stipulated term, liable to taxation.

When they apply to our compassion, by telling us, that they are to be carried from their own country to be tried for certain offences, we are not so ready to pity them, as to advise them not to offend. While they are innocent they are safe. NON SEQUITUR; INNOCENT P ARE THE

When they tell of laws made expressly for their punishment, we answer, that tumults and sedition were always punishable, and that the new law prescribes only the mode of execution.

When it is said that the whole town of Boston is distressed for a misdemeanour of a few, we wonder at their shamelessness; for we know that the town of Boston, and all the associated provinces, are now in rebellion to defend or justify the criminals.

If frauds in the imposts of Boston are tried by

commission without a jury, they are tried here in the same mode; and why should the Bostonians expect from us more tenderness for them than for ourselves?

If they are condemned unheard, it is because there is no need of a trial. The crime is manifest and notorious. All trial is the investigation of something doubtful. An Italian philosopher observes, that no man desires to hear what he has already seen.

If their assemblies have been suddenly dissolved, what was the reason? Their deliberations were indecent, and their intentions seditious. The power of dissolution is granted and reserved for such times of turbulence. Their best friends have been lately soliciting the King to dissolve his Parliament, to do what they so loudly complain of suffering.

That the same vengeance involves the innocent and guilty is an evil to be lamented, but human caution cannot prevent it, nor human power always redress it. To bring misery on those who have not deserved it, is part of the aggregated guilt of rebellion.

That governours have been sometimes given them only that a great man might get ease from importunity, and that they have had judges not always of the deepest learning or the purest integrity, we have no great reason to doubt, because such misfortunes happen to ourselves. Whoever is governed will sometimes be governed ill, even when he is most *concerned in his own government*.

That improper officers or magistrates are sent, is the crime or folly of those that sent them. When incapacity is discovered, it ought to be removed; if

corruption is detected, it ought to be punished. No government could subsist for a day, if single errours could justify defection.

One of their complaints is not such as can claim much commiseration from the softest bosom. They tell us, that we have changed our conduct, and that a tax is now laid by Parliament on those who were never taxed by Parliament before. To this we think it may be easily answered, that the longer they have been spared, the better they can pay.

It is certainly not much their interest to represent innovation as criminal or invidious; for they have introduced into the history of mankind a new mode of disaffection, and have given, I believe, the first example of a proscription published by a colony against the mother-country.

To what is urged of new powers granted to the Courts of Admiralty, or the extension of authority conferred on the judges, it may be answered in a few words, that they have themselves made such regulations necessary; that they are established for the prevention of greater evils; at the same time it must be observed, that these powers have not been extended since the rebellion in America.

One mode of persuasion their ingenuity has suggested, which it may perhaps be less easy to resist. That we may not look with indifference on the American contest, or imagine that the struggle is for a claim, which, however decided, is of small importance and remote consequence, the Philadelphian Congress has taken care to inform us, that they are resisting the demands of Parliament, as well for our sakes as their own.

Their keenness of perspicacity has enabled them to pursue consequences to a greater distance; to see through clouds impervious to the dimness of European sight; and to find, I know not how, that when they are taxed, we shall be enslaved.

That slavery is a miserable state we have been often told, and doubtless many a Briton will tremble to find it so near as in America; but how it will be brought hither, the Congress must inform us. The question might distress a common understanding; but the statesmen of the other hemisphere can easily resolve it. "Our ministers," they say, "are our enemies, and if they should carry the point of taxation, may with the same army enslave us. It may be said we will not pay them; but remember," say the western sages, "the taxes from America, and we may add the men, and particularly the Roman Catholicks of this vast continent, will then be in the power of your enemies. Nor have you any reason to expect, that after making slaves of us, many of us will refuse to assist in reducing you to the same abject state."

These are dreadful menaces; but suspecting that they have not much the sound of probability, the Congress proceeds: "Do not treat this as chimerical. Know that in less than half a century the quit-rents reserved to the crown from the numberless grants of this vast continent, will pour large streams of wealth into the royal coffers. If to this be added the power of taxing America at pleasure, the crown will possess more treasure than may be necessary to purchase the remains of liberty in your island."

All this is very dreadful; but amidst the terrour

that shakes my frame, I cannot forbear to wish that some sluice were opened for these streams of treasure. I shall gladly see America return half of what England has expended in her defence; and of the stream that will *flow so largely in less than half a century*, I hope a small rill at least may be found to quench the thirst of the present generation, which seems to think itself in more danger of wanting money than of losing liberty.

It is difficult to judge with what intention such airy bursts of malevolence are vented; if such writers hope to deceive, let us rather repel them with scorn, than refute them by disputation.

In this last terrifick paragraph are two positions, that, if our fears do not overpower our reflection, may enable us to support life a little longer. We are told by these croakers of calamity, not only that our present ministers design to enslave us, but that the same malignity of purpose is to descend through all their successours, and that the wealth to be poured into England by the Pactolus of America will, whenever it comes, be employed to purchase *the remains of liberty*.

Of those who now conduct the national affairs, we may, without much arrogance, presume to know more than themselves, and of those who shall succeed them, whether minister or king, not to know less.

The other position is, that "the Crown," if this laudable opposition should not be successful, "will have the power of taxing America at pleasure." Surely they think rather too meanly of our apprehensions, when they suppose us not to know what they well know themselves, that they are taxed, like all

other British subjects, by Parliament; and that the Crown has not by the new imposts, whether right or wrong, obtained any additional power over their possessions.

It were a curious, but an idle speculation to enquire, what effect these dictators of sedition expect from the dispersion of their Letter among us. If they believe their own complaints of hardship, and really dread the danger which they describe, they will naturally hope to communicate the same perceptions to their fellow-subjects. But probably in America, as in other places, the chiefs are incendiaries, that hope to rob in the tumults of a conflagration, and toss brands among a rabble passively combustible. Those who wrote the Address, though they have shown no great extent or profundity of mind, are yet probably wiser than to believe it: but they have been taught by some master of mischief, how to put in motion the engine of political electricity; to attract by the sounds of Liberty and Property, to repel by those of Popery and Slavery; and to give the great stroke by the name of Boston.

When subordinate communities oppose the decrees of the general legislature with defiance thus audacious, and malignity thus acrimonious, nothing remains but to conquer or to yield; to allow their claim of independence, or to reduce them by force to submission and allegiance.

It might be hoped that no Englishman could be found, whom the menaces of our own Colonists, just rescued from the French, would not move to indignation, like that of the Scythians, who, returning

from war, found themselves excluded from their own houses by their slaves.

That corporations constituted by favour, and existing by sufferance, should dare to prohibit commerce with their native country, and threaten individuals by infamy, and societies with at least suspension of amity, for daring to be more obedient to government than themselves, is a degree of insolence which not only deserves to be punished, but of which the punishment is loudly demanded by the order of life, and the peace of nations.

Yet there have risen up, in the face of the publick, men who, by whatever corruptions or whatever infatuation, have undertaken to defend the Americans, endeavour to shelter them from resentment, and propose reconciliation without submission.

As political diseases are naturally contagious, let it be supposed for a moment that Cornwall, seized with the Philadelphian frenzy, may resolve to separate itself from the general system of the English constitution, and judge of its own rights in its own Parliament. A Congress might then meet at Truro, and address the other counties in a style not unlike the language of the American patriots:

"Friends and Fellow-subjects,

"We the delegates of the several towns and parishes of Cornwall, assembled to deliberate upon our own state and that of our constituents, having, after serious debate and calm consideration, settled the scheme of our future conduct, hold it necessary to declare the resolutions which we think ourselves entitled to form by the unalienable rights of reasonable Beings, and into which we have been compelled by

grievances and oppressions, long endured by us in patient silence, not because we did not feel, or could not remove them, but because we were unwilling to give disturbance to a settled government, and hoped that others would in time find, like ourselves, their true interest and their original powers, and all co-operate to universal happiness.

"But since having long indulged the pleasing expectation, we find general discontent not likely to increase, or not likely to end in general defection, we resolve to erect alone the standard of liberty.

"*Know then*, that you are no longer to consider Cornwall as an English county, visited by English judges, receiving law from an English parliament, or included in any general taxation of the kingdom; but as a state distinct and independent, governed by its own institutions, administered by its own magistrates, and exempt from any tax or tribute but such as we shall impose upon ourselves.

"We are the acknowledged descendants of the earliest inhabitants of Britain, of men, who before the time of history, took possession of the island desolate and waste, and therefore open to the first occupants. Of this descent, our language is a sufficient proof, which, not quite a century ago, was different from yours.

"Such are the Cornishmen; but who are you? who, but the unauthorised and lawless children of intruders, invaders, and oppressors? who, but the transmitters of wrong, the inheritors of robbery? In claiming independence we claim but little. We might require you to depart from a land which you

possess by usurpation, and to restore all that you have taken from us.

"Independence is the gift of Nature. No man is born the master of another. Every Cornishman is a freeman, for we have never resigned the rights of humanity; and he only can be thought free, who is not governed but by his own consent.

"You may urge that the present system of government has descended through many ages, and that we have a larger part in the representation of the kingdom than any other county.

"All this is true, but it is neither cogent nor persuasive. We look to the original of things. Our union with the English counties was either compelled by force, or settled by compact.

"That which was made by violence, may by violence be broken. If we were treated as a conquered people, our rights might be obscured, but could never be extinguished. The sword can give nothing but power, which a sharper sword can take away.

"If our union was by compact, whom could the compact bind but those that concurred in the stipulations? We gave our ancestors no commission to settle the terms of future existence. They might be cowards that were frighted, or blockheads that were cheated; but whatever they were, they could contract only for themselves. What they could establish, we can annul.

"Against our present form of government it shall stand in the place of all argument, that we do not like it. While we are governed as we do not like, where is our liberty? We do not like taxes, we will

therefore not be taxed: we do not like your laws, and will not obey them.

"The taxes laid by our representatives, are laid, you tell us, by our own consent; but we will no longer consent to be represented. Our number of legislators was originally a burden, and ought to have been refused; it is now considered as a disproportionate advantage; who, then, will complain if we resign it?

"We shall form a Senate of our own, under a President whom the King shall nominate, but whose authority we will limit, by adjusting his salary to his merit. We will not withhold a proper share of contribution to the necessary expence of lawful government, but we will decide for ourselves what share is proper, what expence is necessary, and what government is lawful.

"Till our counsel is proclaimed independent and unaccountable, we will, after the tenth day of September, keep our Tin in our own hands: you can be supplied from no other place, and must therefore comply, or be poisoned with the copper of your own kitchens.

"If any Cornishman shall refuse his name to this just and laudable association, he shall be tumbled from St. Michael's Mount, or buried alive in a tin-mine; and if any emissary shall be found seducing Cornishmen to their former state, he shall be smeared with tar, and rolled in feathers, and chased with dogs out of our dominions.

"From the Cornish Congress at Truro."

Of this memorial what could be said but that it was written in jest, or written by a madman? Yet I know not whether the warmest admirers of Pennsylvanian eloquence can find any argument in the

Addresses of the Congress, that is not with greater strength urged by the Cornishman.

The argument of the irregular troops of controversy, stripped of its colours, and turned out naked to the view, is no more than this. Liberty is the birthright of man, and where obedience is compelled, there is no liberty. The answer is equally simple. Government is necessary to man, and where obedience is not compelled, there is no government.

If the subject refuses to obey, it is the duty of authority to use compulsion. Society cannot subsist but by the power, first of making laws, and then of enforcing them.

To one of the threats hissed out by the Congress, I have put nothing similar into the Cornish proclamation; because it is too wild for folly and too foolish for madness. If we do not withhold our King and his parliament from taxing them, they will cross the Atlantick and enslave us.

How they will come they have not told us; perhaps they will take wing, and light upon our coasts. When the cranes thus begin to flutter, it is time for pygmies to keep their eyes about them. The Great Orator observes, that they will be very fit, after they have been taxed, to impose chains upon us. If they are so fit as their friend describes them, and so willing as they describe themselves, let us increase our army, and double our militia.

It has been of late a very general practice to talk of slavery among those who are setting at defiance every power that keeps the world in order. If the learned Author of the "Reflections on Learning" has rightly observed, that no man ever could give law to

language, it will be vain to prohibit the use of the word *slavery:* but I could wish it more discreetly uttered; it is driven at one time too hard into our ears by the loud hurricane of Pennsylvanian eloquence, and at another glides too cold into our hearts by the soft conveyance of a female patriot bewailing the miseries of her *friends and fellow-citizens.*

Such has been the progress of sedition, that those who a few years ago disputed only our right of laying taxes, now question the validity of every act of legislation. They consider themselves as emancipated from obedience, and as being no longer the subjects of the British Crown. They leave us no choice but of yielding or conquering, of resigning our dominion, or maintaining it by force.

From force many endeavours have been used either to dissuade, or to deter us. Sometimes the merit of the Americans is exalted, and sometimes their sufferings are aggravated. We are told of their contributions to the last war, a war incited by their outcries, and continued for their protection, a war by which none but themselves were gainers. All that they can boast is, that they did something for themselves, and did not wholly stand inactive while the sons of Britain were fighting in their cause.

If we cannot admire, we are called to pity them; to pity those that show no regard to their mother-country; have obeyed no law which they could violate; have imparted no good which they could withhold; have entered into associations of fraud to rob their creditors; and into combinations to distress all who depended on their commerce. We are reproached with the cruelty of shutting one port, where

every port is shut against us. We are censured as tyrannical for hindering those from fishing, who have condemned our merchants to bankruptcy, and our manufacturers to hunger.

Others persuade us to give them more liberty, to take off restraints, and relax authority; and tell us what happy consequences will arise from forbearance: how their affections will be conciliated, and into what diffusions of beneficence their gratitude will luxuriate. They will love their friends. They will reverence their protectors. They will throw themselves into our arms, and lay their property at our feet. They will buy from no other what we can sell them; they will sell to no other what we wish to buy.

That any obligations should overpower their attention to profit, we have known them long enough not to expect. It is not to be expected from a more liberal people. With what kindness they repay benefits, they are now showing us, who, as soon as we have delivered them from France, are defying and proscribing us.

But if we will permit them to tax themselves, they will give us more than we require. If we proclaim them independent, they will during pleasure pay us a subsidy. The contest is not now for money, but for power. The question is not how much we shall collect, but by what authority the collection shall be made.

Those who find that the Americans cannot be shown in any form that may raise love or pity, dress them in habiliments of terrour, and try to make us think them formidable. The Bostonians can call into

the field ninety thousand men. While we conquer all before us, new enemies will rise up behind, and our work will be always to begin. If we take possession of the towns, the Colonists will retire into the inland regions, and the gain of victory will be only empty houses, and a wide extent of waste and desolation. If we subdue them for the present, they will universally revolt in the next war, and resign us without pity to subjection and destruction.

To all this it may be answered, that between losing America and resigning it, there is no great difference; that it is not very reasonable to jump into the sea, because the ship is leaky. All those evils may befall us, but we need not hasten them.

The Dean of Gloucester has proposed, and seems to propose it seriously, that we should at once release our claims, declare them masters of themselves, and whistle them down the wind. His opinion is, that our gain from them will be the same, and our expence less. What they can have most cheaply from Britain, they will still buy; what they can sell to us at the highest price, they will still sell.

It is, however, a little hard, that having so lately fought and conquered for their safety, we should govern them no longer. By letting them loose before the war, how many millions might have been saved. One wild proposal is best answered by another. Let us restore to the French what we have taken from them. We shall see our Colonists at our feet, when they have an enemy so near them. Let us give the Indians arms, and teach them discipline, and encourage them now and then to plunder a plantation. Security and leisure are the parents of sedition.

While these different opinions are agitated, it seems to be determined by the Legislature, that force shall be tried. Men of the pen have seldom any great skill in conquering kingdoms, but they have strong inclination to give advice. I cannot forbear to wish, that this commotion may end without bloodshed, and that the rebels may be subdued by terrour rather than by violence; and therefore recommend such a force as may take away, not only the power, but the hope of resistance, and by conquering without a battle, save many from the sword.

If their obstinacy continues without actual hostilities, it may perhaps be mollified by turning out the soldiers to free quarters, forbidding any personal cruelty or hurt. It has been proposed, that the slaves should be set free, an act which surely the lovers of liberty cannot but commend. If they are furnished with fire-arms for defence, and utensils for husbandry, and settled in some simple form of government within the country, they may be more grateful and honest than their masters.

Far be it from any Englishman to thirst for the blood of his fellow-subjects. Those who most deserve our resentment are unhappily at less distance. The Americans, when the Stamp Act was first proposed, undoubtedly disliked it, as every nation dislikes an impost; but they had no thought of resisting it, till they were encouraged and incited by European intelligence, from men whom they thought their friends, but who were friends only to themselves.

On the original contrivers of mischief let an insulted nation pour out its vengeance. With whatever design they have inflamed this pernicious con-

test, they are themselves equally detestable. If they wish success to the Colonies, they are traitors to this country; if they wish their defeat, they are traitors at once to America and England. To them and them only must be imputed the interruption of commerce, and the miseries of war, the sorrow of those that shall be ruined, and the blood of those that shall fall.

Since the Americans have made it necessary to subdue them, may they be subdued with the least injury possible to their persons and their possessions! When they are reduced to obedience, may that obedience be secured by stricter laws and stronger obligations!

Nothing can be more noxious to society, than that erroneous clemency, which, when a rebellion is suppressed, exacts no forfeiture and establishes no securities, but leaves the rebels in their former state. Who would not try the experiment which promises advantage without expence? If rebels once obtain a victory, their wishes are accomplished; if they are defeated, they suffer little, perhaps less than their conquerors; however often they play the game, the chance is always in their favour. In the mean time, they are growing rich by victualling the troops that we have sent against them, and perhaps gain more by the residence of the army than they lose by the obstruction of their port.

Their charters being now, I suppose, legally forfeited, may be modelled as shall appear most commodious to the mother-country. Thus the privileges which are found by experience liable to misuse, will

be taken away, and those who now bellow as patriots, bluster as soldiers, and domineer as legislators, will sink into sober merchants and silent planters, peaceably diligent, and securely rich.

But there is one writer, and perhaps many who do not write, to whom the contraction of these pernicious privileges appears very dangerous, and who startle at the thoughts of *England free and America in chains.* Children fly from their own shadow, and rhetoricians are frighted by their own voices. *Chains* is undoubtedly a dreadful word; but perhaps the masters of civil wisdom may discover some gradations between chains and anarchy. Chains need not be put upon those who will be restrained without them. This contest may end in the softer phrase of English Superiority and American Obedience.

We are told, that the subjection of Americans may tend to the diminution of our own liberties: an event, which none but very perspicacious politicians are able to foresee. If slavery be thus fatally contagious, how is it that we hear the loudest yelps for liberty among the drivers of negroes?

But let us interrupt a while this dream of conquest, settlement, and supremacy. Let us remember that being to contend, according to one orator, with three millions of Whigs, and according to another, with ninety thousand patriots of Massachuset's Bay, we may possibly be checked in our career of reduction. We may be reduced to peace upon equal terms, or driven from the western continent, and forbidden to violate a second time the happy borders of the land of liberty. The time is now

perhaps at hand, which Sir Thomas Browne predicted between jest and earnest,

> When America should no more send out her treasure,
> But spend it at home in American pleasure.

If we are allowed upon our defeat to stipulate conditions, I hope the treaty of Boston will permit us to import into the confederated Cantons such products as they do not raise, and such manufactures as they do not make, and cannot buy cheaper from other nations, paying like others the appointed customs; that if an English ship salutes a fort with four guns, it shall be answered at least with two; and that if an Englishman be inclined to hold a plantation, he shall only take an oath of allegiance to the reigning powers, and be suffered, while he lives inoffensively, to retain his own opinion of English rights, unmolested in his conscience by an oath of abjuration.

A

JOURNEY

TO THE

WESTERN ISLANDS

OF

SCOTLAND.

529

A

JOURNEY

TO THE

WESTERN ISLANDS

OF

SCOTLAND.

I HAD desired to visit the Hebrides, or Western Islands of Scotland, so long, that I scarcely remember how the wish was originally excited; and was in the Autumn of the year 1773 induced to undertake the journey, by finding in Mr. Boswell a companion, whose acuteness would help my enquiry, and whose gaiety of conversation and civility of manners are sufficient to counteract the inconveniencies of travel, in countries less hospitable than we have passed.

On the eighteenth of August we left Edinburgh, a city too well known to admit description, and directed our course northward, along the eastern coast of Scotland, accompanied the first day by another gentleman, who could stay with us only long enough to show us how much we lost at separation.

As we crossed the Frith of Forth, our curiosity was attracted by Inch Keith, a small island, which

neither of my companions had ever visited, though, lying within their view, it had all their lives solicited their notice. Here, by climbing with some difficulty over shattered crags, we made the first experiment of unfrequented coasts. Inch Keith is nothing more than a rock covered with a thin layer of earth, not wholly bare of grass, and very fertile of thistles. A small herd of cows grazes annually upon it in the summer. It seems never to have afforded to man or beast a permanent habitation.

We found only the ruins of a small fort, not so injured by time but that it might be easily restored to its former state. It seems never to have been intended as a place of strength, nor was built to endure a siege, but merely to afford cover to a few soldiers, who perhaps had the charge of a battery, or were stationed to give signals of approaching danger. There is therefore no provision of water within the walls, though the spring is so near, that it might have been easily enclosed. One of the stones had this inscription: "Maria Reg. 1564." It has probably been neglected from the time that the whole island had the same king.

We left this little island with our thoughts employed a while on the different appearance that it would have made, if it had been placed at the same distance from London, with the same facility of approach; with what emulation of price a few rocky acres would have been purchased, and with what expensive industry they would have been cultivated and adorned.

When we landed, we found our chaise ready, and

passed through Kinghorn, Kirkaldy, and Cowpar, places not unlike the small or straggling market-towns in those parts of England where commerce and manufactures have not yet produced opulence.

Though we were yet in the most populous part of Scotland, and at so small a distance from the capital, we met few passengers.

The roads are neither rough nor dirty; and it affords a southern stranger a new kind of pleasure to travel so commodiously without the interruption of tollgates. Where the bottom is rocky, as it seems commonly to be in Scotland, a smooth way is made indeed with great labour, but it never wants repairs; and in those parts where adventitious materials are necessary, the ground once consolidated is rarely broken: for the inland commerce is not great, nor are heavy commodities often transported otherwise than by water. The carriages in common use are small carts, drawn each by one little horse; and a man seems to derive some degree of dignity and importance from the reputation of possessing a two-horse cart.

ST. ANDREWS.

At an hour somewhat late we came to St. Andrews, a city once archiepiscopal; where that university still subsists in which philosophy was formerly taught by Buchanan, whose name has as fair a claim to immortality as can be conferred by modern latinity, and perhaps a fairer than the instability of vernacular languages admits.

We found, that by the interposition of some invisible friend, lodgings had been provided for us at the

house of one of the professors, whose easy civility quickly made us forget that we were strangers; and in the whole time of our stay we were gratified by every mode of kindness, and entertained with all the elegance of lettered hospitality.

In the morning we arose to perambulate a city, which only history shows to have once flourished, and surveyed the ruins of ancient magnificence, of which even the ruins cannot long be visible, unless some care be taken to preserve them; and where is the pleasure of preserving such mournful memorials? They have been till very lately so much neglected, that every man carried away the stones who fancied that he wanted them.

The cathedral, of which the foundations may be still traced, and a small part of the wall is standing, appears to have been a spacious and majestick building, not unsuitable to the primacy of the kingdom. Of the architecture, the poor remains can hardly exhibit, even to an artist, a sufficient specimen. It was demolished, as is well known, in the tumult and violence of Knox's reformation.

Not far from the cathedral, on the margin of the water, stands a fragment of the castle, in which the archbishop anciently resided. It was never very large, and was built with more attention to security than pleasure. Cardinal Beatoun is said to have had workmen employed in improving its fortifications, at the time when he was murdered by the ruffians of reformation, in the manner of which Knox has given what he himself calls a merry narrative.

The change of religion in Scotland, eager and vehement as it was, raised an epidemical enthusiasm,

compounded of sullen scrupulousness and warlike ferocity, which, in a people whom idleness resigned to their own thoughts, and who, conversing only with each other, suffered no dilution of their zeal from the gradual influx of new opinions, was long transmitted in its full strength from the old to the young, but by trade and intercourse with England, is now visibly abating, and giving way too fast to that laxity of practice, and indifference of opinion, in which men, not sufficiently instructed to find the middle point, too easily shelter themselves from rigour and constraint.

The city of St. Andrews, when it had lost its archiepiscopal preeminence, gradually decayed: one of its streets is now lost; and in those that remain, there is the silence and solitude of inactive indigence and gloomy depopulation.

The university, within a few years, consisted of three colleges, but is now reduced to two; the college of St. Leonard being lately dissolved by the sale of its buildings, and the appropriation of its revenues to the professors of the two others. The chapel of the alienated college is yet standing, a fabrick not inelegant of external structure: but I was always, by some civil excuse, hindered from entering it. A decent attempt, as I was since told, has been made to convert it into a kind of greenhouse, by planting its area with shrubs. This new method of gardening is unsuccessful; the plants do not hitherto prosper. To what use it will next be put, I have no pleasure in conjecturing. It is something, that its present state is at least not ostentatiously displayed. Where there is yet shame, there may in time be virtue.

The dissolution of St. Leonard's College was doubtless necessary; but of that necessity there is reason to complain. It is surely not without just reproach that a nation, of which the commerce is hourly extending, and the wealth increasing, denies any participation of its prosperity to its literary societies; and while its merchants or its nobles are raising palaces, suffers its universities to moulder into dust.

Of the two colleges yet standing, one is by the institution of its founder appropriated to divinity. It is said to be capable of containing fifty students; but more than one must occupy a chamber. The library, which is of late erection, is not very spacious, but elegant and luminous.

The doctor, by whom it was shown, hoped to irritate or subdue my English vanity, by telling me, that we had no such repository of books in England.

St. Andrews seems to be a place eminently adapted to study and education, being situated in a populous, yet a cheap country, and exposing the minds and manners of young men neither to the levity and dissoluteness of a capital city, nor to the gross luxury of a town of commerce, places naturally unpropitious to learning; in one the desire of knowledge easily gives way to the love of pleasure, and in the other, is in danger of yielding to the love of money.

The students however are represented as at this time not exceeding a hundred. Perhaps it may be some obstruction to their increase that there is no episcopal chapel in the place. I saw no reason for imputing their paucity to the present professors; nor can the expence of an academical education be very

reasonably objected. A student of the highest class may keep his annual session, or, as the English call it, his term, which lasts seven months, for about fifteen pounds, and one of lower rank for less than ten; in which board, lodging, and instruction are all included.

The chief magistrate resident in the university, answering to our vice-chancellor, and to the *rector magnificus* on the continent, had commonly the title of Lord Rector; but being addressed only as Mr. Rector in an inauguratory speech by the present chancellor, he has fallen from his former dignity of style. Lordship was very liberally annexed by our ancestors to any station or character of dignity: they said, the Lord General, and Lord Ambassadour; so we still say, my Lord, to the judge upon the circuit, and yet retain in our Liturgy, the Lords of the Council.

In walking among the ruins of religious buildings, we came to two vaults over which had formerly stood the house of the sub-prior. One of the vaults was inhabited by an old woman, who claimed the right of abode there, as the widow of a man whose ancestors had possessed the same gloomy mansion for no less than four generations. The right, however it began, was considered as established by legal prescription, and the old woman lives undisturbed. She thinks however that she has a claim to something more than sufferance; for as her husband's name was Bruce, she is allied to royalty, and told Mr. Boswell, that when there were persons of quality in the place, she was distinguished by some notice; that indeed she is now neglected, but she spins a thread, has the company of a cat, and is troublesome to nobody.

Having now seen whatever this ancient city offered to our curiosity, we left it with good wishes, having reason to be highly pleased with the attention that was paid us. But whoever surveys the world must see many things that give him pain. The kindness of the professors did not contribute to abate the uneasy remembrance of an university declining, a college alienated, and a church profaned and hastening to the ground.

St. Andrews indeed has formerly suffered more atrocious ravages and more extensive destruction; but recent evils affect with greater force. We were reconciled to the sight of archiepiscopal ruins. The distance of a calamity from the present time seems to preclude the mind from contact or sympathy. Events long past are barely known; they are not considered. We read with as little emotion the violence of Knox and his followers, as the irruptions of Alaric and the Goths. Had the university been destroyed two centuries ago, we should not have regretted it; but to see it pining in decay, and struggling for life, fills the mind with mournful images and ineffectual wishes.

ABERBROTHICK.

As we knew sorrow and wishes to be vain, it was now our business to mind our way. The roads of Scotland afford little diversion to the traveller, who seldom sees himself either encountered or overtaken, and who has nothing to contemplate but grounds that have no visible boundaries, or are separated by walls of loose stone. From the bank of the Tweed to St. Andrews I had never seen a single tree, which

I did not believe to have grown up far within the present century. Now and then about a gentleman's house stands a small plantation, which in Scotch is called a *policy*, but of these there are few, and those few all very young. The variety of sun and shade is here utterly unknown. There is no tree for either shelter or timber. The oak and the thorn is equally a stranger, and the whole country is extended in uniform nakedness, except that in the road between Kirkaldy and Cowpar, I passed for a few yards between two hedges. A tree might be a show in Scotland, as a horse in Venice. At St. Andrews Mr. Boswell found only one, and recommended it to my notice; I told him that it was rough and low, or looked as if I thought so. This, said he, is nothing to another a few miles off. I was still less delighted to hear that another tree was not to be seen nearer. Nay, said a gentleman that stood by, I know but of this and that tree in the county.

The Lowlands of Scotland had once undoubtedly an equal portion of woods with other countries. Forests are every where gradually diminished, as architecture and cultivation prevail by the increase of people and the introduction of arts. But I believe few regions have been denuded like this, where many centuries must have passed in waste without the least thought of future supply. Davies observes in his account of Ireland, that no Irishman had ever planted an orchard. For that negligence some excuse might be drawn from an unsettled state of life, and the instability of property; but in Scotland possession has long been secure, and inheritance regular, yet it may be doubted whether before the Union any

man between Edinburgh and England had ever set a tree.

Of this improvidence no other account can be given than that it probably began in times of tumult, and continued because it had begun. Established custom is not easily broken, till some great event shakes the whole system of things, and life seems to recommence upon new principles. That before the Union the Scots had little trade and little money, is no valid apology; for plantation is the least expensive of all methods of improvement. To drop a seed into the ground can cost nothing, and the trouble is not great of protecting the young plant, till it is out of danger; though it must be allowed to have some difficulty in places like these, where they have neither wood for palisades, nor thorns for hedges.

Our way was over the Firth of Tay, where, though the water was not wide, we paid four shillings for ferrying the chaise. In Scotland the necessaries of life are easily procured, but superfluities and elegancies are of the same price at least as in England, and therefore may be considered as much dearer.

We stopped a while at Dundee, where I remember nothing remarkable, and mounting our chaise again, came about the close of the day to Aberbrothick.

The monastery of Aberbrothick is of great renown in the history of Scotland. Its ruins afford ample testimony of its ancient magnificence: its extent might, I suppose, easily be found by following the walls among the grass and weeds, and its height is known by some parts yet standing. The arch of one of the gates is entire, and of another only so far dilapidated as to diversify the appearance. A square

apartment of great loftiness is yet standing; its use I could not conjecture, as its elevation was very disproportionate to its area. Two corner towers particularly attracted our attention. Mr. Boswell, whose inquisitiveness is seconded by great activity, scrambled in at a high window, but found the stairs within broken, and could not reach the top. Of the other tower we were told that the inhabitants sometimes climbed it, but we did not immediately discern the entrance, and as the night was gathering upon us, thought proper to desist. Men skilled in architecture might do what we did not attempt; they might probably form an exact ground-plot of this venerable edifice. They may from some parts yet standing conjecture its general form, and perhaps by comparing it with other buildings of the same kind and the same age, attain an idea very near to truth. I should scarcely have regretted my journey, had it afforded nothing more than the sight of Aberbrothick.

MONTROSE.

Leaving these fragments of magnificence, we travelled on to Montrose, which we surveyed in the morning, and found it well built, airy, and clean. The town-house is a handsome fabrick with a portico. We then went to view the English chapel, and found a small church, clean to a degree unknown in any other part of Scotland, with commodious galleries, and what was yet less expected, with an organ.

At our inn we did not find a reception such as we thought proportionate to the commercial opulence

of the place; but Mr. Boswell desired me to observe that the innkeeper was an Englishman, and I then defended him as well as I could.

When I had proceeded thus far, I had opportunities of observing what I had never heard, that there were many beggars in Scotland. In Edinburgh the proportion is, I think, not less than in London, and in the smaller places it is far greater than in English towns of the same extent. It must, however, be allowed, that they are not importunate, nor clamorous. They solicit silently, or very modestly, and therefore, though their behaviour may strike with more force the heart of a stranger, they are certainly in danger of missing the attention of their countrymen. Novelty has always some power; an unaccustomed mode of begging excites an unaccustomed degree of pity. But the force of novelty is by its own nature soon at an end; the efficacy of outcry and perseverance is permanent and certain.

The road from Montrose exhibited a continuation of the same appearances. The country is still naked, the hedges are of stone, and the fields so generally plowed, that it is hard to imagine where grass is found for the horses that till them. The harvest, which was almost ripe, appeared very plentiful.

Early in the afternoon Mr. Boswell observed, that we were at no great distance from the house of lord Monboddo. The magnetism of his conversation easily drew us out of our way, and the entertainment which we received would have been a sufficient recompense for a much greater deviation.

The roads beyond Edinburgh, as they are less

frequented, must be expected to grow gradually rougher; but they were hitherto by no means incommodious. We travelled on with the gentle pace of a Scotch driver, who, having no rivals in expedition, neither gives himself nor his horses unnecessary trouble. We did not affect the impatience we did not feel, but were satisfied with the company of each other, as well riding in the chaise, as sitting at an inn. The night and the day are equally solitary and equally safe; for where there are so few travellers, why should there be robbers?

ABERDEEN.

We came somewhat late to Aberdeen, and found the inn so full, that we had some difficulty in obtaining admission, till Mr. Boswell made himself known: his name overpowered all objection, and we found a very good house and civil treatment.

I received the next day a very kind letter from Sir Alexander Gordon, whom I had formerly known in London, and, after a cessation of all intercourse for near twenty years, met here professor of physick in the King's College. Such unexpected renewals of acquaintance may be numbered among the most pleasing incidents of life.

The knowledge of one professor soon procured me the notice of the rest, and I did not want any token of regard, being conducted wherever there was any thing which I desired to see, and entertained at once with the novelty of the place, and the kindness of communication.

To write of the cities of our own island with the

solemnity of geographical description, as if we had been cast upon a newly discovered coast, has the appearance of a very frivolous ostentation; yet as Scotland is little known to the greater part of those who may read these observations, it is not superfluous to relate, that under the name of Aberdeen are comprised two towns, standing about a mile distant from each other, but governed, I think, by the same magistrates.

Old Aberdeen is the ancient episcopal city, in which are still to be seen the remains of the cathedral. It has the appearance of a town in decay, having been situated, in times when commerce was yet unstudied, with very little attention to the commodiousness of the harbour.

New Aberdeen has all the bustle of prosperous trade, and all the show of increasing opulence. It is built by the water-side. The houses are large and lofty, and the streets spacious and clean. They build almost wholly with the granite used in the new pavement of the streets of London, which is well known not to want hardness, yet they shape it easily. It is beautiful, and must be very lasting.

What particular parts of commerce are chiefly exercised by the merchants of Aberdeen, I have not enquired. The manufacture which forces itself upon a stranger's eye is that of knit-stockings, on which the women of the lower class are visibly employed.

In each of these towns there is a college, or in stricter language an university; for in both there are professors of the same parts of learning, and the colleges hold their sessions and confer degrees

separately, with total independence of one on the other.

In Old Aberdeen stands the King's College, of which the first president was Hector Boece, or Boethius, who may be justly reverenced as one of the revivers of elegant learning. When he studied at Paris, he was acquainted with Erasmus, who afterwards gave him a publick testimony of his esteem, by inscribing to him a catalogue of his works. The style of Boethius, though, perhaps, not always rigorously pure, is formed with great diligence upon ancient models, and wholly uninfected with monastick barbarity. His history is written with elegance and vigour, but his fabulousness and credulity are justly blamed. His fabulousness, if he was the author of the fictions, is a fault for which no apology can be made; but his credulity may be excused in an age when all men were credulous. Learning was then rising on the world; but ages so long accustomed to darkness, were too much dazzled with its light to see any thing distinctly. The first race of scholars in the fifteenth century, and some time after, were, for the most part, learning to speak, rather than to think, and were therefore more studious of elegance than of truth. The contemporaries of Boethius thought it sufficient to know what the ancients had delivered. The examination of tenets and of facts was reserved for another generation.

Boethius, as president of the university, enjoyed a revenue of forty Scottish marks, about two pounds four shillings and sixpence of sterling money. In the present age of trade and taxes, it is difficult even for the imagination so to raise the value of money,

or so to diminish the demands of life, as to suppose four-and-forty shillings a year an honourable stipend; yet it was probably equal, not only to the needs, but to the rank of Boethius. The wealth of England was undoubtedly to that of Scotland more than five to one, and it is known that Henry the Eighth, among whose faults avarice was never reckoned, granted to Roger Ascham, as a reward of his learning, a pension of ten pounds a year.

The other, called the Marischal College, is in the new town. The hall is large and well lighted. One of its ornaments is the picture of Arthur Johnston, who was principal of the college, and who holds among the Latin poets of Scotland the next place to the elegant Buchanan.

In the library I was shown some curiosities; a Hebrew manuscript of exquisite penmanship, and a Latin translation of Aristotle's Politicks by Leonardus Aretinus, written in the Roman character with nicety and beauty, which, as the art of printing has made them no longer necessary, are not now to be found. This was one of the latest performances of the transcribers, for Aretinus died but about twenty years before typography was invented. This version has been printed, and may be found in libraries, but is little read; for the same books have been since translated both by Victorius and Lambinus, who lived in an age more cultivated, but perhaps owed in part to Aretinus that they were able to excel him. Much is due to those who first broke the way to knowledge, and left only to their successours the task of smoothing it.

In both these colleges the methods of instruction

are nearly the same; the lectures differing only by the accidental difference of diligence, or ability in the professors. The students wear scarlet gowns, and the professors black, which is, I believe, the academical dress in all the Scottish universities, except that of Edinburgh, where the scholars are not distinguished by any particular habit. In the King's College there is kept a publick table, but the scholars of the Marischal College are boarded in the town. The expence of living is here, according to the information that I could obtain, somewhat more than at St. Andrews.

The course of education is extended to four years, at the end of which those who take a degree, who are not many, become masters of arts; and whoever is a master may, if he pleases, immediately commence doctor. The title of doctor, however, was for a considerable time bestowed only on physicians. The advocates are examined and approved by their own body; the ministers were not ambitious of titles, or were afraid of being censured for ambition; and the doctorate in every faculty was commonly given or sold into other countries. The ministers are now reconciled to distinction, and as it must always happen that some will excel others, have thought graduation a proper testimony of uncommon abilities or acquisitions.

The indiscriminate collation of degrees has justly taken away that respect which they originally claimed, as stamps by which the literary value of men so distinguished was authoritatively denoted. That academical honours, or any others, should be conferred with exact proportion to merit, is more than human

judgment or human integrity have given reason to expect. Perhaps degrees in universities cannot be better adjusted by any general rule than by the length of time passed in the publick profession of learning. An English or Irish doctorate cannot be obtained by a very young man, and it is reasonable to suppose, what is likewise by experience commonly found true, that he who is by age qualified to be a doctor, has in so much time gained learning sufficient not to disgrace the title, or wit sufficient not to desire it.

The Scotch universities hold but one term or session in the year. That of St. Andrew's continues eight months, that of Aberdeen only five, from the first of November to the first of April.

In Aberdeen there is an English chapel, in which the congregation was numerous and splendid. The form of publick worship used by the church of England, is in Scotland legally practised in licensed chapels served by clergymen of English or Irish ordination, and by tacit connivance quietly permitted in separate congregations, supplied with ministers by the successours of the bishops who were deprived at the Revolution.

We came to Aberdeen on Saturday, August 21. On Monday we were invited into the town-hall, where I had the freedom of the city given me by the Lord Provost. The honour conferred had all the decorations that politeness could add, and, what I am afraid I should not have had to say of any city south of the Tweed, I found no petty officer bowing for a fee.

The parchment containing the record of admission is, with the seal appending, fastened to a ri-

band, and worn for one day by the new citizen in his hat.

By a lady who saw us at the chapel, the earl of Errol was informed of our arrival, and we had the honour of an invitation to his seat, called Slanes Castle, as I am told, improperly, from the castle of that name, which once stood at a place not far distant.

The road beyond Aberdeen grew more stony, and continued equally naked of all vegetable decoration. We travelled over a tract of ground near the sea, which not long ago suffered a very uncommon and unexpected calamity. The sand of the shore was raised by a tempest in such quantities, and carried to such a distance, that an estate was overwhelmed and lost. Such and so hopeless was the barrenness superinduced, that the owner, when he was required to pay the usual tax, desired rather to resign the ground.

SLANES CASTLE. THE BULLER OF BUCHAN.

We came in the afternoon to Slanes Castle, built upon the margin of the sea, so that the walls of one of the towers seem only a continuation of a perpendicular rock, the foot of which is beaten by the waves. To walk round the house seemed impracticable. From the windows the eye wanders over the sea that separates Scotland from Norway, and when the winds beat with violence, must enjoy all the terrifick grandeur of the tempestuous ocean. I would not for my amusement wish for a storm; but as storms, whether wished or not, will sometimes happen, I may say, without violation of humanity, that

I should willingly look out upon them from Slanes Castle.

When we were about to take our leave, our departure was prohibited by the countess, till we should have seen two places upon the coast, which she rightly considered as worthy of curiosity, Dun Buy, and the Buller of Buchan, to which Mr. Boyd very kindly conducted us.

Dun Buy, which in Erse is said to signify the Yellow Rock, is a double protuberance of stone, open to the main sea on one side, and parted from the land by a very narrow channel on the other. It has its name and its colour from the dung of innumerable sea-fowls, which in the spring choose this place as convenient for incubation, and have their eggs and their young taken in great abundance. One of the birds that frequent this rock has, as we were told, its body not larger than a duck's, and yet lays eggs as large as those of a goose. This bird is by the inhabitants named a *Coot*. That which is called *Coot* in England is here a *Cooter*.

Upon these rocks there was nothing that could long detain attention, and we soon turned our eyes to the Buller, or Bouilloir of Buchan, which no man can see with indifference, who has either sense of danger, or delight in rarity. It is a rock perpendicularly tubulated, united on one side with a high shore, and on the other rising steep to a great height above the main sea. The top is open, from which may be seen a dark gulf of water which flows into the cavity, through a breach made in the lower part of the enclosing rock. It has the appearance of a vast well bordered with a wall. The edge of the

Buller is not wide, and to those that walk round, appears very narrow. He that ventures to look downward, sees that if his foot should slip, he must fall from his dreadful elevation upon stones on one side, or into the water on the other. We however went round, and were glad when the circuit was completed.

When we came down to the sea, we saw some boats, and rowers, and resolved to explore the Buller, at the bottom. We entered the arch, which the water had made, and found ourselves in a place, which, though we could not think ourselves in danger, we could scarcely survey without some recoil of the mind. The basin in which we floated was nearly circular, perhaps thirty yards in diameter. We were enclosed by a natural wall, rising steep on every side to a height which produced the idea of insurmountable confinement. The interception of all lateral light caused a dismal gloom. Round us was a perpendicular rock, above us the distant sky, and below an unknown profundity of water. If I had any malice against a walking spirit, instead of laying him in the Red Sea, I would condemn him to reside in the Buller of Buchan.

But terrour without danger is only one of the sports of fancy, a voluntary agitation of the mind that is permitted no longer than it pleases. We were soon at leisure to examine the place with minute inspection, and found many cavities which, as the watermen told us, went backward to a depth which they had never explored. Their extent we had not time to try; they are said to serve different purposes. Ladies come hither sometimes in the

summer with collations, and smugglers make them storehouses for clandestine merchandise. It is hardly to be doubted but the pirates of ancient times often used them as magazines of arms, or repositories of plunder.

To the little vessels used by the northern rowers, the Buller may have served as a shelter from storms, and perhaps as a retreat from enemies; the entrance might have been stopped, or guarded with little difficulty, and though the vessels that were stationed within would have been battered with stones showered on them from above, yet the crews would have lain safe in the caverns.

Next morning we continued our journey, pleased with our reception at Slanes Castle, of which we had now leisure to recount the grandeur and the elegance; for our way afforded us few topicks of conversation. The ground was neither uncultivated nor unfruitful; but it was still all arable. Of flocks or herds there was no appearance. I had now travelled two hundred miles in Scotland, and seen only one tree not younger than myself.

BAMFF.

We dined this day at the house of Mr. Frazer of Streichton, who showed us in his grounds some stones yet standing of a Druidical circle, and what I began to think more worthy of notice, some forest-trees of full growth.

At night we came to Bamff, where I remember nothing that particularly claimed my attention. The ancient towns of Scotland have generally an appearance unusual to Englishmen. The houses, whether

great or small, are for the most part built of stones. Their ends are now and then next the streets, and the entrance into them is very often by a flight of steps, which reaches up to the second story; the floor which is level with the ground being entered only by stairs descending within the house.

The art of joining squares of glass with lead is little used in Scotland, and in some places is totally forgotten. The frames of their windows are all of wood. They are more frugal of their glass than the English, and will often, in houses not otherwise mean, compose a square of two pieces, not joining like cracked glass, but with one edge laid perhaps half an inch over the other. Their windows do not move upon hinges, but are pushed up and drawn down in grooves, yet they are seldom accommodated with weights and pulleys. He that would have his window open must hold it with his hand, unless, what may be sometimes found among good contrivers, there be a nail which he may stick into a hole, to keep it from falling.

What cannot be done without some uncommon trouble or particular expedient, will not often be done at all. The incommodiousness of the Scotch windows keeps them very closely shut. The necessity of ventilating human habitations has not yet been found by our northern neighbours; and even in houses well built and elegantly furnished, a stranger may be sometimes forgiven, if he allows himself to wish for fresher air.

These diminutive observations seem to take away something from the dignity of writing, and therefore are never communicated but with hesitation, and a

little fear of abasement and contempt. But it must be remembered, that life consists not of a series of illustrious actions, or elegant enjoyments; the greater part of our time passes in compliance with necessities, in the performance of daily duties, in the removal of small inconveniencies, in the procurement of petty pleasures; and we are well or ill at ease, as the main stream of life glides on smoothly, or is ruffled by small obstacles and frequent interruption. The true state of every nation is the state of common life. The manners of a people are not to be found in the schools of learning, or the palaces of greatness, where the national character is obscured or obliterated by travel or instruction, by philosophy or vanity; nor is publick happiness to be estimated by the assemblies of the gay, or the banquets of the rich. The great mass of nations is neither rich nor gay: they whose aggregate constitutes the people, are found in the streets and the villages, in the shops and farms; and from them, collectively considered, must the measure of general prosperity be taken. As they approach to delicacy, a nation is refined; as their conveniencies are multiplied, a nation, at least a commercial nation, must be denominated wealthy.

ELGIN.

Finding nothing to detain us at Bamff, we set out in the morning, and having breakfasted at Cullen, about noon came to Elgin, where, in the inn that we supposed the best, a dinner was set before us, which we could not eat. This was the first time, and, except one, the last, that I found any reason to

complain of a Scottish table; and such disappointments, I suppose, must be expected in every country, where there is no great frequency of travellers.

The ruins of the cathedral of Elgin afforded us another proof of the waste of reformation. There is enough yet remaining to show, that it was once magnificent. Its whole plot is easily traced. On the north side of the choir, the chapter-house, which is roofed with an arch of stone, remains entire; and on the south side, another mass of building, which we could not enter, is preserved by the care of the family of Gordon; but the body of the church is a mass of fragments.

A paper was here put in to our hands, which deduced from sufficient authorities the history of this venerable ruin. The church of Elgin had, in the intestine tumults of the barbarous ages, been laid waste by the irruption of a Highland chief, whom the bishop had offended; but it was gradually restored to the state of which the traces may be now discerned, and was at last not destroyed by the tumultuous violence of Knox, but more shamefully suffered to dilapidate by deliberate robbery and frigid indifference. There is still extant, in the books of the council, an order, of which I cannot remember the date, but which was doubtless issued after the Reformation, directing that the lead, which covers the two cathedrals of Elgin and Aberdeen, shall be taken away, and converted into money for the support of the army. A Scotch army was in those times very cheaply kept; yet the lead of two churches must have borne so small a proportion to any military expence, that it is hard not to believe the

reason alleged to be merely popular, and the money intended for some private purse. The order, however, was obeyed; the two churches were stripped, and the lead was shipped to be sold in Holland. I hope every reader will rejoice that this cargo of sacrilege was lost at sea.

Let us not, however, make too much haste to despise our neighbours. Our own cathedrals are mouldering by unregarded dilapidation. It seems to be part of the despicable philosophy of the time to despise monuments of sacred magnificence, and we are in danger of doing that deliberately, which the Scots did not do but in the unsettled state of an imperfect constitution.

Those who had once uncovered the cathedrals never wished to cover them again; and being thus made useless, they were first neglected, and perhaps, as the stone was wanted, afterwards demolished.

Elgin seems a place of little trade, and thinly inhabited. The episcopal cities of Scotland, I believe, generally fell with their churches, though some of them have since recovered by a situation convenient for commerce. Thus Glasgow, though it has no longer an archbishop, has risen beyond its original state by the opulence of its traders; and Aberdeen, though its ancient stock had decayed, flourishes by a new shoot in another place.

In the chief street of Elgin, the houses jut over the lowest story, like the old buildings of timber in London, but with greater prominence; so that there is sometimes a walk for a considerable length under a cloister, or portico, which is now indeed frequently broken, because the new houses have another form,

but seems to have been uniformly continued in the old city.

FORES. CALDER. FORT GEORGE.

We went forwards the same day to Fores, the town to which Macbeth was travelling when he met the weird sisters in his way. This to an Englishman is classick ground. Our imaginations were heated, and our thoughts recalled to their old amusements.

We had now a prelude to the Highlands. We began to leave fertility and culture behind us, and saw for a great length of road nothing but heath; yet at Fochabars, a seat belonging to the duke of Gordon, there is an orchard, which in Scotland I had never seen before, with some timber-trees, and a plantation of oaks.

At Fores we found good accommodation, but nothing worthy of particular remark, and next morning entered upon the road on which Macbeth heard the fatal prediction; but we travelled on not interrupted by promises of kingdoms, and came to Nairn, a royal burgh, which, if once it flourished, is now in a state of miserable decay; but I know not whether its chief annual magistrate has not still the title of Lord Provost.

At Nairn we may fix the verge of the Highlands; for here I first saw peat fires, and first heard the Erse language. We had no motive to stay longer than to breakfast, and went forward to the house of Mr. Macaulay, the minister who published an account of St. Kilda, and by his direction visited Calder Castle, from which Macbeth drew his second title. It has

been formerly a place of strength. The drawbridge is still to be seen, but the moat is now dry. The tower is very ancient. Its walls are of great thickness, arched on the top with stone, and surrounded with battlements. The rest of the house is later, though far from modern.

We were favoured by a gentleman, who lives in the castle, with a letter to one of the officers at Fort George, which being the most regular fortification in the island, well deserves the notice of a traveller, who has never travelled before. We went thither next day, found a very kind reception, were led round the works by a gentleman, who explained the use of every part, and entertained by Sir Eyre Coote, the Governour, with such elegance of conversation, as left us no attention to the delicacies of his table.

Of Fort George I shall not attempt to give any account. I cannot delineate it scientifically, and a loose and popular description is of use only when the imagination is to be amused. There was every where an appearance of the utmost neatness and regularity. But my suffrage is of little value, because this and Fort Augustus are the only garrisons that I ever saw.

We did not regret the time spent at the fort, though in consequence of our delay we came somewhat late to Inverness, the town which may properly be called the capital of the Highlands. Hither the inhabitants of the inland parts come to be supplied with what they cannot make for themselves: hither the young nymphs of the mountains and valleys are

sent for education, and as far as my observation has reached, are not sent in vain.

INVERNESS.

Inverness was the last place which had a regular communication by high roads with the southern counties. All the ways beyond it have, I believe, been made by the soldiers in this century. At Inverness therefore Cromwell, when he subdued Scotland, stationed a garrison, as at the boundary of the Highlands. The soldiers seem to have incorporated afterwards with the inhabitants, and to have peopled the place with an English race; for the language of this town has been long considered as peculiarly elegant.

Here is a castle, called the castle of Macbeth, the walls of which are yet standing. It was no very capacious edifice, but stands upon a rock so high and steep, that I think it was once not accessible, but by the help of ladders, or a bridge. Over against it, on another hill, was a fort built by Cromwell, now totally demolished; for no faction of Scotland loved the name of Cromwell, or had any desire to continue his memory.

Yet what the Romans did to other nations, was in a great degree done by Cromwell to the Scots; he civilized them by conquest, and introduced by useful violence the arts of peace. I was told at Aberdeen, that the people learned from Cromwell's soldiers to make shoes and to plant kail.

How they lived without kail, it is not easy to guess; they cultivate hardly any other plant for common tables, and when they had not kail they probably had nothing. The numbers that go barefoot are still sufficient to show that shoes may be spared; they are not yet considered as necessaries of life; for tall boys, not otherwise meanly dressed, run without them in the streets; and in the islands the sons of gentlemen pass several of their first years with naked feet.

I know not whether it be not peculiar to the Scots to have attained the liberal, without the manual arts, to have excelled in ornamental knowledge, and to have wanted not only the elegancies, but the conveniencies of common life. Literature, soon after its revival, found its way to Scotland, and from the middle of the sixteenth century, almost to the middle of the seventeenth, the politer studies were very diligently pursued. The Latin poetry of *Deliciæ Poëtarum Scotorum* would have done honour to any nation; at least till the publication of May's Supplement, the English had very little to oppose.

Yet men thus ingenious and inquisitive were content to live in total ignorance of the trades by which human wants are supplied, and to supply them by the grossest means. Till the Union made them acquainted with English manners, the culture of their lands was unskilful, and their domestick life unformed; their tables were coarse as the feasts of Eskimeaux, and their houses filthy as the cottages of Hottentots.

Since they have known that their condition was

capable of improvement, their progress in useful knowledge has been rapid and uniform. What remains to be done they will quickly do, and then wonder, like me, why that which was so necessary and so easy was so long delayed. But they must be for ever content to owe to the English that elegance and culture, which, if they had been vigilant and active, perhaps the English might have owed to them.

Here the appearance of life began to alter. I had seen a few women with plaids at Aberdeen; but at Inverness the Highland manners are common. There is, I think, a kirk in which only the Erse language is used. There is likewise an English chapel, but meanly built, where on Sunday we saw a very decent congregation.

We were now to bid farewell to the luxury of travelling, and to enter a country upon which perhaps no wheel has ever rolled. We could indeed have used our postchaise one day longer, along the military road to Fort Augustus, but we could have hired no horses beyond Inverness, and we were not so sparing of ourselves, as to lead them, merely that we might have one day longer the indulgence of a carriage.

At Inverness therefore we procured three horses for ourselves and a servant, and one more for our baggage, which was no very heavy load. We found in the course of our journey the convenience of having disencumbered ourselves by laying aside whatever we could spare; for it is not to be imagined without experience, how in climbing crags, and treading bogs, and winding through narrow and obstructed

places a hundred and forty fathoms deep, a profundity scarcely credible, and which probably those that relate it have never sounded. Its fish are salmon, trout, and pike.

It was said at Fort Augustus, that Lough Ness is open in the hardest winters, though a lake not far from it is covered with ice. In discussing these exceptions from the course of nature, the first question is, whether the fact be justly stated. That which is strange is delightful, and a pleasing errour is not willingly detected. Accuracy of narration is not very common, and there are so few rigidly philosophical, as not to represent as perpetual, what is only frequent, or as constant, what is really casual. If it be true that Lough Ness never freezes, it is either sheltered by its high banks from the cold blasts, and exposed only to those winds which have more power to agitate than congeal, or it is kept in perpetual motion by the rush of streams from the rocks that enclose it. Its profundity, though it should be such as is represented, can have little part in this exemption; for though deep wells are not frozen, because their water is secluded from the external air, yet, where a wide surface is exposed to the full influence of a freezing atmosphere, I know not why the depth should keep it open. Natural philosophy is now one of the favourite studies of the Scottish nation, and Lough Ness well deserves to be diligently examined.

The road on which we travelled, and which was itself a source of entertainment, is made along the rock, in the direction of the lough, sometimes by breaking off protuberances, and sometimes by cutting the great mass of stone to a considerable depth.

The fragments are piled in a loose wall on either side, with apertures left at very short spaces, to give a passage to the wintry currents. Part of it is bordered with low trees, from which our guides gathered nuts, and would have had the appearance of an English lane, except that an English lane is almost always dirty. It has been made with great labour, but has this advantage, that it cannot, without equal labour, be broken up.

Within our sight there were goats feeding or playing. The mountains have red deer, but they came not within view; and if what is said of their vigilance and subtlety be true, they have some claim to that palm of wisdom, which the eastern philosopher, whom Alexander interrogated, gave to those beasts which live farthest from men.

Near the way, by the water-side, we espied a cottage. This was the first Highland hut that I had seen; and, as our business was with life and manners, we were willing to visit it. To enter a habitation without leave, seems to be not considered here as rudeness or intrusion. The old laws of hospitality still give this license to a stranger.

A hut is constructed with loose stones, ranged for the most part with some tendency to circularity. It must be placed where the wind cannot act upon it with violence, because it has no cement; and where the water will run easily away, because it has no floor but the naked ground. The wall, which is commonly about six feet high, declines from the perpendicular a little inward. Such rafters as can be procured are then raised for a roof, and covered with heath, which makes a strong and warm thatch, kept from

flying off by ropes of twisted heath, of which the ends, reaching from the centre of the thatch to the top of the wall, are held firm by the weight of a large stone. No light is admitted but at the entrance, and through a hole in the thatch, which gives vent to the smoke. This hole is not directly over the fire, lest the rain should extinguish it; and the smoke therefore naturally fills the place before it escapes. Such is the general structure of the houses in which one of the nations of this opulent and powerful island has been hitherto content to live. Huts however are not more uniform than palaces; and this which we were inspecting was very far from one of the meanest, for it was divided into several apartments; and its inhabitants possessed such property as a pastoral poet might exalt into riches.

When we entered, we found an old woman boiling goat's flesh in a kettle. She spoke little English, but we had interpreters at hand, and she was willing enough to display her whole system of economy. She has five children, of which none are yet gone from her. The eldest, a boy of thirteen, and her husband, who is eighty years old, were at work in the wood. Her two next sons were gone to Inverness to buy *meal*, by which oatmeal is always meant. Meal she considered as expensive food, and told us, that in spring, when the goats gave milk, the children could live without it. She is mistress of sixty goats, and I saw many kids in an enclosure at the end of her house. She had also some poultry. By the lake we saw a potatoe-garden, and a small spot of ground on which stood four shucks, containing each twelve sheaves of barley. She has all this from the labour

of their own hands, and for what is necessary to be bought, her kids and her chickens are sent to market.

With the true pastoral hospitality, she asked us to sit down and drink whisky. She is religious, and though the kirk is four miles off, probably eight English miles, she goes thither every Sunday. We gave her a shilling, and she begged snuff; for snuff is the luxury of a Highland cottage.

Soon afterwards we came to the General's Hut, so called because it was the temporary abode of Wade, while he superintended the works upon the road. It is now a house of entertainment for passengers, and we found it not ill stocked with provisions.

FALL OF FIERS.

Towards evening we crossed, by a bridge, the river which makes the celebrated Fall of Fiers. The country at the bridge strikes the imagination with all the gloom and grandeur of Siberian solitude. The way makes a flexure, and the mountains, covered with trees, rise at once on the left hand and in the front. We desired our guides to show us the Fall, and dismounting, clambered over very rugged crags, till I began to wish that our curiosity might have been gratified with less trouble and danger. We came at last to a place where we could overlook the river, and saw a channel torn, as it seems, through black piles of stone, by which the stream is obstructed and broken, till it comes to a very steep descent, of such dreadful depth, that we were naturally inclined to turn aside our eyes.

But we visited the place at an unseasonable time, and found it divested of its dignity and terrour. Nature never gives every thing at once. A long continuance of dry weather, which made the rest of the way easy and delightful, deprived us of the pleasure expected from the Fall of Fiers. The river having now no water but what the springs supply, showed us only a swift current, clear and shallow, fretting over the asperities of the rocky bottom; and we were left to exercise our thoughts, by endeavouring to conceive the effect of a thousand streams poured from the mountains into one channel, struggling for expansion in a narrow passage, exasperated by rocks rising in their way, and at last discharging all their violence of waters by a sudden fall through the horrid chasm.

The way now grew less easy, descending by an uneven declivity, but without either dirt or danger. We did not arrive at Fort Augustus till it was late. Mr. Boswell, who, between his father's merit and his own, is sure of reception wherever he comes, sent a servant before to beg admission and entertainment for that night. Mr. Trapaud, the governour, treated us with that courtesy which is so closely connected with the military character. He came out to meet us beyond the gates, and apologized that, at so late an hour, the rules of a garrison suffered him to give us entrance only at the postern.

FORT AUGUSTUS.

In the morning we viewed the fort, which is much less than that of St. George, and is said to be commanded by the neighbouring hills. It was not

long ago taken by the Highlanders. But its situation seems well chosen for pleasure, if not for strength; it stands at the head of the lake, and, by a sloop of sixty tons, is supplied from Inverness with great convenience.

We were now to cross the Highlands towards the western coast, and to content ourselves with such accommodations, as a way so little frequented could afford. The journey was not formidable, for it was but of two days, very unequally divided, because the only house where we could be entertained was not farther off than a third of the way. We soon came to a high hill, which we mounted by a military road, cut in traverses, so that, as we went upon a higher stage, we saw the baggage following us below in a contrary direction. To make this way, the rock has been hewn to a level, with labour that might have broken the perseverance of a Roman legion.

The country is totally denuded of its wood, but the stumps both of oaks and firs, which are still found, show that it has been once a forest of large timber. I do not remember that we saw any animals, but we were told that, in the mountains, there are stags, roebucks, goats, and rabbits.

We did not perceive that this tract was possessed by human beings, except that once we saw a cornfield, in which a lady was walking with some gentlemen. Their house was certainly at no great distance, but so situated that we could not descry it.

Passing on through the dreariness of solitude, we found a party of soldiers from the fort, working on the road under the superintendence of a sergeant. We told them how kindly we had been treated at

the garrison, and as we were enjoying the benefit of their labours, begged leave to show our gratitude by a small present.

ANOCH.

Early in the afternoon we came to Anoch, a village in Glenmollison of three huts, one of which is distinguished by a chimney. Here we were to dine and lodge, and were conducted through the first room, that had the chimney, into another lighted by a small glass window. The landlord attended us with great civility, and told us what he could give us to eat and drink. I found some books on a shelf, among which were a volume or more of Prideaux's Connextion.

This I mentioned as something unexpected, and perceived that I did not please him. I praised the propriety of his language, and was answered that I need not wonder, for he had learned it by grammar.

By subsequent opportunities of observation I found that my host's diction had nothing peculiar. Those Highlanders that can speak English, commonly speak it well, with few of the words, and little of the tone by which a Scotchman is distinguished. Their language seems to have been learned in the army or the navy, or by some communication with those who could give them good examples of accent and pronunciation. By their Lowland neighbours they would not willingly be taught; for they have long considered them as a mean and degenerate race. These prejudices are wearing fast away; but so much of them still remains, that when I asked a very learned minister in the islands, which they con-

sidered as their most savage clans: "*Those*," said he, "*that live next the Lowlands*."

As we came hither early in the day, we had time sufficient to survey the place. The house was built like other huts, of loose stones; but the part in which we dined and slept was lined with turf and wattled with twigs, which kept the earth from falling. Near it was a garden of turnips, and a field of potatoes. It stands in a glen or valley, pleasantly watered by a winding river. But this country, however it may delight the gazer or amuse the naturalist, is of no great advantage to its owners. Our landlord told us of a gentleman who possesses lands, eighteen Scotch miles in length, and three in breadth; a space containing at least a hundred square English miles. He has raised his rents, to the danger of depopulating his farms, and he fells his timber, and by exerting every art of augmentation, has obtained a yearly revenue of four hundred pounds, which for a hundred square miles is three halfpence an acre.

Some time after dinner we were surprised by the entrance of a young woman, not inelegant either in mien or dress, who asked us whether we would have tea. We found that she was the daughter of our host, and desired her to make it. Her conversation, like her appearance, was gentle and pleasing. We knew that the girls of the Highlands are all gentlewomen, and treated her with great respect, which she received as customary and due, and was neither elated by it, nor confused, but repaid my civilities without embarrassment, and told me how much I honoured her country by coming to survey it.

She had been at Inverness to gain the common

Towards the summit of one, there was a white spot, which I should have called a naked rock, but the guides, who had better eyes, and were acquainted with the phænomena of the country, declared it to be snow. It had already lasted to the end of August, and was likely to maintain its contest with the sun, till it should be reinforced by winter.

The height of mountains, philosophically considered, is properly computed from the surface of the next sea; but as it affects the eye or imagination of the passenger, as it makes either a spectacle or an obstruction, it must be reckoned from the place where the rise begins to make a considerable angle with the plain. In extensive continents the land may, by gradual elevation, attain great height, without any other appearance than that of a plane gently inclined, and if a hill placed upon such raised ground be described, as having its altitude equal to the whole space above the sea, the representation will be fallacious.

These mountains may be properly enough measured from the inland base; for it is not much above the sea. As we advanced at evening towards the western coast, I did not observe the declivity to be greater than is necessary for the discharge of the inland waters.

We passed many rivers and rivulets, which commonly ran with a clear shallow stream over a hard pebbly bottom. These channels, which seem so much wider than the water that they convey would naturally require, are formed by the violence of wintry floods, produced by the accumulation of innumerable streams that fall in rainy weather from the

hills, and bursting away with resistless impetuosity, make themselves a passage proportionate to their mass.

Such capricious and temporary waters cannot be expected to produce many fish. The rapidity of the wintry deluge sweeps them away, and the scantiness of the summer stream would hardly sustain them above the ground. This is the reason why, in fording the northern rivers, no fishes are seen, as in England, wandering in the water.

Of the hills many may be called, with Homer's Ida, abundant in springs, but few can deserve the epithet which he bestows upon Pelion, by waving their leaves. They exhibit very little variety; being almost wholly covered with dark heath, and even that seems to be checked in its growth. What is not heath is nakedness, a little diversified by now and then a stream rushing down the steep. An eye accustomed to flowery pastures and waving harvests is astonished and repelled by this wide extent of hopeless sterility. The appearance is that of matter incapable of form or usefulness, dismissed by Nature from her care, and disinherited of her favours, left in its original elemental state, or quickened only with one sullen power of useless vegetation.

It will very readily occur, that this uniformity of barrenness can afford very little amusement to the traveller; that it is easy to sit at home and conceive rocks, and heath, and waterfalls; and that these journeys are useless labours, which neither impregnate the imagination, nor enlarge the understanding. It is true, that of far the greater part of things, we must content ourselves with such knowledge as description

may exhibit, or analogy supply; but it is true, likewise, that these ideas are always incomplete, and that, at least, till we have compared them with realities, we do not know them to be just. As we see more, we become possessed of more certainties, and consequently gain more principles of reasoning, and found a wider basis of analogy.

Regions mountainous and wild, thinly inhabited, and little cultivated, make a great part of the earth, and he that has never seen them, must live unacquainted with much of the face of nature, and with one of the great scenes of human existence.

As the day advanced towards noon, we entered a narrow valley not very flowery, but sufficiently verdant. Our guides told us, that the horses could not travel all day without rest or meat, and entreated us to stop here, because no grass would be found in any other place. The request was reasonable, and the argument cogent. We therefore willingly dismounted, and diverted ourselves as the place gave us opportunity.

I sat down on a bank, such as a writer of romance might have delighted to feign. I had, indeed, no trees to whisper over my head, but a clear rivulet streamed at my feet. The day was calm, the air was soft, and all was rudeness, silence, and solitude. Before me, and on either side, were high hills, which, by hindering the eye from ranging, forced the mind to find entertainment for itself. Whether I spent the hour well I know not; for here I first conceived the ıght of this narration.

e in this place at ease and by choice, and

had no evils to suffer or to fear; yet the imaginations excited by the view of an unknown and untravelled wilderness are not such as arise in the artificial solitude of parks and gardens, a flattering notion of self-sufficiency, a placid indulgence of voluntary delusions, a secure expansion of the fancy, or a cool concentration of the mental powers. The phantoms which haunt a desert are want, and misery, and danger; the evils of dereliction rush upon the thoughts; man is made unwillingly acquainted with his own weakness, and meditation shows him only how little he can sustain, and how little he can perform. There were no traces of inhabitants, except perhaps a rude pile of clods called a summer hut, in which a herdsman had rested in the favourable seasons. Whoever had been in the place where I then sat, unprovided with provisions, and ignorant of the country, might, at least before the roads were made, have wandered among the rocks, till he had perished with hardship, before he could have found either food or shelter. Yet what are these hillocks to the ridges of Taurus, or these spots of wilderness to the deserts of America?

It was not long before we were invited to mount, and continued our journey along the side of a lough, kept full by many streams, which with more or less rapidity and noise crossed the road from the hills on the other hand. These currents, in their diminished state, after several dry months, afford, to one who has always lived in level countries, an unusual and delightful spectacle; but in the rainy season, such as every winter may be expected to bring, must

Mountainous countries commonly contain the original, at least the oldest race of inhabitants, for they are not easily conquered, because they must be entered by narrow ways, exposed to every power of mischief from those that occupy the heights; and every new ridge is a new fortress, where the defendants have again the same advantages. If the assailants either force the strait, or storm the summit, they gain only so much ground; their enemies are fled to take possession of the next rock, and the pursuers stand at gaze, knowing neither where the ways of escape wind among the steeps, nor where the bog has firmness to sustain them: besides that, mountaineers have an agility in climbing and descending, distinct from strength or courage, and attainable only by use.

If the war be not soon concluded, the invaders are dislodged by hunger; for in those anxious and toilsome marches, provisions cannot easily be carried, and are never to be found. The wealth of mountains is cattle, which, while the men stand in the passes, the women drive away. Such lands at last cannot repay the expence of conquest, and therefore, perhaps, have not been so often invaded by the mere ambition of dominion, as by resentment of robberies and insults, or the desire of enjoying in security the more fruitful provinces.

As mountaineers are long before they are conquered, they are likewise long before they are civilized. Men are softened by intercourse mutually profitable, and instructed by comparing their own notions with those of others. Thus Cæsar found the maritime parts of Britain made less barbarous by

their commerce with the Gauls. Into a barren and rough tract no stranger is brought either by the hope of gain or of pleasure. The inhabitants having neither commodities for sale, nor money for purchase, seldom visit more polished places, or if they do visit them seldom return.

It sometimes happens that by conquest, intermixture, or gradual refinement, the cultivated parts of a country change their language. The mountaineers then become a distinct nation, cut off by dissimilitude of speech from conversation with their neighbours. Thus in Biscay, the original Cantabrian, and in Dalecarlia, the old Swedish still subsists. Thus Wales and the Highlands speak the tongue of the first inhabitants of Britain, while the other parts have received first the Saxon, and in some degree afterwards the French, and then formed a third language between them.

That the primitive manners are continued where the primitive language is spoken, no nation will desire me to suppose, for the manners of mountaineers are commonly savage, but they are rather produced by their situation than derived from their ancestors.

Such seems to be the disposition of man, that whatever makes a distinction produces rivalry. England, before other causes of enmity were found, was disturbed for some centuries by the contests of the northern and southern counties; so that at Oxford, the peace of study could for a long time be preserved only by choosing annually one of the proctors from each side of the Trent. A tract intersected by many ridges of mountains naturally divides its inhabitants into petty nations, which are made by a

Thus, every Highlander can talk of his ancestors, and recount the outrages which they suffered from the wicked inhabitants of the next valley.

Such are the effects of habitation among mountains, and such were the qualities of the Highlanders, while their rocks secluded them from the rest of mankind, and kept them an unaltered and discriminated race. They are now losing their distinction, and hastening to mingle with the general community.

GLENELG.

We left Auknasheals and the Macraes in the afternoon, and in the evening came to Ratiken, a high hill on which a road is cut, but so steep and narrow that it is very difficult. There is now a design of making another way round the bottom. Upon one of the precipices, my horse, weary with the steepness of the rise, staggered a little, and I called in haste to the Highlander to hold him. This was the only moment of my journey, in which I thought myself endangered.

Having surmounted the hill at last, we were told, that at Glenelg, on the seaside, we should come to a house of lime and slate and glass. This image of magnificence raised our expectation. At last we came to our inn, weary and peevish, and began to enquire for meat and beds.

Of the provisions the negative catalogue was very copious. Here was no meat, no milk, no bread, no eggs, no wine. We did not express much satisfaction. Here, however, we were to stay. Whisky we might have, and I believe at last they caught a

fowl and killed it. We had some bread, and with that we prepared ourselves to be contented, when we had a very eminent proof of Highland hospitality. Along some miles of the way, in the evening, a gentleman's servant had kept us company on foot with very little notice on our part. He left us near Glenelg, and we thought on him no more till he came to us again, in about two hours, with a present from his master of rum and sugar. The man had mentioned his company, and the gentleman, whose name, I think, is Gordon, well knowing the penury of the place, had this attention to two men, whose names perhaps he had not heard, by whom his kindness was not likely to be ever repaid, and who could be recommended to him only by their necessities.

We were now to examine our lodging. Out of one of the beds, on which we were to repose, started up, at our entrance, a man black as a Cyclops from the forge. Other circumstances of no elegant recital concurred to disgust us. We had been frighted by a lady at Edinburgh, with discouraging representations of Highland lodgings. Sleep, however, was necessary. Our Highlanders had at last found some hay, with which the inn could not supply them. I directed them to bring a bundle into the room, and slept upon it in my riding coat. Mr. Boswell being more delicate, laid himself sheets with hay over and under him, and lay in linen like a gentleman.

SKY. ARMIDEL.

In the morning, September the twentieth, we found ourselves on the edge of the sea. Having procured a boat, we dismissed our Higlanders, whom I would

brogue-maker was a trade, and that a pair would cost half-a-crown. It will easily occur that these representations may both be true, and that, in some places, men may buy them, and in others make them for themselves; but I had both the accounts in the same house within two days.

Many of my subsequent enquiries upon more interesting topicks ended in the like uncertainty. He that travels in the Highlands may easily saturate his soul with intelligence, if he will acquiesce in the first account. The Highlander gives to every question an answer so prompt and peremptory, that scepticism itself is dared into silence, and the mind sinks before the bold reporter in unresisting credulity; but if a second question be ventured, it breaks the enchantment; for it is immediately discovered, that what was told so confidently was told at hazard, and that such fearlessness of assertion was either the sport of negligence, or the refuge of ignorance.

If individuals are thus at variance with themselves, it can be no wonder that the accounts of different men are contradictory. The traditions of an ignorant and savage people have been for ages negligently heard, and unskilfully related. Distant events must have been mingled together, and the actions of one man given to another. These, however, are deficiencies in story, for which no man is now to be censured. It were enough, if what there is yet opportunity of examining were accurately inspected and justly represented; but such is the laxity of Highland conversation, that the enquirer is kept in continual suspense, and, by a kind of intellectual retrogradation, knows less as he hears more.

In the islands the plaid is rarely worn. The law by which the Highlanders have been obliged to change the form of their dress, has, in all the places that we have visited, been universally obeyed. I have seen only one gentleman completely clothed in the ancient habit, and by him it was worn only occasionally and wantonly. The common people do not think themselves under any legal necessity of having coats; for they say that the law against plaids was made by lord Hardwicke, and was in force only for his life: but the same poverty that made it then difficult for them to change their clothing, hinders them now from changing it again.

The fillibeg, or lower garment, is still very common, and the bonnet almost universal; but their attire is such as produces, in a sufficient degree, the effect intended by the law, of abolishing the dissimilitude of appearance between the Highlanders and the other inhabitants of Britain; and, if dress be supposed to have much influence, facilitates their coalition with their fellows-ubjects.

What we have long used we naturally like; and therefore the Highlanders were unwilling to lay aside their plaid, which yet to an unprejudiced spectator must appear an incommodious and cumbersome dress; for hanging loose upon the body, it must flutter in a quick motion, or require one of the hands to keep it close. The Romans always laid aside the gown when they had any thing to do. It was a dress so unsuitable to war, that the same word which signified a gown signified peace. The chief use of a plaid seems to be this, that they could commodiously

wrap themselves in it when they were obliged to sleep without a better cover.

In our passage from Scotland to Sky, we were wet for the first time with a shower. This was the beginning of the Highland winter, after which we were told that a succession of three dry days was not to be expected for many months. The winter of the Hebrides consists of little more than rain and wind. As they are surrounded by an ocean never frozen, the blasts that come to them over the water are too much softened to have the power of congelation. The salt loughs, or inlets of the sea, which shoot very far into the island, never have any ice upon them, and the pools of fresh water will never bear the walker. The snow that sometimes falls, is soon dissolved by the air, or the rain.

This is not the description of a cruel climate, yet the dark months are here a time of great distress; because the summer can do little more than feed itself, and winter comes with its cold and its scarcity upon families very slenderly provided.

CORIATACHAN IN SKY.

The third or fourth day after our arrival at Armidel, brought us an invitation to the isle of Raasay, which lies east of Sky. It is incredible how soon the account of any event is propagated in these narrow countries by the love of talk, which much leisure produces, and the relief given to the mind in the penury of insular conversation by a new topick. The arrival of strangers at a place so rarely visited, excites

rumour, and quickens curiosity. I know not whether we touched at any corner, where fame had not already prepared us a reception.

To gain a commodious passage to Raasay, it was necessary to pass over a large part of Sky. We were furnished therefore with horses and a guide. In the islands there are no roads, nor any marks by which a stranger may find his way. The horseman has always at his side a native of the place, who, by pursuing game, or tending cattle, or being often employed in messages or conduct, has learned where the ridge of the hill has breadth sufficient to allow a horse and his rider a passage, and where the moss or bog is hard enough to bear them. The bogs are avoided as toilsome at least, if not unsafe, and therefore the journey is made generally from precipice to precipice; from which if the eye ventures to look down, it sees below a gloomy cavity, whence the rush of water is sometimes heard.

But there seems to be in all this more alarm than danger. The Highlander walks carefully before, and the horse, accustomed to the ground, follows him with little deviation. Sometimes the hill is too steep for the horseman to keep his seat, and sometimes the moss is too tremulous to bear the double weight of horse and man. The rider then dismounts, and all shift as they can.

Journeys made in this manner are rather tedious than long. A very few miles require several hours. From Armidel we came at night to Coriatachan, a house very pleasantly situated between two brooks, with one of the highest hills of the island behind it.

recommend to the service of any future travellers, and were ferried over to the isle of Sky. We landed at Armidel, where we were met on the sands by Sir Alexander Macdonald, who was at that time there with his lady, preparing to leave the island and reside at Edinburgh.

Armidel is a neat house, built where the Macdonalds had once a seat, which was burnt in the commotions that followed the Revolution. The walled orchard, which belonged to the former house, still remains. It is well shaded by tall ash-trees, of a species, as Mr. Janes the fossilist informed me, uncommonly valuable. This plantation is very properly mentioned by Dr. Campbell, in his new account of the state of Britain, and deserves attention: because it proves that the present nakedness of the Hebrides is not wholly the fault of nature.

As we sat at Sir Alexander's table, we were entertained, according to the ancient usage of the north, with the melody of the bagpipe. Every thing in those countries has its history. As the bagpiper was playing, an elderly gentleman informed us, that in some remote time, the Macdonalds of Glengary having been injured, or offended by the inhabitants of Culloden, and resolving to have justice or vengeance, came to Culloden on a Sunday, where, finding their enemies at worship, they shut them up in the church, which they set on fire: and this, said he, is the tune which the piper played while they were burning.

Narrations like this, however uncertain, deserve the notice of a traveller, because they are the only

records of a nation that has no historians, and afford the most genuine representation of the life and character of the ancient Highlanders.

Under the denomination of Highlander are comprehended in Scotland all that now speak the Erse language or retain the primitive manners, whether they live among the mountains or in the islands: and in that sense I use the name, when there is not some apparent reason for making a distinction.

In Sky I first observed the use of brogues, a kind of artless shoes, stitched with thongs so loosely, that though they defend the foot from stones, they do not exclude water. Brogues were formerly made of raw hides, with the hair inwards, and such are perhaps still used in rude and remote parts; but they are said not to last above two days. Where life is somewhat improved, they are now made of leather tanned with oak-bark, as in other places, or with the bark of birch, or roots of tormentil, a substance recommended in defect of bark, about forty years ago, to the Irish tanners, by one to whom the parliament of that kingdom voted a reward. The leather of Sky is not completely penetrated by vegetable matter, and therefore cannot be very durable.

My enquiries about brogues gave me an early specimen of Highland information. One day I was told, that to make brogues was a domestick art, which every man practised for himself, and that a pair of brogues was the work of an hour. I supposed that the husband made brogues as the wife made an apron, till next day it was told me, that a

other places commonly afford, except that the geese, by feeding in the sea, have universally a fishy rankness.

These geese seem to be of a middle race, between the wild and domestick kinds. They are so tame as to own a home, and so wild as sometimes to fly quite away.

Their native bread is made of oats, or barley. Of oatmeal they spread very thin cakes, coarse and hard, to which unaccustomed palates are not easily reconciled. The barley cakes are thicker and softer; I began to eat them without unwillingness; the blackness of their colour raises some dislike, but the taste is not disagreeable. In most houses there is wheat-flower, with which we were sure to be treated, if we staid long enough to have it kneaded and baked. As neither yeast nor leaven are used among them, their bread of every kind is unfermented. They make only cakes, and never mould a loaf.

A man of the Hebrides, for of the women's diet I can give no account, as soon as he appears in the morning, swallows a glass of whisky; yet they are not a drunken race, at least I never was present at much intemperance; but no man is so abstemious as to refuse the morning dram, which they call a *skalk*.

The word *whisky* signifies water, and is applied by way of eminence to *strong water*, or distilled liquor. The spirit drunk in the North is drawn from barley. I never tasted it, except once for experiment at the inn in Inverary, when I thought it preferable to any English malt brandy. It was strong, but not pungent, and was free from the empyreumatick taste or

smell. What was the process I had no opportunity of enquiring, nor do I wish to improve the art of making poison pleasant.

Not long after the dram, may be expected the breakfast, a meal in which the Scots, whether of the lowlands or mountains, must be confessed to excel us. The tea and coffee are accompanied not only with butter, but with honey, conserves, and marmalades. If an epicure could remove by a wish, in quest of sensual gratifications, wherever he had supped he would breakfast in Scotland.

In the islands, however, they do what I found it not very easy to endure. They pollute the tea-table by plates piled with large slices of Cheshire cheese, which mingles its less grateful odours with the fragrance of the tea.

Where many questions are to be asked, some will be omitted. I forgot to enquire how they were supplied with so much exotick luxury. Perhaps the French may bring them wine for wool, and the Dutch give them tea and coffee at the fishing season, in exchange for fresh provision. Their trade is unconstrained; they pay no customs, for there is no officer to demand them; whatever, therefore, is made dear only by impost, is obtained here at an easy rate.

A dinner in the Western Islands differs very little from a dinner in England, except that, in the place of tarts, there are always set different preparations of milk. This part of their diet will admit some improvement. Though they have milk, and eggs, and sugar, few of them know how to compound them in a custard. Their gardens afford them no great va-

riety, but they have always some vegetables on the table. Potatoes at least are never wanting, which, though they have not known them long, are now one of the principal parts of their food. They are not of the mealy, but the viscous kind.

Their more elaborate cookery, or made dishes, an Englishman, at the first taste, is not likely to approve, but the culinary compositions of every country are often such as become grateful to other nations only by degrees; though I have read a French author, who, in the elation of his heart, says, that French cookery pleases all foreigners, but foreign cookery never satisfies a Frenchman.

Their suppers are like their dinners, various, and plentiful. The table is always covered with elegant linen. Their plates for common use are often of that kind of manufacture which is called cream-coloured, or queen's ware. They use silver on all occasions where it is common in England, nor did I ever find a spoon of horn but in one house.

The knives are not often either very bright, or very sharp. They are indeed instruments of which the Highlanders have not been long acquainted with the general use. They were not regularly laid on the table, before the prohibition of arms, and the change of dress. Thirty years ago the Highlander wore his knife as a companion to his dirk or dagger, and when the company sat down to meat, the men who had knives cut the flesh into small pieces for the women, who with their fingers conveyed it to their mouths.

There was, perhaps, never any change of national manners so quick, so great, and so general, as that

which has operated in the Highlands by the last conquest, and the subsequent laws. We came thither too late to see what we expected, a people of peculiar appearance, and a system of antiquated life. The clans retain little now of their original character; their ferocity of temper is softened, their military ardour is extinguished, their dignity of independence is depressed, their contempt of government subdued, and their reverence for their chiefs abated. Of what they had before the late conquest of their country, there remain only their language and their poverty. Their language is attacked on every side. Schools are erected, in which English only is taught, and there were lately some who thought it reasonable to refuse them a version of the holy scriptures, that they might have no monument of their mother-tongue.

That their poverty is gradually abated, cannot be mentioned among the unpleasing consequences of subjection. They are now acquainted with money, and the possibility of gain will by degrees make them industrious. Such is the effect of the late regulations, that a longer journey than to the Highlands must be taken by him whose curiosity pants for savage virtues and barbarous grandeur.

RAASAY.

At the first intermission of the stormy weather we were informed, that the boat, which was to convey us to Raasay, attended us on the coast. We had from this time our intelligence facilitated, and our conversation enlarged, by the company of Mr. Macqueen, minister of a parish in Sky, whose knowledge

and politeness give him a title equally to kindness and respect, and who, from this time, never forsook us till we were preparing to leave Sky, and the adjacent places.

The boat was under the direction of Mr. Malcolm Macleod, a gentleman of Raasay. The water was calm, and the rowers were vigorous; so that our passage was quick and pleasant. When we came near the island, we saw the laird's house, a neat modern fabrick, and found Mr. Macleod, the proprietor of the island, with many gentlemen, expecting us on the beach. We had, as at all other places, some difficulty in landing. The crags were irregularly broken, and a false step would have been very mischievous.

It seemed that the rocks might, with no great labour, have been hewn almost into a regular flight of steps; and as there are no other landing places, I considered this rugged ascent as the consequence of a form of life inured to hardships, and therefore not studious of nice accommodations. But I know not whether, for many ages, it was not considered as a part of military policy, to keep the country not easily accessible. The rocks are natural fortifications, and an enemy climbing with difficulty was easily destroyed by those who stood high above him.

Our reception exceeded our expectations. We found nothing but civility, elegance, and plenty. After the usual refreshments, and the usual conversation, the evening came upon us. The carpet was then rolled off the floor; the musician was called, and the whole company was invited to dance, nor did ever fairies trip with greater alacrity. The general air of festivity, which predominated in this place, so

far remote from all those regions which the mind has been used to contemplate as the mansions of pleasure, struck the imagination with a delightful surprise, analogous to that which is felt at an unexpected emersion from darkness into light.

When it was time to sup, the dance ceased, and six and thirty persons sat down to two tables in the same room. After supper the ladies sung Erse songs, to which I listened as an English audience to an Italian opera, delighted with the sound of words which I did not understand.

I enquired the subjects of the songs, and was told of one, that it was a love-song, and of another, that it was a farewell composed by one of the islanders that was going, in this epidemical fury of emigration, to seek his fortune in America. What sentiments would rise, on such an occasion, in the heart of one who had not been taught to lament by precedent, I should gladly have known; but the lady, by whom I sat, thought herself not equal to the work of translating.

Mr. Macleod is the proprietor of the islands of Raasay, Rona, and Fladda, and possesses an extensive district in Sky. The estate has not, during four hundred years, gained or lost a single acre.

One of the old Highland alliances has continued for two hundred years, and is still subsisting between Macleod of Raasay, and Macdonald of Sky, in consequence of which, the survivor always inherits the arms of the deceased; a natural memorial of military friendship. At the death of the late Sir James Macdonald, his sword was delivered to the present laird of Raasay.

The family of Raasay consists of the laird, the lady, three sons, and ten daughters. For the sons there is a tutor in the house, and the lady is said to be very skilful and diligent in the education of her girls. More gentleness of manners, or a more pleasing appearance of domestick society, is not found in the most polished countries.

Raasay is the only inhabited island in Mr. Macleod's possession. Rona and Fladda afford only pasture for cattle, of which one hundred and sixty winter in Rona, under the superintendence of a solitary herdsman.

The length of Raasay is, by computation, fifteen miles, and the breadth two. These countries have never been measured, and the computation by miles is negligent and arbitrary. We observed in travelling, that the nominal and real distance of places had very little relation to each other. Raasay probably contains near a hundred square miles. It affords not much ground, notwithstanding its extent, either for tillage or pasture; for it is rough, rocky, and barren. The cattle often perish by falling from the precipices. It is like the other islands, I think, generally naked of shade, but it is naked by neglect; for the laird has an orchard, and very large forest-trees grow about his house. Like other hilly countries it has many rivulets. One of the brooks turns a corn-mill, and at least one produces trouts.

In the streams or fresh lakes of the islands, I have never heard of any other fish than trouts and eels. The trouts which I have seen are not large; the colour of their flesh is tinged as in England. Of their eels I can give no account, having never tasted

them; for I believe they are not considered as wholesome food.

It is not very easy to fix the principles upon which mankind have agreed to eat some animals, and reject others; and as the principle is not evident, it is not uniform. That which is selected as delicate in one country, is by its neighbours abhorred as loathsome. The Neapolitans lately refused to eat potatoes in a famine. An Englishman is not easily persuaded to dine on snails with an Italian, on frogs with a Frenchman, or on horse-flesh with a Tartar. The vulgar inhabitants of Sky, I know not whether of the other islands, have not only eels, but pork and bacon in abhorrence, and accordingly I never saw a hog in the Hebrides, except one at Dunvegan.

Raasay has wild fowl in abundance, but neither deer, hares, nor rabbits. Why it has them not, might be asked, but that of such questions there is no end. Why does any nation want what it might have? Why are not spices transplanted to America? Why does tea continue to be brought from China? Life improves but by slow degrees, and much in every place is yet to do. Attempts have been made to raise roebucks in Raasay, but without effect. The young ones it is extremely difficult to rear, and the old can very seldom be taken alive.

Hares and rabbits might be more easily obtained. That they have few or none of either in Sky, they impute to the ravage of the foxes, and have therefore set, for some years past, a price upon their heads, which, as the number was diminished, has been gradually raised, from three shillings and sixpence to a

guinea, a sum so great in this part of the world, that in a short time Sky may be as free from foxes, as England from wolves. The fund for these rewards is a tax of sixpence in the pound, imposed by the farmers on themselves, and said to be paid with great willingness.

The beasts of prey in the islands are foxes, otters, and weasels. The foxes are bigger than those of England; but the otters exceed ours in a far greater proportion. I saw one at Armidel, of a size much beyond that which I supposed them ever to attain; and Mr. Maclean, the heir of Col, a man of middle stature, informed me that he once shot an otter of which the tail reached the ground, when he held up the head to a level with his own. I expected the otter to have a foot particularly formed for the art of swimming; but upon examination, I did not find it differing much from that of a spaniel. As he preys in the sea, he does little visible mischief, and is killed only for his fur. White otters are sometimes seen.

In Raasay they might have hares and rabbits, for they have no foxes. Some depredations such as were never made before, have caused a suspicion that a fox has been lately landed in the island by spite or wantonness. This imaginary stranger has never yet been seen, and therefore, perhaps, the mischief was done by some other animal. It is not likely that a creature so ungentle, whose head could have been sold in Sky for a guinea, should be kept alive only to gratify the malice of sending him to prey upon a neighbour: and the passage from Sky is wider than a fox would venture to swim, unless he were chased

by dogs into the sea, and perhaps than his strength would enable him to cross. How beasts of prey came into any islands is not easy to guess. In cold countries they take advantage of hard winters, and travel over the ice; but this is a very scanty solution; for they are found where they have no discoverable means of coming.

The corn of this island is but little. I saw the harvest of a small field. The women reaped the corn, and the men bound up the sheaves. The strokes of the sickle were timed by the modulation of the harvest-song, in which all their voices were united. They accompany in the Highlands every action, which can be done in equal time, with an appropriated strain, which has, they say, not much meaning; but its effects are regularity and cheerfulness. The ancient proceleusmatick song, by which the rowers of galleys were animated, may be supposed to have been of this kind. There is now an oar-song used by the Hebridians.

The ground of Raasay seems fitter for cattle than for corn, and of black cattle I suppose the number is very great. The laird himself keeps a herd of four hundred, one hundred of which are annually sold. Of an extensive domain, which he holds in his own hands, he considers the sale of cattle as repaying him the rent, and supports the plenty of a very liberal table with the remaining product.

Raasay is supposed to have been very long inhabited. On one side of it they show caves into which the rude nations of the first ages retreated from the weather. These dreary vaults might have had other uses. There is still a cavity near the house called the

oar-cave, in which the seamen, after one of those piratical expeditions which in rougher times was very frequent, used, as tradition tells, to hide their oars. This hollow was near the sea, that nothing so necessary might be far to be fetched; and it was secret, that enemies, if they landed, could find nothing. Yet it is not very evident of what use it was to hide their oars from those, who, if they were masters of the coast, could take away their boats.

A proof much stronger of the distance at which the first possessors of this island lived from the present time, is afforded by the stone heads of arrows, which are very frequently picked up. The people call them elf-bolts, and believe that the fairies shoot them at the cattle. They nearly resemble those which Mr. Banks has lately brought from the savage countries in the Pacifick Ocean, and must have been made by a nation to which the use of metals was unknown.

The number of this little community has never been counted by its ruler, nor have I obtained any positive account, consistent with the result of political computation. Not many years ago, the late laird led out one hundred men upon a military expedition. The sixth part of a people is supposed capable of bearing arms: Raasay had therefore six hundred inhabitants. But because it is not likely that every man able to serve in the field would follow the summons, or that the chief would leave his lands totally defenceless, or take away all the hands qualified for labour, let it be supposed, that half as many might be permitted to stay at home. The whole number will then be nine hundred, or nine

to a square mile; a degree of populousness greater than those tracts of desolation can often show. They are content with their country, and faithful to their chiefs, and yet uninfected with the fever of migration.

Near the house at Raasay is a chapel unroofed and ruinous, which has long been used only as a place of burial. About the churches in the islands are small squares enclosed with stone, which belong to particular families, as repositories for the dead. At Raasay there is one, I think, for the proprietor, and one for some collateral house.

It is told by Martin, that at the death of the lady of the island, it has been here the custom to erect a cross. This we found not to be true. The stones that stand about the chapel at a small distance, some of which, perhaps, have crosses cut upon them, are believed to have been not funeral monuments, but the ancient boundaries of the sanctuary or consecrated ground.

Martin was a man not illiterate; he was an inhabitant of Sky, and therefore was within reach of intelligence, and with no great difficulty might have visited the places which he undertakes to describe; yet with all his opportunities, he has often suffered himself to be deceived. He lived in the last century, when the chiefs of the clans had lost little of their original influence. The mountains were yet unpenetrated, no inlet was opened to foreign novelties, and the feudal institutions operated upon life with their full force. He might therefore have displayed a series of subordination and a form of government, which in more luminous and improved

regions, have been long forgotten, and have delighted his readers with many uncouth customs that are now disused, and wild opinions that prevail no longer. But he probably had not knowledge of the world sufficient to qualify him for judging what would deserve or gain the attention of mankind. The mode of life which was familiar to himself, he did not suppose unknown to others, nor imagined that he could give pleasure by telling that, of which it was, in his little country, impossible to be ignorant.

What he has neglected cannot now be performed. In nations, where there is hardly the use of letters, what is once out of sight is lost for ever. They think but little, and of their few thoughts, none are wasted on the past, in which they are neither interested by fear nor hope. Their only registers are stated observances and practical representations. For this reason an age of ignorance is an age of ceremony. Pageants and processions, and commemorations, gradually shrink away, as better methods come into use of recording events, and preserving rights.

It is not only in Raasay that the chapel is unroofed and useless; through the few islands which we visited we neither saw nor heard of any house of prayer, except in Sky, that was not in ruins. The malignant influence of Calvinism has blasted ceremony and decency together; and if the remembrance of papal superstition is obliterated, the monuments of papal piety are likewise effaced.

It has been, for many years, popular to talk of the lazy devotion of the Romish clergy; over the sleepy laziness of men that erected churches, we

may indulge our superiority with a new triumph, by comparing it with the fervid activity of those who suffer them to fall.

Of the destruction of churches, the decay of religion must in time be the consequence; for while the publick acts of the ministry are now performed in houses, a very small number can be present; and as the greater part of the islanders make no use of books, all must necessarily live in total ignorance who want the opportunity of vocal instruction.

From these remains of ancient sanctity, which are every where to be found, it has been conjectured that, for the last two centuries, the inhabitants of the islands have decreased in number. This argument, which supposes that the churches have been suffered to fall, only because they were no longer necessary, would have some force, if the houses of worship still remaining were sufficient for the people. But since they have now no churches at all, these venerable fragments do not prove the people of former times to have been more numerous, but to have been more devout. If the inhabitants were doubled, with their present principles, it appears not that any provision for publick worship would be made. Where the religion of a country enforces consecrated buildings, the number of those buildings may be supposed to afford some indication, however uncertain, of the populousness of the place; but where by a change of manners a nation is contented to live without them, their decay implies no diminution of inhabitants.

Some of these dilapidations are said to be found in islands now uninhabited: but I doubt whether we

can thence infer that they were ever peopled. The religion of the middle age is well known to have placed too much hope in lonely austerities. Voluntary solitude was the great art of propitiation, by which crimes were effaced, and conscience was appeased; it is therefore not unlikely, that oratories were often built in places where retirement was sure to have no disturbance.

Raasay has little that can detain a traveller, except the laird and his family; but their power wants no auxiliaries. Such a seat of hospitality, amidst the winds and waters, fills the imagination with a delightful contrariety of images. Without is the rough ocean and the rocky land, the beating billows and the howling storm: within is plenty and elegance, beauty and gaiety, the song and the dance. In Raasay, if I could have found an Ulysses, I had fancied a Phæacia.

DUNVEGAN.

At Raasay, by good fortune, Macleod, so the chief of the clan is called, was paying a visit, and by him we were invited to his seat at Dunvegan. Raasay has a stout boat, built in Norway, in which, with six oars, he conveyed us back to Sky. We landed at Port Re, so called, because James the Fifth of Scotland, who had curiosity to visit the islands, came into it. The port is made by an inlet of the sea, deep and narrow, where a ship lay waiting to dispeople Sky, by carrying the natives away to America.

In coasting Sky, we passed by the cavern in which

it was the custom, as Martin relates, to catch birds in the night, by making a fire at the entrance. This practice is disused; for the birds, as is known often to happen, have changed their haunts.

Here we dined at a publick house, I believe the only inn of the island, and having mounted our horses, travelled in the manner already described, till we came to Kingsborough, a place distinguished by that name, because the king lodged here when he landed at Port Re. We were entertained with the usual hospitality by Mr. Macdonald, and his lady Flora Macdonald, a name that will be mentioned in history, and, if courage and fidelity be virtues, mentioned with honour. She is a woman of middle stature, soft features, gentle manners, and elegant presence.

In the morning we sent our horses round a promontory to meet us, and spared ourselves part of the day's fatigue, by crossing an arm of the sea. We had at last some difficulty in coming to Dunvegan; for our way led over an extensive moor, where every step was to be taken with caution, and we were often obliged to alight, because the ground could not be trusted. In travelling this watery flat, I perceived that it had a visible declivity, and might without much expence or difficulty be drained. But difficulty and expence are relative terms, which have different meanings in different places.

To Dunvegan we came, very willing to be at rest, and found our fatigue amply recompensed by our reception. Lady Macleod, who had lived many years in England, was newly come hither with her son and four daughters, who knew all the arts of southern

elegance, and all the modes of English economy. Here therefore we settled, and did not spoil the present hour with thoughts of departure.

Dunvegan is a rocky prominence, that juts out into a bay, on the west side of Sky. The house, which is the principal seat of Macleod, is partly old and partly modern; it is built upon the rock, and looks upon the water. It forms two sides of a small square: on the third side is the skeleton of a castle of unknown antiquity, supposed to have been a Norwegian fortress, when the Danes were masters of the islands. It is so nearly entire, that it might have easily been made habitable, were there not an ominous tradition in the family, that the owner shall not long outlive the reparation. The grandfather of the present laird, in defiance of prediction, began the work, but desisted in a little time, and applied his money to worse uses.

As the inhabitants of the Hebrides lived, for many ages, in continual expectation of hostilities, the chief of every clan resided in a fortress. This house was accessible only from the water, till the last possessor opened an entrance by stairs upon the land.

They had formerly reason to be afraid, not only of declared wars and authorized invaders or of roving pirates, which in the northern seas must have been very common; but of inroads and insults from rival clans, who, in the plenitude of feudal independence, asked no leave of their sovereign to make war on one another. Sky has been ravaged by a feud between the two mighty powers of Macdonald and Macleod. Macdonald having married a Macleod, upon some discontent dismissed her, perhaps

because she had brought him no children. Before the reign of James the Fifth, a Highland laird made a trial of his wife for a certain time, and if she did not please him, he was then at liberty to send her away. This however must always have offended, and Macleod resenting the injury, whatever were its circumstances, declared, that the wedding had been solemnized without a bonfire, but that the separation should be better illuminated; and raising a little army, set fire to the territories of Macdonald, who returned the visit, and prevailed.

Another story may show the disorderly state of insular neighbourhood. The inhabitants of the isle of Egg, meeting a boat manned by Macleods, tied the crew hand and foot, and set them adrift. Macleod landed upon Egg, and demanded the offenders; but the inhabitants refusing to surrender them, retreated to a cavern, into which they thought their enemies unlikely to follow them. Macleod choked them with smoke, and left them lying dead by families as they stood.

Here the violence of the weather confined us for some time, not at all to our discontent or inconvenience. We would indeed very willingly have visited the islands, which might be seen from the house scattered in the sea, and I was particularly desirous to have viewed Isay; but the storms did not permit us to launch a boat, and we were condemned to listen in idleness to the wind, except when we were better engaged by listening to the ladies.

We had here more wind than waves, and suffered the severity of a tempest, without enjoying its magnificence. The sea being broken by the multitude

cannot have among them, but upon occasion, he fetches a smith from the isle of Egg, and has a tailor from the main land, six times a-year. This island well deserved to be seen, but the laird's absence left us no opportunity.

Every inhabited island has its appendant and subordinate islets. Muck, however small, has yet others smaller about it, one of which has only ground sufficient to afford pasture for three wethers.

At Dunvegan I had tasted lotus, and was in danger of forgetting that I was ever to depart, till Mr. Boswell sagely reproached me with my sluggishness and softness. I had no very forcible defence to make; and we agreed to pursue our journey. Macleod accompanied us to Ulinish, where we were entertained by the sheriff of the island.

ULINISH.

Mr. Macqueen travelled with us, and directed our attention to all that was worthy of observation. With him we went to see an ancient building, called a dun or borough. It was a circular enclosure, about forty-two feet in diameter, walled round with loose stones, perhaps to the height of nine feet. The walls are very thick, diminishing a little towards the top, and though in these countries stone is not brought far, must have been raised with much labour. Within the great circle were several smaller rounds of wall, which formed distinct apartments. Its date and its use are unknown. Some suppose it the original seat of the chiefs of the Macleods. Mr. Macqueen thought it a Danish fort.

The entrance is covered with flat stones, and is

narrow, because it was necessary that the stones which lie over it, should reach from one wall to the other; yet, strait as the passage is, they seem heavier than could have been placed where they now lie, by the naked strength of as many men as might stand about them. They were probably raised by putting long pieces of wood under them, to which the action of a long line of lifters might be applied. Savages, in all countries, have patience proportionate to their unskilfulness, and are content to attain their end by very tedious methods.

If it was ever roofed, it might once have been a dwelling, but as there is no provision for water, it could not have been a fortress. In Sky, as in every other place, there is an ambition of exalting whatever has survived memory, to some important use, and referring it to very remote ages. I am inclined to suspect that in lawless times, when the inhabitants of every mountain stole the cattle of their neighbour, these enclosures were used to secure the herds and flocks in the night. When they were driven within the wall, they might be easily watched, and defended as long as could be needful; for the robbers durst not wait till the injured clan should find them in the morning.

The interiour enclosures, if the whole building were once a house, were the chambers of the chief inhabitants. If it was a place of security for cattle, they were probably the shelters of the keepers.

From the Dun we were conducted to another place of security, a cave carried a great way under ground, which had been discovered by digging after a fox. These caves, of which many have been found,

and many probably remain concealed, are formed, I believe, commonly by taking advantage of a hollow, where banks or rocks rise on either side. If no such place can be found, the ground must be cut away. The walls are made by piling stones against the earth, on either side. It is then roofed by large stones laid across the cavern, which therefore cannot be wide. Over the roof, turfs were placed, and grass was suffered to grow; and the mouth was concealed by bushes, or some other cover.

These caves were represented to us as the cabins of the first rude inhabitants, of which, however, I am by no means persuaded. This was so low, that no man could stand upright in it. By their construction they are all so narrow, that two can never pass along them together, and being subterraneous, they must be always damp. They are not the work of an age much ruder than the present; for they are formed with as much art as the construction of a common hut requires. I imagine them to have been places only of occasional use, in which the islander, upon a sudden alarm, hid his utensils or his clothes, and perhaps sometimes his wife and children.

This cave we entered, but could not proceed the whole length, and went away without knowing how far it was carried. For this omission we shall be blamed, as we perhaps have blamed other travellers; but the day was rainy, and the ground was damp. We had with us neither spades nor pickaxes, and if love of ease surmounted our desire of knowledge, the offence has not the invidiousness of singularity.

Edifices, either standing or ruined, are the chief

records of an illiterate nation. In some part of this journey, at no great distance from our way, stood a shattered fortress, of which the learned minister, to whose communication we are much indebted, gave us an account

Those, said he, are the walls of a place of refuge, built in the time of James the Sixth, by Hugh Macdonald, who was next heir to the dignity and fortune of his chief. Hugh, being so near his wish, was impatient of delay; and had art and influence sufficient to engage several gentlemen in a plot against the laird's life. Something must be stipulated on both sides; for they would not dip their hands in blood merely for Hugh's advancement. The compact was formally written, signed by the conspirators, and placed in the hands of one Macleod.

It happened that Macleod had sold some cattle to a drover, who not having ready money, gave him a bond for payment. The debt was discharged, and the bond redemanded; which Macleod, who could not read, intending to put into his hands, gave him the conspiracy. The drover, when he had read the paper, delivered it privately to Macdonald, who being thus informed of his danger, called his friends together, and provided for his safety. He made a publick feast, and inviting Hugh Macdonald and his confederates, placed each of them at the table between two men of known fidelity. The compact of conspiracy was then shown, and every man confronted with his own name. Macdonald acted with great moderation. He upbraided Hugh both with disloyalty and ingratitude; but told the rest, that he considered them as men deluded and misinformed.

Hugh was sworn to fidelity, and dismissed with his companions; but he was not generous enough to be reclaimed by lenity; and finding no longer any countenance among the gentlemen, endeavoured to execute the same design by meaner hands. In this practice he was detected, taken to Macdonald's castle, and imprisoned in the dungeon. When he was hungry, they let down a plentiful meal of salted meat; and when, after his repast, he called for drink, conveyed to him a covered cup, which, when he lifted the lid, he found empty. From that time they visited him no more, but left him to perish in solitude and darkness.

We were then told of a cavern by the seaside, remarkable for the powerful reverberation of sounds. After dinner we took a boat, to explore this curious cavity. The boatmen, who seemed to be of a rank above that of common drudges, enquired who the strangers were, and being told we came one from Scotland, and the other from England, asked if the Englishman could recount a long genealogy. What answer was given them, the conversation being in Erse, I was not much inclined to examine.

They expected no good event of the voyage; for one of them declared that he heard the cry of an English ghost. This omen I was not told till after our return, and therefore cannot claim the dignity of despising it.

The sea was smooth. We never left the shore, and came without any disaster to the cavern, which we found rugged and misshapen, about one hundred and eighty feet long, thirty wide in the broadest part, and in the loftiest, as we guessed, about thirty

high. It was now dry, but at high water the sea rises in it near six feet. Here I saw what I had never seen before, limpets and muscles in their natural state. But as a new testimony to the veracity of common fame, here was no echo to be heard.

We then walked through a natural arch in the rock, which might have pleased us by its novelty, had the stones, which encumbered our feet, given us leisure to consider it. We were shown the gummy seed of the kelp, that fastens itself to a stone, from which it grows into a strong stalk.

In our return, we found a little boy upon the point of a rock, catching with his angle a supper for the family. We rowed up to him, and borrowed his rod, with which Mr. Boswell caught a cuddy.

The cuddy is a fish of which I know not the philosophical name. It is not much bigger than a gudgeon, but it is of great use in these islands, as it affords the lower people both food and oil for their lamps. Cuddies are so abundant, at some times of the year, that they are caught like white bait in the Thames, only by dipping a basket and drawing it back.

If it were always practicable to fish, these islands could never be in much danger from famine: but unhappily, in the winter, when other provision fails, the seas are commonly too rough for nets, or boats.

TALISKER IN SKY.

From Ulinish our next stage was to Talisker, the house of colonel Macleod, an officer in the Dutch service, who in this time of universal peace, has for several years been permitted to be absent from his

regiment. Having been bred to physick, he is consequently a scholar, and his lady, by accompanying him in his different places of residence, is become skilful in several languages. Talisker is the place beyond all that I have seen, from which the gay and the jovial seem utterly excluded; and where the hermit might expect to grow old in meditation, without possibility of disturbance or interruption. It is situated very near the sea, but upon a coast where no vessel lands but when it is driven by a tempest on the rocks. Towards the land are lofty hills streaming with waterfalls. The garden is sheltered by firs, or pines, which grow there so prosperously, that some which the present inhabitant planted, are very high and thick.

At this place we very happily met with Mr. Donald Maclean, a young gentleman, the eldest son of the laird of Col, heir to a very great extent of land, and so desirous of improving his inheritance, that he spent a considerable time among the farmers of Hertfordshire and Hampshire, to learn their practice. He worked with his own hands at the principal operations of agriculture, that he might not deceive himself by a false opinion of skill, which if he should find it deficient at home, he had no means of completing. If the world has agreed to praise the travels and manual labours of the czar of Muscovy, let Col have his share of the like applause, in the proportion of his dominions to the empire of Russia.

This young gentleman was sporting in the mountains of Sky, and when he was weary with following his game, repaired for lodging to Talisker. At night

he missed one of his dogs, and when he went to seek him in the morning, found two eagles feeding on his carcass.

Col, for he must be named by his possessions, hearing that our intention was to visit Iona, offered to conduct us to his chief Sir Allan Maclean, who lived in the isle of Inch Kenneth, and would readily find us a convenient passage. From this time was formed an acquaintance, which being begun by kindness, was accidentally continued by constraint; we derived much pleasure from it, and I hope have given him no reason to repent it.

The weather was now almost one continued storm, and we were to snatch some happy intermission to be conveyed to Mull, the third island of the Hebrides lying about a degree south of Sky, whence we might easily find our way to Inch Kenneth, where Sir Allan Maclean resided, and afterward to Iona.

For this purpose, the most commodious station that we could take was Armidel, which Sir Alexander Macdonald had now left to a gentleman who lived there as his factor or steward.

In our way to Armidel was Coriatachan, where we had already been, and to which therefore we were very willing to return. We staid however so long at Talisker, that a great part of our journey was performed in the gloom of the evening. In travelling even thus almost without light through naked solitude, when there is a guide whose conduct may be trusted, a mind not naturally too much disposed to fear, may preserve some degree of cheerfulness; but what must be the solicitude of him who

should be wandering, among the crags and hollows, benighted, ignorant, and alone?

The fictions of the Gothick romances were not so remote from credibility as they are now thought. In the full prevalence of the feudal institution, when violence desolated the world, and every baron lived in a fortress, forests and castles were regularly succeeded by each other, and the adventurer might very suddenly pass from the gloom of woods, or the ruggedness of moors, to seats of plenty, gaiety, and magnificence. Whatever is imaged in the wildest tale, if giants, dragons, and enchantment be excepted, would be felt by him, who, wandering in the mountains without a guide, or upon the sea without a pilot, should be carried amidst his terrour and uncertainty, to the hospitality and elegance of Raasay or Dunvegan.

To Coriatachan at last we came, and found ourselves welcomed as before. Here we staid two days, and made such enquiries as curiosity suggested. The house was filled with company, among whom Mr. Macpherson and his sister distinguished themselves by their politeness and accomplishments. By him we were invited to Ostig, a house not far from Armidel, where we might easily hear of a boat, when the weather would suffer us to leave the island.

OSTIG IN SKY.

At Ostig, of which Mr. Macpherson is minister, we were entertained for some days, then removed to Armidel, where we finished our observations on the island of Sky.

As this island lies in the fifty-seventh degree, the air cannot be supposed to have much warmth. The long continuance of the sun above the horizon, does indeed sometimes produce great heat in northern latitudes; but this can only happen in sheltered places, where the atmosphere is to a certain degree stagnant, and the same mass of air continues to receive for many hours the rays of the sun, and the vapours of the earth. Sky lies open on the west and north to a vast extent of ocean, and is cooled in the summer by a perpetual ventilation, but by the same blast is kept warm in winter. Their weather is not pleasing. Half the year is deluged with rain. From the autumnal to the vernal equinox, a dry day is hardly known, except when the showers are suspended by a tempest. Under such skies can be expected no great exuberance of vegetation. Their winter overtakes their summer, and their harvest lies upon the ground drenched with rain. The autumn struggles hard to produce some of our early fruits. I gathered gooseberries in September; but they were small, and the husk was thick.

The winter is seldom such as puts a full stop to the growth of plants, or reduces the cattle to live wholly on the surplusage of the summer. In the year seventy-one they had a severe season, remembered by the name of the Black Spring, from which the island has not yet recovered. The snow lay long upon the ground, a calamity hardly known before. Part of their cattle died for want, part were unseasonably sold to buy sustenance for the owners; and, what I have not read or heard of before, the kine that survived were so emaciated and dispirited, that they

did not require the male at the usual time. Many of the roebucks perished.

The soil, as in other countries, has its diversities. In some parts there is only a thin layer of earth spread upon a rock, which bears nothing but short brown heath, and perhaps is not generally capable of any better product. There are many bogs or mosses of greater or less extent, where the soil cannot be supposed to want depth, though it is too wet for the plough. But we did not observe in these any aquatick plants. The valleys and the mountains are alike darkened with heath. Some grass, however, grows here and there, and some happier spots of earth are capable of tillage.

Their agriculture is laborious, and perhaps rather feeble than unskilful. Their chief manure is sea-weed, which, when they lay it to rot upon the field, gives them a better crop than those of the Highlands. They heap sea-shells upon the dunghill, which in time moulder into a fertilizing substance. When they find a vein of earth where they cannot use it, they dig it up, and add it to the mould of a more commodious place.

Their corn grounds often lie in such intricacies among the crags, that there is no room for the action of a team and plough. The soil is then turned up by manual labour, with an instrument called a crooked spade, of a form and weight which to me appeared very incommodious, and would perhaps be soon improved in a country where workmen could be easily found and easily paid. It has a narrow blade of iron fixed to a long and heavy piece of wood, which must have, about a foot and a half above the iron, a knee

or flexure with the angle downwards. When the farmer encounters a stone, which is the great impediment of his operations, he drives the blade under it, and bringing the knee or angle to the ground, has in the long handle a very forcible lever.

According to the different mode of tillage, farms are distinguished into *long land* and *short land*. Long land is that which affords room for a plough, and short land is turned up by the spade.

The grain which they commit to the furrows thus tediously formed, is either oats or barley. They do not sow barley without very copious manure, and then they expect from it ten for one, an increase equal to that of better countries; but the culture is so operose that they content themselves commonly with oats; and who can relate without compassion, that after all their diligence they are to expect only a triple increase? It is in vain to hope for plenty, when a third part of the harvest must be reserved for seed.

When their grain is arrived at the state which they must consider as ripeness, they do not cut, but pull the barley: to the oats they apply the sickle. Wheel carriages they have none, but make a frame of timber which is drawn by one horse with the two points behind pressing on the ground. On this they sometimes drag home their sheaves, but often convey them home in a kind of open pannier, or frame of sticks upon the horse's back.

Of that which is obtained with so much difficulty, nothing surely ought to be wasted; yet their method of clearing their oats from the husk is by parching them in the straw. Thus with the genuine improvidence of savages, they destroy that fodder for want

of which their cattle may perish. From this practice they have two petty conveniencies; they dry the grain so that it is easily reduced to meal, and they escape the theft of the thresher. The taste contracted from the fire by the oats, as by every other scorched substance, use must long ago have made grateful. The oats that are not parched must be dried in a kiln.

The barns of Sky I never saw. That which Macleod of Raasay had erected near his house was so contrived, because the harvest is seldom brought home dry, as by perpetual perflation to prevent the mow from heating.

Of their gardens I can judge only from their tables. I did not observe that the common greens were wanting, and suppose, that by choosing an advantageous exposition, they can raise all the more hardy esculent plants. Of vegetable fragrance or beauty they are not yet studious. Few vows are made to Flora in the Hebrides.

They gather a little hay, but the grass is mown late; and is so often almost dry and again very wet, before it is housed, that it becomes a collection of withered stalks without taste or fragrance; it must be eaten by cattle that have nothing else, but by most English farmers would be thrown away.

In the islands I have not heard that any subterraneous treasures have been discovered, though where there are mountains, there are commonly minerals. One of the rocks in Col has a black vein, imagined to consist of the ore of lead; but it was never yet opened or essayed. In Sky a black mass was accidentally picked up, and brought into the house of the

owner of the land, who found himself strongly inclined to think it a coal, but unhappily it did not burn in the chimney. Common ores would be here of no great value; for what requires to be separated by fire, must, if it were found, be carried away in its mineral state, here being no fewel for the smelting-house or forge. Perhaps by diligent search in this world of stone, some valuable species of marble might be discovered. But neither philosophical curiosity, nor commercial industry, have yet fixed their abode here, where the importunity of immediate want, supplied but for the day, and craving on the morrow, has left little room for excursive knowledge, or the pleasing fancies of distant profit.

They have lately found a manufacture considerably lucrative. Their rocks abound with kelp, a sea-plant, of which the ashes are melted into glass. They burn kelp in great quantities, and then send it away in ships, which come regularly to purchase them. This new source of riches has raised the rents of many maritime farms; but the tenants pay, like all other tenants, the additional rent with great unwillingness; because they consider the profits of the kelp as the mere product of personal labour, to which the landlord contributes nothing. However, as any man may be said to give what he gives the power of gaining, he has certainly as much right to profit from the price of kelp as of any thing else found or raised upon his ground.

This new trade has excited a long and eager litigation between Macdonald and Macleod, for a ledge of rocks, which, till the value of kelp was known, neither of them desired the reputation of possessing.

The cattle of Sky are not so small as is commonly believed. Since they have sent their beeves in great numbers to southern marts, they have probably taken more care of their breed. At stated times the annual growth of cattle is driven to a fair, by a general drover, and with the money, which he returns to the farmer, the rents are paid.

The price regularly expected, is from two to three pounds a head: there was once one sold for five pounds. They go from the islands very lean, and are not offered to the butcher till they have been long fatted in English pastures.

Of their black cattle some are without horns, called by the Scots, *humble* cows, as we call a bee an *humble* bee, that wants a sting. Whether this difference be specifick, or accidental, though we enquired with great diligence, we could not be informed. We are not very sure that the bull is ever without horns, though we have been told, that such bulls there are. What is produced by putting a horned and unhorned male and female together, no man has ever tried that thought the result worthy of observation.

Their horses are, like their cows, of a moderate size. I had no difficulty to mount myself commodiously by the favour of the gentlemen. I heard of very little cows in Barra, and very little horses in Rum, where perhaps no care is taken to prevent that diminution of size, which must always happen, where the greater and the less copulate promiscuously, and the young animal is restrained from growth by penury of sustenance.

The goat is the general inhabitant of the earth,

complying with every difference of climate and of soil. The goats of the Hebrides are like others: nor did I hear any thing of their sheep to be particularly remarked.

In the penury of these malignant regions, nothing is left that can be converted to food. The goats and the sheep are milked like the cows. A single meal of a goat is a quart, and of a sheep a pint. Such at least was the account, which I could extract from those of whom I am not sure that they ever had enquired.

The milk of goats is much thinner than that of cows, and that of sheep is much thicker. Sheep's milk is never eaten before it is boiled; as it is thick, it must be very liberal of curd, and the people of St. Kilda form it into small cheeses.

The stags of the mountains are less than those of our parks or forests, perhaps not bigger than our fallow deer. Their flesh has no rankness, nor is inferiour in flavour to our common venison. The roebuck I neither saw nor tasted. These are not countries for a regular chase. The deer are not driven with horns and hounds. A sportsman, with his gun in his hand, watches the animal, and when he has wounded him, traces him by the blood.

They have a race of brinded greyhounds larger and stronger than those with which we course hares, and those are the only dogs used by them for the chase.

Man is by the use of fire-arms made so much an overmatch for other animals, that in all countries, where they are in use, the wild part of the creation sensibly diminishes. There will probably not be long

either stags or roebucks in the islands. All the beasts of chase would have been lost long ago in countries well inhabited, had they not been preserved by laws for the pleasure of the rich.

There are in Sky neither rats nor mice, but the weasel is so frequent, that he is heard in houses rattling behind chests or beds, as rats in England. They probably owe to his predominance that they have no other vermin ; for since the great rat took possession of this part of the world, scarce a ship can touch at any port, but some of his race are left behind. They have within these few years begun to infest the isle of Col, where being left by some trading vessel, they have increased for want of weasels to oppose them.

The inhabitants of Sky, and of the other islands, which I have seen, are commonly of the middle stature, with fewer among them very tall or very short, than are seen in England; or perhaps, as their numbers are small, the chances of any deviation from the common measure are necessarily few. The tallest men that I saw are among those of higher rank. In regions of barrenness and scarcity, the human race is hindered in its growth by the same causes as other animals.

The ladies have as much beauty here as in other places, but bloom and softness are not to be expected among the lower classes, whose faces are exposed to the rudeness of the climate, and whose features are sometimes contracted by want, and sometimes hardened by the blasts. Supreme beauty is seldom found in cottages or workshops, even where no real

hardships are suffered. To expand the human face to its full perfection, it seems necessary that the mind should cooperate by placidness of content, or consciousness of superiority.

Their strength is proportionate to their size, but they are accustomed to run upon rough ground, and therefore can with great agility skip over the bog, or clamber the mountain. For a campaign in the wastes of America, soldiers better qualified could not have been found. Having little work to do, they are not willing, nor perhaps able, to endure a long continuance of manual labour, and are therefore considered as habitually idle.

Having never been supplied with those accommodations, which life extensively diversified with trades affords, they supply their wants by very insufficient shifts, and endure many inconveniencies, which a little attention would easily relieve. I have seen a horse carrying home the harvest on a crate. Under his tail was a stick for a crupper, held at the two ends by twists of straw. Hemp will grow in their islands, and therefore ropes may be had. If they wanted hemp, they might make better cordage of rushes, or perhaps of nettles, than of straw.

Their method of life neither secures them perpetual health, nor exposes them to any particular diseases. There are physicians in the islands, who, I believe, all practise chirurgery, and all compound their own medicines.

It is generally supposed, that life is longer in places where there are few opportunities of luxury; but I found no instance here of extraordinary lon-

gevity. A cottager grows old over his oaten cakes, like a citizen at a turtle feast. He is indeed seldom incommoded by corpulence. Poverty preserves him from sinking under the burden of himself, but he escapes no other injury of time. Instances of long life are often related, which those who hear them are more willing to credit than examine. To be told that any man has attained a hundred years, gives hope and comfort to him who stands trembling on the brink of his own climacterick.

Length of life is distributed impartially to very different modes of life in very different climates; and the mountains have no greater examples of age and health than the low lands, where I was introduced to two ladies of high quality; one of whom, in her ninety-fourth year, presided at her table with the full exercise of all her powers; and the other has attained her eighty-fourth, without any diminution of her vivacity, and with little reason to accuse time of depredations on her beauty.

In the islands, as in most other places, the inhabitants are of different rank, and one does not encroach here upon another. Where there is no commerce nor manufacture, he that is born poor can scarcely become rich; and if none are able to buy estates, he that is born to land cannot annihilate his family by selling it. This was once the state of these countries. Perhaps there is no example, till within a century and half, of any family whose estate was alienated otherwise than by violence or forfeiture. Since money has been brought amongst them, they have found, like others, the art of spending more than they receive; and I saw with grief the chief of a very

ancient clan, whose island was condemned by law to be sold for the satisfaction of his creditors.

The name of highest dignity is Laird, of which there are in the extensive isle of Sky only three, Macdonald, Macleod, and Mackinnon. The laird is the original owner of the land, whose natural power must be very great where no man lives but by agriculture; and where the produce of the land is not conveyed through the labyrinths of traffick, but passes directly from the hand that gathers it to the mouth that eats it. The laird has all those in his power that live upon his farms. Kings can, for the most part, only exalt or degrade. The laird at pleasure can feed or starve, can give bread, or withhold it. This inherent power was yet strengthened by the kindness of consanguinity, and the reverence of patriarchal authority. The laird was the father of the clan, and his tenants commonly bore his name. And to these principles of original command was added, for many ages, an exclusive right of legal jurisdiction.

This multifarious and extensive obligation operated with force scarcely credible. Every duty, moral or political, was absorbed in affection and adherence to the chief. Not many years have passed since the clans knew no law but the laird's will. He told them to whom they should be friends or enemies, what king they should obey, and what religion they should profess.

When the Scots first rose in arms against the succession of the House of Hanover, Lovat, the chief of the Frasers, was in exile for a rape. The Frasers were very numerous, and very zealous against the

government. A pardon was sent to Lovat. He came to the English camp, and the clan immediately deserted to him.

Next in dignity to the laird is the Tacksman; a large taker or leaseholder of land, of which he keeps part as a domain in his own hand, and lets part to under-tenants. The tacksman is necessarily a man capable of securing to the laird the whole rent, and is commonly a collateral relation. These *tacks*, or subordinate possessions, were long considered as hereditary, and the occupant was distinguished by the name of the place at which he resided. He held a middle station, by which the highest and the lowest orders were connected. He paid rent and reverence to the laird, and received them from the tenants. This tenure still subsists, with its original operation, but not with the primitive stability. Since the islanders, no longer content to live, have learned the desire of growing rich, an ancient dependent is in danger of giving way to a higher bidder, at the expence of domestick dignity and hereditary power. The stranger, whose money buys him preference, considers himself as paying for all that he has, and is indifferent about the laird's honour or safety. The commodiousness of money is indeed great; but there are some advantages which money cannot buy, and which therefore no wise man will by the love of money be tempted to forego.

I have found in the hither parts of Scotland, men not defective in judgment or general experience, who consider the tacksman as a useless burden of the ground, as a drone who lives upon the product

of an estate, without the right of property, or the merit of labour, and who impoverishes at once the landlord and the tenant. The land, say they, is let to the tacksman at sixpence an acre, and by him to the tenant at tenpence. Let the owner be the immediate landlord to all the tenants; if he sets the ground at eightpence, he will increase his revenue by a fourth part, and the tenant's burden will be diminished by a fifth.

Those who pursue this train of reasoning, seem not sufficiently to enquire whither it will lead them, nor to know that it will equally show the propriety of suppressing all wholesale trade, of shutting up the shops of every man who sells what he does not make, and of extruding all whose agency and profit intervene between the manufacturer and the consumer. They may, by stretching their understandings a little wider, comprehend, that all those who, by undertaking large quantities of manufacture, and affording employment to many labourers, make themselves considered as benefactors to the publick, have only been robbing their workmen with one hand, and their customers with the other. If Crowley had sold only what he could make, and all his smiths had wrought their own iron with their own hammers, he would have lived on less, and they would have sold their work for more. The salaries of superintendents and clerks would have been partly saved, and partly shared, and nails been sometimes cheaper by a farthing in a hundred. But then if the smith could not have found an immediate purchaser, he must have deserted his anvil; if there had by accident at any time been more sellers than buyers, the workmen must have

reduced their profit to nothing, by underselling one another; and as no great stock could have been in any hand, no sudden demand of large quantities could have been answered, and the builder must have stood still till the nailer could supply him.

According to these schemes, universal plenty is to begin and end in universal misery. Hope and emulation will be utterly extinguished; and as all must obey the call of immediate necessity, nothing that requires extensive views, or provides for distant consequences, will ever be performed.

To the southern inhabitants of Scotland, the state of the mountains and the islands is equally unknown with that of Borneo or Sumatra: of both they have only heard a little, and guess the rest. They are strangers to the language and the manners, to the advantages and the wants of the people, whose life they would model, and whose evils they would remedy.

Nothing is less difficult than to procure one convenience by the forfeiture of another. A soldier may expedite his march by throwing away his arms. To banish the tacksman is easy, to make a country plentiful by diminishing the people, is an expeditious mode of husbandry; but that abundance, which there is nobody to enjoy, contributes little to human happiness.

As the mind must govern the hands, so in every society the man of intelligence must direct the man of labour. If the tacksman be taken away, the Hebrides must in their present state be given up to grossness and ignorance; the tenant, for want of instruction, will be unskilful, and for want of admo-

nition, will be negligent. The laird, in these wide estates, which often consist of islands remote from one another, cannot extend his personal influence to all his tenants; and the steward having no dignity annexed to his character, can have little authority among men taught to pay reverence only to birth, and who regard the tacksman as their hereditary superiour; nor can the steward have equal zeal for the prosperity of an estate profitable only to the laird, with the tacksman, who has the laird's income involved in his own.

The only gentlemen in the islands are the lairds, the tacksmen, and the ministers, who frequently improve their livings by becoming farmers. If the tacksmen be banished, who will be left to impart knowledge, or impress civility? The laird must always be at a distance from the greater part of his lands; and if he resides at all upon them, must drag his days in solitude, having no longer either a friend or a companion; he will therefore depart to some more comfortable residence, and leave the tenants to the wisdom and mercy of a factor.

Of tenants there are different orders, as they have greater or less stock. Land is sometimes leased to a small fellowship, who live in a cluster of huts, called a Tenant's Town, and are bound jointly and separately for the payment of their rent. These, I believe, employ in the care of their cattle and the labour of tillage, a kind of tenants yet lower; who having a hut, with grass for a certain number of cows and sheep, pay their rent by a stipulated quantity of labour.

The condition of domestick servants, or the price of occasional labour, I do not know with certainty. I was told that the maids have sheep, and are allowed to spin for their own clothing; perhaps they have no pecuniary wages, or none but in very wealthy families. The state of life, which has hitherto been purely pastoral, begins now to be a little variegated with commerce; but novelties enter by degrees, and till one mode has fully prevailed over the other, no settled notion can be formed.

Such is the system of insular subordination, which having little variety, cannot afford much delight in the view, nor long detain the mind in contemplation. The inhabitants were for a long time perhaps not unhappy; but their content was a muddy mixture of pride and ignorance, an indifference for pleasures which they did not know, a blind veneration for their chiefs, and a strong conviction of their own importance.

Their pride has been crushed by the heavy hand of a vindictive conqueror, whose severities have been followed by laws, which, though they cannot be called cruel, have produced much discontent, because they operate upon the surface of life, and make every eye bear witness to subjection. To be compelled to a new dress has always been found painful.

Their chiefs being now deprived of their jurisdiction, have already lost much of their influence; and as they gradually degenerate from patriarchal rulers to rapacious landlords, they will divest themselves of the little that remains.

That dignity which they derived from an opinion of their military importance, the law, which disarmed

them, has abated. An old gentleman, delighting himself with the recollection of better days, related, that forty years ago, a chieftain walked out attended by ten or twelve followers, with their arms rattling. That animating rabble has now ceased. The chief has lost his formidable retinue; and the Highlander walks his heath unarmed and defenceless, with the peaceful submission of a French peasant, or English cottager.

Their ignorance grows every day less, but their knowledge is yet of little other use than to show them their wants. They are now in the period of education, and feel the uneasiness of discipline, without yet perceiving the benefit of instruction.

The last law, by which the Highlanders are deprived of their arms, has operated with efficacy beyond expectation. Of former statutes made with the same design, the execution had been feeble, and the effect inconsiderable. Concealment was undoubtedly practised, and perhaps often with connivance. There was tenderness or partiality on one side, and obstinacy on the other. But the law, which followed the victory of Culloden, found the whole nation dejected and intimidated; informations were given without danger and without fear, and the arms were collected with such rigour, that every house was despoiled of its defence.

To disarm part of the Highlands, could give no reasonable occasion of complaint. Every government must be allowed the power of taking away the weapon that is lifted against it. But the loyal clans murmured, with some appearance of justice, that, after having defended the king, they were for-

bidden for the future to defend themselves; and that the sword should be forfeited, which had been legally employed. Their case is undoubtedly hard, but in political regulations, good cannot be complete, it can only be predominant.

Whether by disarming a people thus broken into several tribes, and thus remote from the seat of power, more good than evil has been produced, may deserve enquiry. The supreme power in every community has the right of debarring every individual, and every subordinate society, from self-defence, only because the supreme power is able to defend them; and therefore where the governour cannot act, he must trust the subject to act for himself. These islands might be wasted with fire and sword before their sovereign would know their distress. A gang of robbers, such as has been lately found confederating themselves in the Highlands, might lay a wide region under contribution. The crew of a petty privateer might land on the largest and most wealthy of the islands, and riot without control in cruelty and waste. It was observed by one of the chiefs of Sky, that fifty armed men might, without resistance, ravage the country. Laws that place the subjects in such a state, contravene the first principles of the compact of authority: they exact obedience, and yield no protection.

It affords a generous and manly pleasure to conceive a little nation gathering its fruits and tending its herds with fearless confidence, though it lies open on every side to invasion, where, in contempt of walls and trenches, every man sleeps securely with his sword beside him; where all on the first approach of

hostility came together at the call to battle, as at a summons to a festal show; and committing their cattle to the care of those whom age or nature has disabled, engaged the enemy with that competition for hazard and for glory, which operate in men that fight under the eye of those whose dislike or kindness they have always considered as the greatest evil or the greatest good.

This was, in the beginning of the present century, the state of the Highlands. Every man was a soldier, who partook of national confidence, and interested himself in national honour. To lose this spirit, is to lose what no small advantage will compensate.

It may likewise deserve to be enquired, whether a great nation ought to be totally commercial? whether amidst the uncertainty of human affairs, too much attention to one mode of happiness may not endanger others? whether the pride of riches must not sometimes have recourse to the protection of courage? and whether, if it be necessary to preserve in some part of the empire the military spirit, it can subsist more commodiously in any place, than in remote and unprofitable provinces, where it can commonly do little harm, and whence it may be called forth at any sudden exigence?

It must however be confessed, that a man who places honour only in successful violence, is a very troublesome and pernicious animal in time of peace; and that the martial character cannot prevail in a whole people, but by the diminution of all other virtues. He that is accustomed to resolve all right into conquest, will have very little tenderness or equity.

All the friendship in such a life can be only a confederacy of invasion, or alliance of defence. The strong must flourish by force, and the weak subsist by stratagem.

Till the Highlanders lost their ferocity with their arms, they suffered from each other all that malignity could dictate, or precipitance could act. Every provocation was revenged with blood, and no man that ventured into a numerous company, by whatever occasion brought together, was sure of returning without a wound. If they are now exposed to foreign hostilities, they may talk of the danger, but can seldom feel it. If they are no longer martial, they are no longer quarrelsome. Misery is caused, for the most part, not by a heavy crush of disaster, but by the corrosion of less visible evils, which canker enjoyment, and undermine security. The visit of an invader is necessarily rare, but domestick animosities allow no cessation.

The abolition of the local jurisdictions, which had for so many ages been exercised by the chiefs, has likewise its evil and its good. The feudal constitution naturally diffused itself into long ramifications of subordinate authority. To this general temper of the government was added the peculiar form of the country, broken by mountains into many subdivisions scarcely accessible but to the natives, and guarded by passes, or perplexed with intricacies, through which national justice could not find its way.

The power of deciding controversies, and of punishing offences, as some such power there must always be, was intrusted to the lairds of the country, to those whom the people considered as their natural

judges. It cannot be supposed that a rugged proprietor of the rocks, unprincipled and unenlightened, was a nice resolver of entangled claims, or very exact in proportioning punishment to offences. But the more he indulged his own will, the more he held his vassals in dependence. Prudence and innocence, without the favour of the chief, conferred no security; and crimes involved no danger, when the judge was resolute to acquit.

When the chiefs were men of knowledge and virtue, the convenience of a domestick judicature was great. No long journeys were necessary, nor artificial delays could be practised; the character, the alliances, and interests of the litigants were known to the court, and all false pretences were easily detected. The sentence, when it was past, could not be evaded; the power of the laird superseded formalities, and justice could not be defeated by interest or stratagem.

I doubt not but that since the regular judges have made their circuits through the whole country, right has been every where more wisely and more equally distributed; the complaint is, that litigation is grown troublesome, and that the magistrates are too few, and therefore often too remote for general convenience.

Many of the smaller islands have no legal officer within them. I once asked, if a crime should be committed, by what authority the offender could be seized? and was told, that the laird would exert his right; a right which he must now usurp, but which surely necessity must vindicate, and which is therefore yet exercised in lower degrees, by some of

the proprietors, when legal processes cannot be obtained.

In all greater questions, however, there is now happily an end to all fear or hope from malice or from favour. The roads are secure in those places through which, forty years ago, no traveller could pass without a convoy. All trials of right by the sword are forgotten, and the mean are in as little danger from the powerful as in other places. No scheme of policy has, in any country, yet brought the rich and poor on equal terms into courts of judicature. Perhaps experience, improving on experience, may in time effect it.

Those who have long enjoyed dignity and power, ought not to lose it without some equivalent. There was paid to the chiefs by the publick, in exchange for their privileges, perhaps a sum greater than most of them had ever possessed, which excited a thirst for riches, of which it showed them the use. When the power of birth and station ceases, no hope remains but from the prevalence of money. Power and wealth supply the place of each other. Power confers the ability of gratifying our desire without the consent of others. Wealth enables us to obtain the consent of others to our gratification. Power, simply considered, whatever it confers on one, must take from another. Wealth enables its owner to give to others, by taking only from himself. Power pleases the violent and proud: wealth delights the placid and the timorous. Youth therefore flies at power, and age grovels after riches.

The chiefs, divested of their prerogatives, ne-

cessarily turned their thoughts to the improvement of their revenues, and expect more rent, as they have less homage. The tenant, who is far from perceiving that his condition is made better in the same proportion as that of his landlord is made worse, does not immediately see why his industry is to be taxed more heavily than before. He refuses to pay the demand, and is ejected; the ground is then let to a stranger, who perhaps brings a larger stock, but who taking the land at its full price, treats with the laird upon equal terms, and considers him not as a chief but as a trafficker in land. Thus the estate perhaps is improved, but the clan is broken.

It seems to be the general opinion, that the rents have been raised with too much eagerness. Some regard must be paid to prejudice. Those who have hitherto paid but little, will not suddenly be persuaded to pay much, though they can afford it. As ground is gradually improved, and the value of money decreases, the rent may be raised without any diminution of the farmer's profits; yet it is necessary in these countries, where the ejection of a tenant is a greater evil than in more populous places, to consider not merely what the land will produce, but with what ability the inhabitant can cultivate it. A certain stock can allow but a certain payment; for if the land be doubled, and the stock remains the same, the tenant becomes no richer. The proprietors of the Highlands might perhaps often increase their income, by subdividing the farms, and allotting to every occupier only so many acres as he can profitably employ, but that they want people.

There seems now, whatever be the cause, to be

through a great part of the Highlands a general discontent. That adherence which was lately professed by every man to the chief of his name, has now little prevalence; and he that cannot live as he desires at home, listens to the tale of fortunate islands, and happy regions, where every man may have land of his own, and eat the product of his labour without a superiour.

Those who have obtained grants of American lands, have, as is well known, invited settlers from all quarters of the globe; and among other places, where oppression might produce a wish for new habitations, their emissaries would not fail to try their persuasions in the isles of Scotland, where at the time when the clans were newly disunited from their chiefs, and exasperated by unprecedented exactions, it is no wonder that they prevailed.

Whether the mischiefs of emigration were immediately perceived, may be justly questioned. They who went first, were probably such as could best be spared; but the accounts sent by the earliest adventurers, whether true or false, inclined many to follow them; and whole neighbourhoods formed parties for removal; so that departure from their native country is no longer exile. He that goes thus accompanied, carries with him all that makes life pleasant. He sits down in a better climate, surrounded by his kindred and his friends: they carry with them their language, their opinions, their popular songs, and hereditary merriment; they change nothing but the place of their abode; and of that change they perceive the benefit.

This is the real effect of emigration, if those that go away together settle on the same spot, and preserve their ancient union. But some relate that these adventurous visitants of unknown regions, after a voyage passed in dreams of plenty and felicity, are dispersed at last upon a sylvan wilderness, where their first years must be spent in toil to clear the ground which is afterwards to be tilled, and that the whole effect of their undertaking is only more fatigue and equal scarcity.

Both accounts may be suspected. Those who are gone will endeavour by every art to draw others after them; for as their numbers are greater, they will provide better for themselves. When Nova Scotia was first peopled, I remember a letter, published under the character of a New Planter, who related how much the climate put him in mind of Italy. Such intelligence the Hebridians probably receive from their transmarine correspondents. But with equal temptations of interest, and perhaps with no greater niceness of veracity, the owners of the islands spread stories of American hardships to keep their people content at home.

Some method to stop this epidemick desire of wandering, which spreads its contagion from valley to valley, deserves to be sought with great diligence. In more fruitful countries, the removal of one, only makes room for the succession of another: but in the Hebrides, the loss of an inhabitant leaves a lasting vacuity; for nobody born in any other parts of the world will choose this country for his residence; and an island once depopulated will remain

a desert, as long as the present facility of travel gives every one, who is discontented and unsettled, the choice of his abode.

Let it be enquired, whether the first intention of those who are fluttering on the wing, and collecting a flock that they may take their flight, be to attain good, or to avoid evil? If they are dissatisfied with that part of the globe which their birth has allotted them, and resolve not to live without the pleasures of happier climates; if they long for bright suns, and calm skies, and flowery fields, and fragrant gardens, I know not by what eloquence they can be persuaded, or by what offers they can be hired to stay.

But if they are driven from their native country by positive evils, and disgusted by ill-treatment, real or imaginary, it were fit to remove their grievances, and quiet their resentment; since, if they have been hitherto undutiful subjects, they will not much mend their principles by American conversation.

To allure them into the army, it was thought proper to indulge them in the continuance of their national dress. If this concession could have any effect, it might easily be made. That dissimilitude of appearance, which was supposed to keep them distinct from the rest of the nation, might disincline them from coalescing with the Pennsylvanians or people of Connecticut. If the restitution of their arms will reconcile them to their country, let them have again those weapons, which will not be more mischievous at home than in the Colonies. That they may not fly from the increase of rent, I know not whether the general good does not require that the landlords be, for a time, restrained in their demands,

and kept quiet by pensions proportionate to their loss.

To hinder insurrection by driving away the people, and to govern peaceably, by having no subjects, is an expedient that argues no great profundity of politicks. To soften the obdurate, to convince the mistaken, to mollify the resentful, are worthy of a statesman; but it affords a legislator little self-applause to consider, that where there was formerly an insurrection, there is now a wilderness.

It has been a question often agitated, without solution, why those northern regions are now so thinly peopled, which formerly overwhelmed with their armies the Roman empire? The question supposes what I believe is not true, that they had once more inhabitants than they could maintain, and overflowed only because they were full.

This is to estimate the manners of all countries and ages by our own. Migration, while the state of life was unsettled, and there was little communication of intelligence between distant places, was among the wilder nations of Europe capricious and casual. An adventurous projector heard of a fertile coast unoccupied, and led out a colony; a chief of renown for bravery called the young men together, and led them out to try what fortune would present. When Cæsar was in Gaul, he found the Helvetians preparing to go they knew not whither, and put a stop to their motions. They settled again in their own country, where they were so far from wanting room, that they had accumulated three years provision for their march.

The religion of the north was military; if they

could not find enemies, it was their duty to make them: they travelled in quest of danger, and willingly took the chance of empire or death. If their troops were numerous, the countries from which they were collected are of vast extent, and without much exuberance of people great armies may be raised where every man is a soldier. But their true numbers were never known. Those who were conquered by them are their historians, and shame may have excited them to say, that they were overwhelmed with multitudes. To count is a modern practice, the ancient method was to guess; and when numbers are guessed, they are always magnified.

Thus England has for several years been filled with the achievements of seventy thousand Highlanders employed in America. I have heard from an English officer, not much inclined to favour them, that their behaviour deserved a very high degree of military praise; but their number has been much exaggerated. One of the ministers told me, that seventy thousand men could not have been found in all the Highlands, and that more than twelve thousand never took the field. Those that went to the American war, went to destruction. Of the old Highland regiment, consisting of twelve hundred, only seventy-six survived to see their country again.

The Gothick swarms have at least been multiplied with equal liberality. That they bore no great proportion to the inhabitants in whose countries they settled, is plain from the paucity of northern words now found in the provincial languages. Their country was not deserted for want of room, because it was covered with forests of vast extent; and the first

effect of plenitude of inhabitants is the destruction of wood. As the Europeans spread over America, the lands are gradually laid naked.

I would not be understood to say, that necessity had never any part in their expeditions. A nation, whose agriculture is scanty or unskilful, may be driven out by famine. A nation of hunters may have exhausted their game. I only affirm that the northern regions were not, when their irruptions subdued the Romans, overpeopled with regard to their real extent of territory, and power of fertility. In a country fully inhabited, however afterward laid waste, evident marks will remain of its former populousness. But of Scandinavia and Germany, nothing is known but that as we trace their state upwards into antiquity, their woods were greater, and their cultivated ground was less.

That causes very different from want of room may produce a general disposition to seek another country, is apparent from the present conduct of the Highlanders, who are in some places ready to threaten a total secession. The numbers which have already gone, though like other numbers they may be magnified, are very great, and such as if they had gone together and agreed upon any certain settlement, might have founded an independent government in the depths of the western continent. Nor are they only the lowest and most indigent; many men of considerable wealth have taken with them their train of labourers and dependants; and if they continue the feudal scheme of polity, may establish new clans in the other hemisphere.

That the immediate motives of their desertion must

be imputed to their landlords, may be reasonably concluded, because some lairds of more prudence and less rapacity have kept their vassals undiminished. From Raasay only one man had been seduced, and at Col there was no wish to go away.

The traveller who comes hither from more opulent countries, to speculate upon the remains of pastoral life, will not much wonder that a common Highlander has no strong adherence to his native soil; for of animal enjoyments, or of physical good, he leaves nothing that he may not find again wheresoever he may be thrown.

The habitations of men in the Hebrides may be distinguished into huts and houses. By a house, I mean a building with one story over another: by a hut, a dwelling with only one floor. The laird, who formerly lived in a castle, now lives in a house; sometimes sufficiently neat, but seldom very spacious or splendid. The tacksmen and the ministers have commonly houses. Wherever there is a house, the stranger finds a welcome, and to the other evils of exterminating tacksmen may be added the unavoidable cessation of hospitality, or the devolution of too heavy a burden on the ministers.

Of the houses little can be said. They are small, and by the necessity of accumulating stores, where there are so few opportunities of purchase, the rooms are very heterogeneously filled. With want of cleanliness it were ingratitude to reproach them. The servants having been bred upon the naked earth, think every floor clean, and the quick succession of guests, perhaps not always over-elegant, does not allow much time for adjusting their apartments.

Huts are of many gradations; from murky dens to commodious dwellings.

The wall of a common hut is always built without mortar, by a skilful adaptation of loose stones. Sometimes perhaps a double wall of stones is raised, and the intermediate space filled with earth. The air is thus completely excluded. Some walls are, I think, formed of turfs, held together by a wattle, or texture of twigs. Of the meanest huts the first room is lighted by the entrance, and the second by the smoke-hole. The fire is usually made in the middle. But there are huts or dwellings of only one story, inhabited by gentlemen, which have walls cemented with mortar, glass windows, and boarded floors. Of these all have chimneys, and some chimneys have grates.

The house and the furniture are not always nicely suited. We were driven once, by missing a passage, to the hut of a gentleman, where, after a very liberal supper, when I was conducted to my chamber, I found an elegant bed of Indian cotton, spread with fine sheets. The accommodation was flattering; I undressed myself, and felt my feet in the mire. The bed stood upon the bare earth, which a long course of rain had softened to a puddle.

In pastoral countries the condition of the lowest rank of people is sufficiently wretched. Among manufacturers, men that have no property may have art and industry, which make them necessary, and therefore valuable. But where flocks and corn are the only wealth, there are always more hands than work, and of that work there is little in which skill and dexterity can be much distinguished. He therefore who is born poor never can be rich. The son

merely occupies the place of the father, and life knows nothing of progression or advancement.

The petty tenants, and labouring peasants, live in miserable cabins, which afford them little more than shelter from the storms. The boor of Norway is said to make all his own utensils. In the Hebrides, whatever might be their ingenuity, the want of wood leaves them no materials. They are probably content with such accommodations as stones of different forms and sizes can afford them.

Their food is not better than their lodging. They seldom taste the flesh of land-animals; for here are no markets. What each man eats is from his own stock. The great effect of money is to break property into small parts. In towns, he that has a shilling may have a piece of meat; but where there is no commerce, no man can eat mutton but by killing a sheep.

Fish in fair weather they need not want; but, I believe, man never lives long on fish, but by constraint; he will rather feed upon roots and berries.

The only fuel of the islands is peat. Their wood is all consumed, and coal they have not yet found. Peat is dug out of the marshes, from the depth of one foot to that of six. That is accounted the best which is nearest the surface. It appears to be a mass of black earth held together by vegetable fibres. I know not whether the earth be bituminous, or whether the fibres be not the only combustible part; which, by heating the interposed earth red-hot, make a burning mass. The heat is not very strong or lasting. The ashes are yellowish, and in a large quantity. When they dig peat, they cut it into square pieces,

and pile it up to dry beside the house. In some places it has an offensive smell. It is like wood charked for the smith. The common method of making peat-fires is by heaping it on the hearth; but it burns well in grates, and in the best houses is so used.

The common opinion is, that peat grows again where it has been cut; which, as it seems to be chiefly a vegetable substance, is not unlikely to be true, whether known or not to those who relate it.

There are watermills in Sky and Raasay; but where they are too far distant, the housewives grind their oats with a quern, or handmill, which consists of two stones, about a foot and a half in diameter; the lower is a little convex, to which the concavity of the upper must be fitted. In the middle of the upper stone is a round hole, and on one side is a long handle. The grinder sheds the corn gradually into the hole with one hand, and works the handle round with the other. The corn slides down the convexity of the lower stone, and by the motion of the upper is ground in its passage. These stones are found in Lochabar.

The islands afford few pleasures, except to the hardy sportsman, who can tread the moor and climb the mountain. The distance of one family from another, in a country where travelling has so much difficulty, makes frequent intercourse impracticable. Visits last several days, and are commonly paid by water; yet I never saw a boat furnished with benches, or made commodious by any addition to the first fabrick. Conveniencies are not missed where they never were enjoyed.

The solace which the bagpipe can give, they have long enjoyed; but among other changes, which the last revolution introduced, the use of the bagpipe begins to be forgotten. Some of the chief families still entertain a piper, whose office was anciently hereditary. Macrimmon was piper to Macleod, and Rankin to Maclean of Col.

The tunes of the bagpipe are traditional. There has been in Sky, beyond all time of memory, a college of pipers, under the direction of Macrimmon, which is not quite extinct. There was another in Mull, superintended by Rankin, which expired about sixteen years ago. To these colleges, while the pipe retained its honour, the students of musick repaired for education. I have had my dinner exhilarated by the bagpipe, at Armidale, at Dunvegan, and in Col.

The general conversation of the islanders has nothing particular. I did not meet with the inquisitiveness of which I have read, and suspect the judgment to have been rashly made. A stranger of curiosity comes into a place where a stranger is seldom seen: he importunes the people with questions, of which they cannot guess the motive, and gazes with surprise on things which they, having had them always before their eyes, do not suspect of any thing wonderful. He appears to them like some being of another world, and then thinks it peculiar that they take their turn to enquire whence he comes, and whither he is going.

The islands were long unfurnished with instruction for youth, and none but the sons of gentlemen could have any literature. There are now parochial schools, to which the lord of every manor pays a certain sti-

pend. Here the children are taught to read; but by the rule of their institution, they teach only English, so that the natives read a language which they may never use or understand. If a parish, which often happens, contains several islands, the school being but in one, cannot assist the rest. This is the state of Col, which, however, is more enlightened than some other places; for the deficiency is supplied by a young gentleman, who, for his own improvement, travels every year on foot over the Highlands to the session at Aberdeen; and at his return, during the vacation, teaches to read and write in his native island.

In Sky there are two grammar-schools, where boarders are taken to be regularly educated. The price of board is from three pounds, to four pounds ten shillings a-year, and that of instruction is half a crown a quarter. But the scholars are birds of passage, who live at school only in the summer; for in winter provisions cannot be made for any considerable number in one place. This periodical dispersion impresses strongly the scarcity of these countries.

Having heard of no boarding-school for ladies nearer than Inverness, I suppose their education is generally domestick. The elder daughters of the higher families are sent into the world, and may contribute by their acquisitions to the improvement of the rest.

Women must here study to be either pleasing or useful. Their deficiencies are seldom supplied by very liberal fortunes. A hundred pounds is a portion beyond the hope of any but the laird's daughter. They do not indeed often give money with their

daughters: the question is, How many cows a young lady will bring her husband? A rich maiden has from ten to forty; but two cows are a decent fortune for one who pretends to no distinction.

The religion of the islands is that of the kirk of Scotland. The gentlemen with whom I conversed are all inclined to the English liturgy; but they are obliged to maintain the established minister, and the country is too poor to afford payment to another, who must live wholly on the contribution of his audience.

They therefore all attend the worship of the kirk, as often as a visit from their minister, or the practicability of travelling, gives them opportunity; nor have they any reason to complain of insufficient pastors; for I saw not one in the islands, whom I had reason to think either deficient in learning, or irregular in life; but found several with whom I could not converse without wishing, as my respect increased, that they had not been presbyterians.

The ancient rigour of puritanism is now very much relaxed, though all are not yet equally enlightened. I sometimes met with prejudices sufficiently malignant, but they were prejudices of ignorance. The ministers in the islands had attained such knowledge as may justly be admired in men, who have no motive to study, but generous curiosity, or what is still better, desire of usefulness; with such politeness as so narrow a circle of converse could not have supplied, but to minds naturally disposed to elegance.

Reason and truth will prevail at last. The most learned of the Scottish doctors would now gladly

admit a form of prayer, if the people would endure it. The zeal or rage of congregations has its different degrees. In some parishes the Lord's Prayer is suffered: in others it is still rejected as a form; and he that should make it part of his supplication would be suspected of heretical pravity.

The principle upon which extemporary prayer was originally introduced, is no longer admitted. The minister formerly, in the effusion of his prayer, expected immediate, and perhaps perceptible inspiration, and therefore thought it his duty not to think before what he should say. It is now universally confessed, that men pray as they speak on other occasions, according to the general measure of their abilities and attainments. Whatever each may think of a form prescribed by another, he cannot but believe that he can himself compose by study and meditation a better prayer than will rise in his mind at a sudden call; and if he has any hope of supernatural help, why may he not as well receive it when he writes as when he speaks?

In the variety of mental powers, some must perform extemporary prayer with much imperfection; and in the eagerness and rashness of contradictory opinions, if publick liturgy be left to the private judgment of every minister, the congregation may often be offended or misled.

There is in Scotland, as among ourselves, a restless suspicion of popish machinations, and a clamour of numerous converts to the Romish religion. The report is, I believe, in both parts of the island equally false. The Romish religion is professed only in Egg and Canna, two small islands, into which the

reformation never made its way. If any missionaries are busy in the Highlands, their zeal entitles them to respect, even from those who cannot think favourably of their doctrine.

The political tenets of the islanders I was not curious to investigate, and they were not eager to obtrude. Their conversation is decent and inoffensive. They disdain to drink for their principles, and there is no disaffection at their tables. I never heard a health offered by a Highlander that might not have circulated with propriety within the precincts of the king's palace.

Legal government has yet something of novelty to which they cannot perfectly conform. The ancient spirit that appealed only to the sword, is yet among them. The tenant of Scalpa, an island belonging to Macdonald, took no care to bring his rent; when the landlord talked of exacting payment, he declared his resolution to keep his ground, and drive all intruders from the island, and continued to feed his cattle as on his own land, till it became necessary for the sheriff to dislodge him by violence.

The various kinds of superstition which prevailed here, as in all other regions of ignorance, are by the diligence of the ministers almost extirpated.

Of *Browny*, mentioned by Martin, nothing has been heard for many years. Browny was a sturdy fairy; who, if he was fed, and kindly treated, would, as they said, do a great deal of work. They now pay him no wages, and are content to labour for themselves.

In Troda, within these three-and-thirty years, milk

was put every Saturday for *Greogach*, or *the Old Man with the Long Beard.* Whether Greogach was courted as kind, or dreaded as terrible, whether they meant, by giving him the milk, to obtain good or avert evil, I was not informed. The minister is now living by whom the practice was abolished.

They have still among them a great number of charms for the cure of different diseases; they are all invocations, perhaps transmitted to them from the times of popery, which increasing knowledge will bring into disuse.

They have opinions, which cannot be ranked with superstition, because they regard only natural effects. They expect better crops of grain by sowing their seed in the moon's increase. The moon has great influence in vulgar philosophy. In my memory it was a precept annually given in one of the English almanacks, "to kill hogs when the moon was increasing, and the bacon would prove the better in boiling."

We should have had little claim to the praise of curiosity, if we had not endeavoured with particular attention to examine the question of the *Second Sight.* Of an opinion received for centuries by a whole nation, and supposed to be confirmed through its whole descent by a series of successive facts, it is desirable that the truth should be established, or the fallacy detected.

The *Second Sight* is an impression made either by the mind upon the eye, or by the eye upon the mind, by which things distant or future are perceived, and seen as if they were present. A man on a journey far from home falls from his horse; another, who is

perhaps at work about the house, sees him bleeding on the ground, commonly with a landscape of the place where the accident befalls him. Another seer, driving home his cattle, or wandering in idleness, or musing in the sunshine, is suddenly surprised by the appearance of a bridal ceremony, or funeral procession, and counts the mourners or attendants, of whom, if he knows them, he relates the names, if he knows them not, he can describe the dresses. Things distant are seen at the instant when they happen. Of things future I know not that there is any rule for determining the time between the sight and the event.

This receptive faculty, for power it cannot be called, is neither voluntary nor constant. The appearances have no dependence upon choice: they cannot be summoned, detained, or recalled. The impression is sudden, and the effect often painful.

By the term *Second Sight*, seems to be meant a mode of seeing, superadded to that which nature generally bestows. In the Erse it is called *Taisch;* which signifies likewise a spectre, or a vision. I know not, nor is it likely that the Highlanders ever examined, whether by *Taisch*, used for *Second Sight*, they mean the power of seeing, or the thing seen.

I do not find it to be true, as it is reported, that to the *Second Sight* nothing is presented but phantoms of evil. Good seems to have the same proportion in those visionary scenes, as it obtains in real life: almost all remarkable events have evil for their basis; and are either miseries incurred, or miseries escaped. Our sense is so much stronger of what we

suffer, than of what we enjoy, that the ideas of pain predominate in almost every mind. What is recollection but a revival of vexations, or history but a record of wars, treasons, and calamities? Death, which is considered as the greatest evil, happens to all. The greatest good, be it what it will, is the lot but of a part.

That they should often see death is to be expected; because death is an event frequent and important. But they see likewise more pleasing incidents. A gentleman told me, that when he had once gone far from his own island, one of his labouring servants predicted his return, and described the livery of his attendant, which he had never worn at home; and which had been, without any previous design, occasionally given him.

Our desire of information was keen, and our enquiry frequent. Mr. Boswell's frankness and gaiety made every body communicative; and we heard many tales of these airy shows, with more or less evidence and distinctness.

It is the common talk of the Lowland Scots, that the notion of the *Second Sight* is wearing away with other superstitions: and that its reality is no longer supposed, but by the grossest people. How far its prevalence ever extended, or what ground it has lost, I know not. The islanders of all degrees, whether of rank or understanding, universally admit it, except the ministers, who universally deny it, and are suspected to deny it, in consequence of a system, against conviction. One of them honestly told me, that he came to Sky with a resolution not to believe it.

Strong reasons for incredulity will readily occur.

willing to listen to such accounts of past times as would be given us. But we soon found what memorials were to be expected from an illiterate people, whose whole time is a series of distress; where every morning is labouring with expedients for the evening: and where all mental pains or pleasure arose from the dread of winter, the expectation of spring, the caprices of their chiefs, and the motions of the neighbouring clans; where there was neither shame from ignorance, nor pride in knowledge; neither curiosity to enquire, nor vanity to communicate.

The chiefs indeed were exempt from urgent penury and daily difficulties; and in their houses were preserved what accounts remained of past ages. But the chiefs were sometimes ignorant and careless, and sometimes kept busy by turbulence and contention; and one generation of ignorance effaces the whole series of unwritten history. Books are faithful repositories, which may be a while neglected or forgotten; but when they are opened again, will again impart their instruction: memory, once interrupted, is not to be recalled. Written learning is a fixed luminary, which, after the cloud that had hidden it has passed away, is again bright in its proper station. Tradition is but a meteor, which, if once it falls, cannot be rekindled.

It seems to be universally supposed, that much of the local history was preserved by the bards, of whom one is said to have been retained by every great family. After these bards were some of my first enquiries; and I received such answers as, for a while, made me please myself with my increase of

knowledge; for I had not then learned how to estimate the narration of a Highlander.

They said that a great family had a *bard* and a *senachi*, who were the poet and historian of the house; and an old gentleman told me that he remembered one of each. Here was a dawn of intelligence. Of men that had lived within memory, some certain knowledge might be attained. Though the office had ceased, its effects might continue; the poems might be found, though there was no poet.

Another conversation indeed informed me, that the same man was both bard and senachi. This variation discouraged me; but as the practice might be different in different times, or at the same time in different families, there was yet no reason for supposing that I must necessarily sit down in total ignorance.

Soon after I was told by a gentleman, who is generally acknowledged the greatest master of Hebridian antiquities, that there had indeed once been both bards and senachies; and that *senachi* signified *the man of talk*, or of conversation; but that neither bard nor senachi had existed for some centuries. I have no reason to suppose it exactly known at what time the custom ceased, nor did it probably cease in all houses at once. But whenever the practice of recitation was disused, the works, whether poetical or historical, perished with the authors; for in those times nothing had been written in the Erse language.

Whether *the man of talk* was an historian, whose office was to tell truth, or a story-teller, like those

which were in the last century, and perhaps are now among the Irish, whose trade was only to amuse, it now would be vain to enquire.

Most of the domestick offices were, I believe, hereditary; and probably the laureat of a clan was always the son of the last laureat. The history of the race could no otherwise be communicated or retained; but what genius could be expected in a poet by inheritance?

The nation was wholly illiterate. Neither bards nor senachies could write or read; but if they were ignorant, there was no danger of detection; they were believed by those whose vanity they flattered.

The recital of genealogies, which has been considered as very efficacious to the preservation of a true series of ancestry, was anciently made when the heir of the family came to manly age. This practice has never subsisted within time of memory, nor was much credit due to such rehearsers, who might obtrude fictitious pedigrees, either to please their masters, or to hide the deficiency of their own memories.

Where the chiefs of the Highlands have found the histories of their descent, is difficult to tell; for no Erse genealogy was ever written. In general this only is evident, that the principal house of a clan must be very ancient, and that those must have lived long in a place, of whom it is not known when they came thither.

Thus hopeless are all attempts to find any traces of Highland learning. Nor are their primitive customs and ancient manner of life otherwise than very

faintly and uncertainly remembered by the present race.

The peculiarities which strike the native of a commercial country, proceeded in a great measure from the want of money. To the servants and dependents that were not domesticks, and, if an estimate be made from the capacity of any of their old houses which I have seen, their domesticks could have been but few, were appropriated certain portions of land for their support. Macdonald has a piece of ground yet called the Bards or Senachies field. When a beef was killed for the house, particular parts were claimed as fees by the several officers, or workmen. What was the right of each I have not learned. The head belonged to the smith, and the udder of a cow to the piper; the weaver had likewise his particular part; and so many pieces followed these prescriptive claims, that the laird's was at last but little.

The payment of rent in kind has been so long disused in England, that it is totally forgotten. It was practised very lately in the Hebrides, and probably still continues, not only at St. Kilda, where money is not yet known, but in others of the smaller and remoter islands. It were perhaps to be desired, that no change in this particular should have been made. When the laird could only eat the produce of his lands, he was under the necessity of residing upon them; and when the tenant could not convert his stock into more portable riches, he could never be tempted away from his farm, from the only place where he could be wealthy. Money confounds subor-

dination, by overpowering the distinctions of rank and birth, and weakens authority, by supplying power of resistance, or expedients for escape. The feudal system is formed for a nation employed in agriculture, and has never long kept its hold where gold and silver have become common.

Their arms were anciently the *Glaymore*, or great two-handed sword, and afterwards the two-edged sword and target, or buckler, which was sustained on the left arm. In the midst of the target, which was made of wood, covered with leather, and studded with nails, a slender lance, about two feet long, was sometimes fixed; it was heavy and cumberous, and accordingly has for some time past been gradually laid aside. Very few targets were at Culloden. The dirk, or broad dagger, I am afraid, was of more use in private quarrels than in battles. The Lochaber axe is only a slight alteration of the old English bill.

After all that has been said of the force and terrour of the Highland sword, I could not find that the art of defence was any part of common education. The gentlemen were perhaps sometimes skilful gladiators, but the common men had no other powers than those of violence and courage. Yet it is well known, that the onset of the Highlanders was very formidable. As an army cannot consist of philosophers, a panick is easily excited by any unwonted mode of annoyance. New dangers are naturally magnified; and men accustomed only to exchange bullets at a distance, and rather to hear their enemies than see them, are discouraged and amazed when they find themselves encountered hand

to hand, and catch the gleam of steel flashing in their faces.

The Highland weapons gave opportunity for many exertions of personal courage, and sometimes for single combats in the field; like those which occur so frequently in fabulous wars. At Falkirk, a gentleman now living, was, I suppose after the retreat of the king's troops, engaged at a distance from the rest with an Irish dragoon. They were both skilful swordsmen, and the contest was not easily decided: the dragoon at last had the advantage, and the Highlander called for quarter; but quarter was refused him, and the fight continued till he was reduced to defend himself upon his knee. At that instant one of the Macleods came to his rescue; who, as it is said, offered quarter to the dragoon, but he thought himself obliged to reject what he had before refused, and, as battle gives little time to deliberate, was immediately killed.

Funerals were formerly solemnized by calling multitudes together, and entertaining them at a great expence. This emulation of useless cost has been for some time discouraged, and at last in the isle of Sky is almost suppressed.

Of the Erse language, as I understand nothing, I cannot say more than I have been told. It is the rude speech of a barbarous people, who had few thoughts to express, and were content, as they conceived grossly, to be grossly understood. After what has been lately talked of Highland bards, and Highland genius, many will startle when they are told, that the Erse never was a written language; that there is not in the world an Erse manuscript a hun-

dred years old; and that the sounds of the Highlanders were never expressed by letters, till some little books of piety were translated, and a metrical version of the Psalms was made by the synod of Argyle. Whoever therefore now writes in this language, spells according to his own perception of the sound, and his own idea of the power of the letters. The Welsh and the Irish are cultivated tongues. The Welsh, two hundred years ago, insulted their English neighbours for the instability of their orthography; while the Erse merely floated in the breath of the people, and could therefore receive little improvement.

When a language begins to teem with books, it is tending to refinement; as those who undertake to teach others must have undergone some labour in improving themselves, they set a proportionate value on their own thoughts, and wish to enforce them by efficacious expressions; speech becomes embodied and permanent; different modes and phrases are compared, and the best obtains an establishment. By degrees, one age improves upon another. Exactness is first obtained, and afterwards elegance. But diction, merely vocal, is always in its childhood. As no man leaves his eloquence behind him, the new generations have all to learn. There may possibly be books without a polished language, but there can be no polished language without books.

That the bards could not read more than the rest of their countrymen, it is reasonable to suppose; because, if they had read, they could probably have written; and how high their compositions may reasonably be rated, an enquirer may best judge by con-

sidering what stores of imagery, what principles of ratiocination, what comprehension of knowledge, and what delicacy of elocution he has known any man attain who cannot read. The state of the bards was yet more hopeless. He that cannot read, may now converse with those that can; but the bard was a barbarian among barbarians, who, knowing nothing himself, lived with others that knew no more.

There has lately been in the islands one of these illiterate poets, who hearing the Bible read at church, is said to have turned the sacred history into verse. I heard part of a dialogue, composed by him, translated by a young lady in Mull, and thought it had more meaning than I expected from a man totally uneducated; but he had some opportunities of knowledge; he lived among a learned people. After all that has been done for the instruction of the Highlanders, the antipathy between their language and literature still continues; and no man that has learned only Erse is, at this time, able to read.

The Erse has many dialects, and the words used in some islands are not always known in others. In literate nations, though the pronunciation, and sometimes the words of common speech, may differ, as now in England, compared with the south of Scotland, yet there is a written diction, which pervades all dialects, and is understood in every province. But where the whole language is colloquial, he that has only one part, never gets the rest, as he cannot get it but by change of residence.

In an unwritten speech, nothing that is not very short is transmitted from one generation to another.

Few have opportunities of hearing a long composition often enough to learn it, or have inclination to repeat it so often as is necessary to retain it; and what is once forgotten is lost for ever. I believe there cannot be recovered in the whole Erse language five hundred lines of which there is any evidence to prove them a hundred years old. Yet I hear that the father of Ossian boasts of two chests more of ancient poetry, which he suppresses, because they are too good for the English.

He that goes into the Highlands with a mind naturally acquiescent, and a credulity eager for wonders, may come back with an opinion very different from mine; for the inhabitants, knowing the ignorance of all strangers in their language and antiquities, perhaps are not very scrupulous adherents to truth; yet I do not say that they deliberately speak studied falsehood, or have a settled purpose to deceive. They have enquired and considered little, and do not always feel their own ignorance. They are not much accustomed to be interrogated by others; and seem never to have thought upon interrogating themselves; so that if they do not know what they tell to be true, they likewise do not distinctly perceive it to be false.

Mr. Boswell was very diligent in his enquiries; and the result of his investigations was, that the answer to the second question was commonly such as nullified the answer to the first.

We were a while told, that they had an old translation of the Scriptures; and told it till it would appear obstinacy to enquire again. Yet by continued accumulation of questions we found, that the trans-

lation meant, if any meaning there were, was nothing else than the Irish Bible.

We heard of manuscripts that were, or that had been in the hands of somebody's father, or grandfather; but at last we had no reason to believe they were other than Irish. Martin mentions Irish, but never any Erse manuscripts, to be found in the islands in his time.

I suppose my opinion of the poems of Ossian is already discovered. I believe they never existed in any other form than that which we have seen. The editor, or author, never could show the original; nor can it be shown by any other. To revenge reasonable incredulity, by refusing evidence, is a degree of insolence, with which the world is not yet acquainted; and stubborn audacity is the last refuge of guilt. It would be easy to show it if he had it; but whence could it be had? It is too long to be remembered, and the language formerly had nothing written. He has doubtless inserted names that circulate in popular stories, and may have translated some wandering ballads, if any can be found; and the names, and some of the images, being recollected, make an inaccurate auditor imagine, by the help of Caledonian bigotry, that he has formerly heard the whole.

I asked a very learned minister in Sky, who had used all arts to make me believe the genuineness of the book, whether at last he believed it himself? but he would not answer. He wished me to be deceived, for the honour of his country; but would not directly and formally deceive me. Yet has this man's testimony been publickly produced, as of one that held Fingal to be the work of Ossian.

It is said, that some men of integrity profess to have heard parts of it, but they all heard them when they were boys; and it was never said that any of them could recite six lines. They remember names, and perhaps some proverbial sentiments; and having no distinct ideas, coin a resemblance without an original. The persuasion of the Scots, however, is far from universal; and in a question so capable of proof, why should doubt be suffered to continue? The editor has been heard to say, that part of the poem was received by him, in the Saxon character. He has then found, by some peculiar fortune, an unwritten language, written in a character which the natives probably never beheld.

I have yet supposed no imposture but in the publisher; yet I am far from certainty, that some translations have not been lately made, that may now be obtruded as parts of the original work. Credulity on one part is a strong temptation to deceit on the other, especially to deceit of which no personal injury is the consequence, and which flatters the author with his own ingenuity. The Scots have something to plead for their easy reception of an improbable fiction: they are seduced by their fondness for their supposed ancestors. A Scotchman must be a very sturdy moralist, who does not love Scotland better than truth; he will always love it better than enquiry: and if falsehood flatters his vanity, will not be very diligent to detect it. Neither ought the English to be much influenced by Scotch authority; for of the past and present state of the whole Erse nation, the Lowlanders are at least as ignorant as ourselves. To be ignorant is painful; but it is dan-

gerous to quiet our uneasiness by the delusive opiate of hasty persuasion.

But this is the age in which those who could not read, have been supposed to write; in which the giants of antiquated romance have been exhibited as realities. If we know little of the ancient Highlanders, let us not fill the vacuity with Ossian. If we have not searched the Magellanick regions, let us however forbear to people them with Patagons.

Having waited some days at Armidel, we were flattered at last with a wind that promised to convey us to Mull. We went on board a boat that was taking in kelp, and left the isle of Sky behind us. We were doomed to experience, like others, the danger of trusting to the wind, which blew against us, in a short time, with such violence, that we, being no seasoned sailors, were willing to call it a tempest. I was seasick, and lay down. Mr. Boswell kept the deck. The master knew not well whither to go; and our difficulties might perhaps have filled a very pathetick page, had not Mr. Maclean of Col, who, with every other qualification which insular life requires, is a very active and skilful mariner, piloted us safe into his own harbour.

COL.

In the morning we found ourselves under the isle of Col, where we landed; and passed the first day and night with captain Maclean, a gentleman who has lived some time in the East Indies, but having dethroned no Nabob, is not too rich to settle in his own country.

Next day the wind was fair, and we might have

had an easy passage to Mull; but having, contrarily to our own intention, landed upon a new island, we would not leave it wholly unexamined. We therefore suffered the vessel to depart without us, and trusted the skies for another wind.

Mr. Maclean of Col, having a very numerous family, has, for some time past, resided at Aberdeen, that he may superintend their education, and leaves the young gentleman, our friend, to govern his dominions, with the full power of a Highland chief. By the absence of the laird's family, our entertainment was made more difficult, because the house was in a great degree disfurnished; but young Col's kindness and activity supplied all defects, and procured us more than sufficient accommodation.

Here I first mounted a little Highland steed; and if there had been many spectators, should have been somewhat ashamed of my figure in the march. The horses of the islands, as of other barren countries, are very low: they are indeed musculous and strong, beyond what their size gives reason for expecting; but a bulky man upon one of their backs makes a very disproportionate appearance.

From the habitation of captain Maclean we went to Grissipol, but called by the way on Mr. Hector Maclean, the minister of Col, whom we found in a hut, that is, a house of only one floor, but with windows and chimney, and not inelegantly furnished. Mr. Maclean has the reputation of great learning: he is seventy-seven years old, but not infirm, with a look of venerable dignity excelling what I remember in any other man.

His conversation was not unsuitable to his appear

ance. I lost some of his good will, by treating a heretical writer with more regard than, in his opinion, a heretick could deserve. I honoured his orthodoxy, and did not much censure his asperity. A man who has settled his opinions, does not love to have the tranquillity of his conviction disturbed; and at seventy-seven it is time to be in earnest.

Mention was made of the Erse translation of the New Testament, which has been lately published, and of which the learned Mr. Macqueen of Sky spoke with commendation; but Mr. Maclean said, he did not use it, because he could make the text more intelligible to his auditors by an extemporary version. From this I inferred, that the language of the translation was not the language of the isle of Col.

He has no publick edifice for the exercise of his ministry; and can officiate to no greater number than a room can contain; and the room of a hut is not very large. This is all the opportunity of worship that is now granted to the inhabitants of the islands, some of whom must travel thither perhaps ten miles. Two chapels were erected by their ancestors, of which I saw the skeletons, which now stand faithful witnesses of the triumph of Reformation.

The want of churches is not the only impediment to piety; there is likewise a want of ministers. A parish often contains more islands than one; and each island can have the minister only in its own turn. At Raasay they had, I think, a right to service only every third Sunday. All the provision made by the present ecclesiastical constitution, for

the inhabitants of about a hundred square miles, is a prayer and sermon in a little room, once in three weeks: and even this parsimonious distribution is at the mercy of the weather: and in those islands where the minister does not reside, it is impossible to tell how many weeks or months may pass without any publick exercise of religion.

GRISSIPOL IN COL.

After a short conversation with Mr. Maclean, we went on to Grissipol, a house and farm tenanted by Mr. Macsweyn, where I saw more of the ancient life of a Highlander than I had yet found. Mrs. Macsweyn could speak no English, and had never seen any other places than the islands of Sky, Mull, and Col: but she was hospitable and good-humoured, and spread her table with sufficient liberality. We found tea here as in every other place, but our spoons were of horn.

The house of Grissipol stands by a brook very clear and quick; which is, I suppose, one of the most copious streams in the island. This place was the scene of an action, much celebrated in the traditional history of Col, but which probably no two relaters will tell alike.

Some time, in the obscure ages, Macneïl of Barra married the lady Maclean, who had the isle of Col for her jointure. Whether Macneil detained Col, when the widow was dead, or whether she lived so long as to make her heirs impatient, is perhaps not now known. The younger son, called John Gerves or John the Giant, a man of great strength, who was then in Ireland, either for safety or for educa-

tion, dreamed of recovering his inheritance; and getting some adventurers together, which in those unsettled times was not hard to do, invaded Col. He was driven away, but was not discouraged, and collecting new followers, in three years came again with fifty men. In his way he stopped at Artorinish in Morvern, where his uncle was prisoner to Macleod, and was then with his enemies in a tent. Maclean took with him only one servant, whom he ordered to stay at the outside: and where he should see the tent pressed outwards, to strike with his dirk; it being the intention of Maclean, as any man provoked him, to lay hands upon him, and push him back. He entered the tent alone, with his Lochaber axe in his hand, and struck such terrour into the whole assembly, that they dismissed his uncle.

When he landed at Col, he saw the sentinel, who kept watch towards the sea, running off to Grissipol, to give Macneil, who was there with a hundred and twenty men, an account of the invasion. He told Macgill, one of his followers, that if he intercepted that dangerous intelligence, by catching the courier, he would give him certain lands in Mull. Upon this promise Macgill pursued the messenger, and either killed or stopped him; and his posterity, till very lately, held the lands in Mull.

The alarm being thus prevented, he came unexpectedly upon Macneil. Chiefs were in those days never wholly unprovided for an enemy. A fight ensued, in which one of their followers is said to have given an extraordinary proof of activity, by bounding backwards over the brook of Grissipol. Macneil being killed, and many of his clan destroyed,

Maclean took possession of the island, which the Macneils attempted to conquer by another invasion, but were defeated and repulsed.

Maclean, in his turn, invaded the estate of the Macneils, took the castle of Brecacig, and conquered the isle of Barra, which he held for seven years, and then restored it to the heirs.

CASTLE OF COL.

From Grissipol Mr. Maclean conducted us to his father's seat; a neat new house erected near the old castle, I think, by the last proprietor. Here we were allowed to take our station, and lived very commodiously while we waited for moderate weather and a fair wind, which we did not so soon obtain, but we had time to get some information of the present state of Col, partly by enquiry, and partly by occasional excursions.

Col is computed to be thirteen miles in length, and three in breadth. Both the ends are the property of the duke of Argyle, but the middle belongs to Maclean, who is called Col, as the only laird.

Col is not properly rocky; it is rather one continued rock, of a surface much diversified with protuberances, and covered with a thin layer of earth, which is often broken, and discovers the stone. Such a soil is not for plants that strike deep roots; and perhaps in the whole island nothing has ever yet grown to the height of a table. The uncultivated parts are clothed with heath, among which industry has interspersed spots of grass and corn; but no at-

tempt has been made to raise a tree. Young Col, who has a very laudable desire of improving his patrimony, purposes some time to plant an orchard; which, if it be sheltered by a wall, may perhaps succeed. He has introduced the culture of turnips, of which he has a field, where the whole work was performed by his own hand. His intention is to provide food for his cattle in the winter. This innovation was considered by Mr. Macsweyn as the idle project of a young head, heated with English fancies; but he has now found that turnips will really grow, and that hungry sheep and cows will really eat them.

By such acquisitions as these, the Hebrides may in time rise above their annual distress. Wherever heath will grow, there is reason to think something better may draw nourishment; and by trying the production of other places, plants will be found suitable to every soil.

Col has many lochs, some of which have trouts and eels, and others have never yet been stocked; another proof of the negligence of the islanders, who might take fish in the inland waters when they cannot go to sea.

Their quadrupeds are horses, cows, sheep, and goats. They have neither deer, hares, nor rabbits. They have no vermin except rats, which have been lately brought thither by sea, as to other places; and are free from serpents, frogs, and toads.

The harvest in Col, and in Lewis, is ripe sooner than in Sky, and the winter in Col is never cold, but very tempestuous. I know not that I ever heard

the wind so loud in any other place; and Mr. Boswell observed that its noise was all its own, for there were no trees to increase it.

Noise is not the worst effect of the tempests; for they have thrown the sand from the shore over a considerable part of the land, and it is said still to encroach and destroy more and more pasture; but I am not of opinion, that by any surveys or landmarks, its limits have been ever fixed, or its progression ascertained. If one man has confidence enough to say, that it advances, nobody can bring any proof to support him in denying it. The reason why it is not spread to a greater extent, seems to be, that the wind and rain come almost together, and that it is made close and heavy by the wet before the storms can put it in motion. So thick is the bed, and so small the particles, that if a traveller should be caught by a sudden gust in dry weather, he would find it very difficult to escape with life.

For natural curiosities I was shown only two great masses of stone, which lie loose upon the ground; one on the top of a hill, and the other at a small distance from the bottom. They certainly were never put into their present places by human strength or skill; and though an earthquake might have broken off the lower stone, and rolled it into the valley, no account can be given of the other, which lies on the hill, unless, which I forgot to examine, there be still near it some higher rock, from which it might be torn. All nations have a tradition, that their earliest ancestors were giants, and these stones are said to have been thrown up and down by a giant and his

mistress. There are so many more important things of which human knowledge can give no account, that it may be forgiven us, if we speculate no longer on two stones in Col.

This island is very populous. About nine-and-twenty years ago, the fencible men of Col were reckoned one hundred and forty; which is the sixth of eight hundred and forty; and probably some contrived to be left out of the list. The minister told us, that a few years ago the inhabitants were eight hundred, between the ages of seven and of seventy. Round numbers are seldom exact. But in this case the authority is good, and the errour likely to be little. If to the eight hundred be added what the laws of computation require, they will be increased to at least a thousand; and if the dimensions of the country have been accurately related, every mile maintains more than twenty-five.

This proportion of habitation is greater than the appearance of the country seems to admit; for wherever the eye wanders, it sees much waste and little cultivation. I am more inclined to extend the land, of which no measure has ever been taken, than to diminish the people, who have been really numbered. Let it be supposed, that a computed mile contains a mile and a half, as was commonly found true in the mensuration of the English roads, and we shall then allot nearly twelve to a mile, which agrees much better with ocular observation.

Here, as in Sky, and other islands, are the laird, the tacksmen, and the under-tenants.

Mr. Maclean, the laird, has very extensive posses-

sions, being proprietor, not only of far the greater part of Col, but of the extensive island of Rum, and a very considerable territory in Mull.

Rum is one of the larger islands, almost square, and therefore of great capacity in proportion to its sides. By the usual method of estimating computed extent, it may contain more than a hundred and twenty square miles.

It originally belonged to Clanronald, and was purchased by Col; who, in some dispute about the bargain, made Clanronald prisoner, and kept him nine months in confinement. Its owner represents it as mountainous, rugged, and barren. In the hills there are red deer. The horses are very small, but of a breed eminent for beauty. Col, not long ago, bought one of them from a tenant; who told him that as he was of a shape uncommonly elegant, he could not sell him but at a high price; and that whoever had him should pay a guinea and a half.

There are said to be in Barra a race of horses yet smaller, of which the highest is not above thirty-six inches.

The rent of Rum is not great. Mr. Maclean declared that he should be very rich, if he could set his land at two-pence halfpenny an acre. The inhabitants are fifty-eight families, who continued papists for some time after the laird became a protestant. Their adherence to their old religion was strengthened by the countenance of the laird's sister, a zealous Romanist, till one Sunday as they were going to mass under the conduct of their patroness, Maclean met them on the way, gave one of them a blow on the head with a *yellow stick*, I suppose a cane, for which

the Erse had no name, and drove them to the kirk, from which they have never since departed. Since the use of this method of conversion, the inhabitants of Egg and Canna, who continue papists, call the protestantism of Rum, the religion of the *Yellow Stick*.

The only popish islands are Egg and Canna. Egg is the principal island of a parish, in which, though he has no congregation, the protestant minister resides. I have heard of nothing curious in it, but the cave in which a former generation of the islanders were smothered by Macleod

If we had travelled with more leisure, it had not been fit to have neglected the popish islands. Popery is favourable to ceremony; and among ignorant nations ceremony is the only preservative of tradition. Since protestantism was extended to the savage parts of Scotland, it has perhaps been one of the chief labours of the ministers to abolish stated observances, because they continued the remembrance of the former religion. We therefore, who came to hear old traditions, and see antiquated manners, should probably have found them amongst the papists.

Canna, the other popish island, belongs to Clanronald. It is said not to comprise more than twelve miles of land, and yet maintains as many inhabitants as Rum.

We were at Col under the protection of the young laird, without any of the distresses which Mr. Pennant, in a fit of simple credulity, seems to think almost worthy of an elegy by Ossian. Wherever we roved, we were pleased to see the reverence with

which his subjects regarded him. He did not endeavour to dazzle them by any magnificence of dress: his only distinction was a feather in his bonnet; but as soon as he appeared, they forsook their work and clustered about him: he took them by the hand, and they seemed mutually delighted. He has the proper disposition of a chieftain, and seems desirous to continue the customs of his house. The bagpiper played regularly, when dinner was served, whose person and dress made a good appearance; and he brought no disgrace upon the family of Rankin, which has long supplied the lairds of Col with hereditary musick.

The tacksmen of Col seem to live with less dignity and convenience than those of Sky; where they had good houses, and tables not only plentiful, but delicate. In Col only two houses pay the window tax; for only two have six windows, which, I suppose, are the laird's and Mr. Macsweyn's.

The rents have, till within seven years, been paid in kind, but the tenants finding that cattle and corn varied in their price, desired for the future to give their landlord money; which, not having yet arrived at the philosophy of commerce, they consider as being every year of the same value.

We were told of a particular mode of undertenure. The tacksman admits some of his inferiour neighbours to the cultivation of his grounds, on condition that, performing all the work, and giving a third part of the seed, they shall keep a certain number of cows, sheep, and goats, and reap a third part of the harvest. Thus by less than the tillage of two acres they pay the rent of one.

There are tenants below the rank of tacksmen, that have got smaller tenants under them; for in every place, where money is not the general equivalent, there must be some whose labour is immediately paid by daily food.

A country that has no money, is by no means convenient for beggars, both because such countries are commonly poor, and because charity requires some trouble and some thought. A penny is easily given upon the first impulse of compassion, or impatience of importunity; but few will deliberately search their cupboards or their granaries to find out something to give. A penny is likewise easily spent; but victuals, if they are unprepared, require house-room, and fire, and utensils, which the beggar knows not where to find.

Yet beggars there sometimes are, who wander from island to island. We had in our passage to Mull, the company of a woman and her child, who had exhausted the charity of Col. The arrival of a beggar on an island is accounted a sinistrous event. Every body considers that he shall have the less for what he gives away. Their alms, I believe, is generally oatmeal.

Near to Col is another island called *Tir-eye*, eminent for its fertility. Though it has but half the extent of Rum, it is so well peopled, that there have appeared, not long ago, nine hundred and fourteen at a funeral. The plenty of this island enticed beggars to it, who seemed so burthensome to the inhabitants, that a formal compact was drawn up, by which they obliged themselves to grant no more relief to casual wanderers, because they had among them an

indigent woman of high birth, whom they considered as entitled to all that they could spare. I have read the stipulation, which was indited with juridical formality, but was never made valid by regular subscription.

If the inhabitants of Col have nothing to give, it is not that they are oppressed by their landlord: their leases seem to be very profitable. One farmer, who pays only seven pounds a-year, has maintained seven daughters and three sons, of whom the eldest is educated at Aberdeen for the ministry; and now, at every vacation, opens a school in Col.

Life is here, in some respects, improved beyond the condition of some other islands. In Sky what is wanted can only be bought, as the arrival of some wandering pedlar may afford an opportunity; but in Col there is a standing shop, and in Mull there are two. A shop in the islands, as in other places of little frequentation, is a repository of every thing requisite for common use. Mr. Boswell's journal was filled, and he bought some paper in Col. To a man that ranges the streets of London, where he is tempted to contrive wants for the pleasure of supplying them, a shop affords no image worthy of attention; but in an island it turns the balance of existence between good and evil. To live in perpetual want of little things, is a state not indeed of torture, but of constant vexation. I have in Sky had some difficulty to find ink for a letter; and if a woman breaks her needle, the work is at a stop.

As it is, the islanders are obliged to content themselves with succedaneous means for many common

purposes. I have seen the chief man of a very wide district riding with a halter for a bridle, and governing his hobby with a wooden curb.

The people of Col, however, do not want dexterity to supply some of their necessities. Several arts which make trades, and demand apprenticeships in great cities, are here the practices of daily œconomy In every house candles are made, both moulded and dipped. Their wicks are small shreds of linen cloth. They all know how to extract from the cuddy oil for their lamps. They all tan skins, and make brogues.

As we travelled through Sky, we saw many cottages, but they very frequently stood single on the naked ground. In Col, where the hills opened a place convenient for habitation, we found a petty village, of which every hut had a little garden adjoining; thus they made an appearance of social commerce and mutual offices, and of some attention to convenience and future supply. There is not in the Western Islands any collection of buildings that can make pretensions to be called a town, except in the isle of Lewis, which I have not seen.

If Lewis is distinguished by a town, Col has also something peculiar. The young laird has attempted what no islander perhaps ever thought on. He has begun a road capable of a wheel-carriage. He has carried it about a mile, and will continue it by annual elongation from his house to the harbour.

Of taxes here is no reason for complaining: they are paid by a very easy composition. The malt-tax for Col is twenty shillings. Whisky is very plentiful:

there are several stills in the island, and more is made than the inhabitants consume.

The great business of insular policy is now to keep the people in their own country. As the world has been let in upon them, they have heard of happier climates and less arbitrary government; and if they are disgusted, have emissaries among them ready to offer them land and houses, as a reward for deserting their chief and clan. Many have departed both from the main of Scotland, and from the islands: and all that go may be considered as subjects lost to the British crown; for a nation scattered in the boundless regions of America resembles rays diverging from a focus. All the rays remain, but the heat is gone. Their power consisted in their concentration: when they are dispersed, they have no effect.

It may be thought that they are happier by the change; but they are not happy as a nation, for they are a nation no longer. As they contribute not to the prosperity of any community, they must want that security, that dignity, that happiness, whatever it be, which a prosperous community throws back upon individuals.

The inhabitants of Col have not yet learned to be weary of their heath and rocks, but attend their agriculture and their dairies, without listening to American seducements.

There are some however who think that this emigration has raised terrour disproportionate to its real evil; and that it is only a new mode of doing what was always done. The Highlands, they say, never maintained their natural inhabitants: but the people, when they found themselves too numerous, instead

of extending cultivation, provided for themselves by a more compendious method, and sought better fortune in other countries. They did not indeed go away in collective bodies, but withdrew invisibly, a few at a time; but the whole number of fugitives was not less, and the difference between other times and this, is only the same as between evaporation and effusion.

This is plausible, but I am afraid it is not true. Those who went before, if they were not sensibly missed, as the argument supposes, must have gone either in less number, or in a manner less detrimental, than at present; because formerly there was no complaint. Those who then left the country were generally the idle dependants on overburdened families, or men who had no property; and therefore carried away only themselves. In the present eagerness of emigration, families, and almost communities, go away together. Those who were considered as prosperous and wealthy, sell their stock and carry away the money. Once none went away but the useless and poor; in some parts there is now reason to fear, that none will stay but those who are too poor to remove themselves, and too useless to be removed at the cost of others.

Of antiquity there is not more knowledge in Col than in other places; but every where something may be gleaned.

How ladies were portioned, when there was no money, it would be difficult for an Englishman to guess. In 1649, Maclean of Dronart in Mull married his sister Fingala to Maclean of Col, with a hundred and eighty kine; and stipulated, that if she

became a widow, her jointure should be three hundred and sixty. I suppose some proportionate tract of land was appropriated to their pasturage.

The disposition to pompous and expensive funerals, which has at one time or other prevailed in most parts of the civilized world, is not yet suppressed in the islands, though some of the ancient solemnities are worn away, and singers are no longer hired to attend the procession. Nineteen years ago, at the burial of the laird of Col, were killed thirty cows, and about fifty sheep. The number of the cows is positively told, and we must suppose other victuals in like proportion.

Mr. Maclean informed us of an old game, of which he did not tell the original, but which may perhaps be used in other places, where the reason of it is not yet forgot. At New-year's eve, in the hall or castle of the laird, where, at festal seasons, there may be supposed a very numerous company, one man dresses himself in a cow's hide, upon which other men beat with sticks. He runs with all this noise round the house, which all the company quits in a counterfeited fright; the door is then shut. At New-year's eve there is no great pleasure to be had out of doors in the Hebrides. They are sure soon to recover from their terrour enough to solicit for re-admission; which, for the honour of poetry, is not to be obtained but by repeating a verse, with which those that are knowing and provident take care to be furnished.

Very near the house of Maclean stands the castle of Col, which was the mansion of the laird, till the house was built. It is built upon a rock, as Mr.

Boswell remarked, that it might not be mined. It is very strong, and having been not long uninhabited, is yet in repair. On the wall was, not long ago, a stone with an inscription, importing, that if any man of the clan of Maclonich shall appear before this castle, though he come at midnight, with a man's head in his hand, he shall there find safety and protection against all but the king.

This is an old Highland treaty, made upon a very memorable occasion. Maclean, the son of John Gerves, who recovered Col, and conquered Barra, had obtained, it is said, from James the Second, a grant of the lands of Lochiel, forfeited, I suppose, by some offence against the state.

Forfeited estates were not in those days quietly resigned; Maclean, therefore, went with an armed force to seize his new possessions, and, I know not for what reason, took his wife with him. The Camerons rose in defence of their chief, and a battle was fought at the head of Loch Ness, near the place where Fort Augustus now stands, in which Lochiel obtained the victory, and Maclean, with his followers, was defeated and destroyed.

The lady fell into the hands of the conquerors, and being found pregnant, was placed in the custody of Maclonich, one of a tribe or family branched from Cameron, with orders, if she brought a boy, to destroy him, if a girl, to spare her.

Maclonich's wife, who was with child likewise, had a girl about the same time at which lady Maclean brought a boy; and Maclonich, with more generosity to his captive, than fidelity to his trust, contrived that the children should be changed.

Maclean being thus preserved from death, in time recovered his original patrimony; and in gratitude to his friend, made his castle a place of refuge to any of the clan that should think himself in danger; and as a proof of reciprocal confidence, Maclean took upon himself and his posterity the care of educating the heir of Maclonich.

This story, like all other traditions of the Highlands, is variously related; but though some circumstances are uncertain, the principal fact is true. Maclean undoubtedly owed his preservation to Maclonich; for the treaty between the two families has been strictly observed: it did not sink into disuse and oblivion, but continued in its full force while the chieftains retained their power. I have read a demand of protection, made not more than thirty-seven years ago, for one of the Maclonichs, named Ewen Cameron, who had been accessory to the death of Macmartin, and had been banished by Lochiel, his lord, for a certain term; at the expiration of which he returned married from France; but the Macmartins, not satisfied with the punishment, when he attempted to settle, still threatened him with vengeance. He therefore asked, and obtained, shelter in the isle of Col.

The power of protection subsists no longer; but what the law permits is yet continued, and Maclean of Col now educates the heir of Maclonich.

There still remains in the islands, though it is passing fast away, the custom of fosterage. A laird, a man of wealth and eminence, sends his child, either male or female, to a tacksman, or tenant, to be fostered. It is not always his own tenant, but some

distant friend, that obtains this honour; for an honour such a trust is very reasonably thought. The terms of fosterage seem to vary in different islands. In Mull, the father sends with his child a certain number of cows, to which the same number is added by the fosterer. The father appropriates a proportionable extent of ground, without rent, for their pasturage. If every cow brings a calf, half belongs to the fosterer, and half to the child; but if there be only one calf between two cows, it is the child's, and when the child returns to the parents, it is accompanied by all the cows given, both by the father and by the fosterer, with half of the increase of the stock by propagation. These beasts are considered as a portion, and called Macalive cattle, of which the father has the produce, but is supposed not to have the full property, but to owe the same number to the child, as a portion to the daughter, or a stock for the son.

Children continue with the fosterer perhaps six years, and cannot, where this is the practice, be considered as burdensome. The fosterer, if he gives four cows, receives likewise four, and has, while the child continues with him, grass for eight without rent, with half the calves, and all the milk, for which he pays only four cows when he dismisses his *dalt*, for that is the name for a fostered child.

Fosterage is, I believe, sometimes performed upon more liberal terms. Our friend, the young laird of Col, was fostered by Macsweyn of Grissipol. Macsweyn then lived a tenant to Sir James Macdonald in the isle of Sky; and therefore Col, whether he sent him cattle or not, could grant him no land.

The *dalt*, however, at his return, brought back a considerable number of Macalive cattle, and of the friendship so formed there have been good effects. When Macdonald raised his rents, Macsweyn was, like other tenants, discontented, and, resigning his farm, removed from Sky to Col, and was established at Grissipol.

These observations we made by favour of the contrary wind that drove us to Col, an island not often visited; for there is not much to amuse curiosity, or to attract avarice.

The ground has been hitherto, I believe, used chiefly for pasturage. In a district, such as the eye can command, there is a general herdsman, who knows all the cattle of the neighbourhood, and whose station is upon a hill from which he surveys the lower grounds; and if one man's cattle invade another's grass, drives them back to their own borders. But other means of profit begin to be found; kelp is gathered and burnt, and sloops are loaded with the concreted ashes. Cultivation is likely to be improved by the skill and encouragement of the present heir, and the inhabitants of those obscure valleys will partake of the general progress of life.

The rents of the parts which belong to the duke of Argyle, have been raised from fifty-five to one hundred and five pounds, whether from the land or the sea I cannot tell. The bounties of the sea have lately been so great, that a farm in Southuist has risen in ten years from a rent of thirty pounds to one hundred and eighty.

He who lives in Col, and finds himself condemned to solitary meals, and incommunicable reflection,

will find the usefulness of that middle order of tacksmen, which some who applaud their own wisdom are wishing to destroy. Without intelligence, man is not social, he is only gregarious; and little intelligence will there be, where all are constrained to daily labour, and every mind must wait upon the hand.

After having listened for some days to the tempest, and wandered about the island till our curiosity was satisfied, we began to think about our departure. To leave Col in October was not very easy. We however found a sloop which lay on the coast to carry kelp; and for a price which we thought levied upon our necessities, the master agreed to carry us to Mull, whence we might readily pass back to Scotland.

MULL.

As we were to catch the first favourable breath, we spent the night not very elegantly nor pleasantly in the vessel, and were landed next day at Tabor Morar, a port in Mull, which appears to an unexperienced eye formed for the security of ships; for its mouth is closed by a small island, which admits them through narrow channels into a bason sufficiently capacious. They are indeed safe from the sea, but there is a hollow between the mountains, through which the wind issues from the land with very mischievous violence.

There was no danger while we were there, and we found several other vessels at anchor; so that the port had a very commercial appearance.

The young laird of Col, who had determined not to let us lose his company, while there was any diffi-

culty remaining, came over with us. His influence soon appeared; for he procured us horses, and conducted us to the house of doctor Maclean, where we found very kind entertainment and very pleasing conversation. Miss Maclean, who was born, and had been bred at Glasgow, having removed with her father to Mull, added to other qualifications, a great knowledge of the Erse language, which she had not learned in her childhood, but gained by study, and was the only interpreter of Erse poetry that I could ever find.

The isle of Mull is perhaps in extent the third of the Hebrides. It is not broken by waters, nor shot into promontories, but is a solid and compact mass, of breadth nearly equal to its length. Of the dimensions of the larger islands, there is no knowledge approaching to exactness. I am willing to estimate it as containing about three hundred square miles.

Mull had suffered like Sky by the black winter of seventy-one, in which, contrary to all experience, a continued frost detained the snow eight weeks upon the ground. Against a calamity never known, no provision had been made, and the people could only pine in helpless misery. One tenant was mentioned, whose cattle perished to the value of three hundred pounds; a loss which probably more than the life of man is necessary to repair. In countries like these, the descriptions of famine become intelligible. Where by vigorous and artful cultivation of a soil naturally fertile, there is commonly a superfluous growth both of grain and grass; where the fields are crowded with cattle; and where every hand is able to attract wealth from a distance, by making some-

thing that promotes ease, or gratifies vanity, a dear year produces only a comparative want, which is rather seen than felt, and which terminates commonly in no worse effect, than that of condemning the lower orders of the community to sacrifice a little luxury to convenience, or at most a little convenience to necessity.

But where the climate is unkind and the ground penurious, so that the most fruitful years produce only enough to maintain themselves; where life unimproved, and unadorned, fades into something little more than naked existence, and every one is busy for himself, without any arts by which the pleasure of others may be increased; if to the daily burden of distress any additional weight be added, nothing remains but to despair and die. In Mull the disappointment of a harvest, or a murrain among the cattle, cuts off the regular provision; and they who have no manufactures can purchase no part of the superfluities of other countries. The consequence of a bad season is here not scarcity, but emptiness; and they whose plenty was barely a supply of natural and present need, when that slender stalk fails, must perish with hunger.

All travel has its advantages. If the passenger visits better countries, he may learn to improve his own, and if fortune carries him to worse, he may learn to enjoy it.

Mr. Boswell's curiosity strongly impelled him to survey Iona, or Icolmkill, which was to the early ages the great school of theology, and is supposed to have been the place of sepulture for the ancient kings. I, though less eager, did not oppose him.

That we might perform this expedition, it was necessary to traverse a great part of Mull. We passed a day at Dr. Maclean's, and could have been well contented to stay longer. But Col provided us horses, and we pursued our journey. This was a day of inconvenience, for the country is very rough, and my horse was but little. We travelled many hours through a tract, black and barren, in which, however, there were the reliques of humanity; for we found a ruined chapel in our way.

It is natural, in traversing this gloom of desolation, to enquire, whether something may not be done to give nature a more cheerful face; and whether those hills and moors that afford heath, cannot, with a little care and labour, bear something better? The first thought that occurs is to cover them with trees, for that in many of these naked regions trees will grow, is evident, because stumps and roots are yet remaining; and the speculatist hastily proceeds to censure that negligence and laziness that has omitted for so long a time so easy an improvement.

To drop seeds into the ground, and attend their growth, requires little labour and no skill. He who remembers that all the woods, by which the wants of man have been supplied from the Deluge till now, were self-sown, will not easily be persuaded to think all the art and preparation necessary, which the georgick writers prescribe to planters. Trees certainly have covered the earth with very little culture. They wave their tops among the rocks of Norway, and might thrive as well in the Highlands and Hebrides.

But there is a frightful interval between the seed

and timber. He that calculates the growth of trees, has the unwelcome remembrance of the shortness of life driven hard upon him. He knows that he is doing what will never benefit himself; and when he rejoices to see the stem rise, is disposed to repine that another shall cut it down.

Plantation is naturally the employment of a mind unburdened with care, and vacant to futurity, saturated with present good, and at leisure to derive gratification from the prospect of posterity. He that pines with hunger, is in little care how others shall be fed. The poor man is seldom studious to make his grandson rich. It may be soon discovered, why in a place, which hardly supplies the cravings of necessity, there has been little attention to the delights of fancy, and why distant convenience is unregarded, where the thoughts are turned with incessant solicitude upon every possibility of immediate advantage.

Neither is it quite so easy to raise large woods as may be conceived. Trees intended to produce timber must be sown where they are to grow; and ground sown with trees must be kept useless for a long time, inclosed at an expence from which many will be discouraged by the remoteness of the profit, and watched with that attention, which, in places where it is most needed, will neither be given nor bought. That it cannot be plowed is evident: and if cattle be suffered to graze upon it, they will devour the plants as fast as they rise. Even in coarser countries, where herds and flocks are not fed, not only the deer and the wild goats will browse upon them, but the hare and rabbit will nibble them. It

is therefore reasonable to believe, what I do not remember any naturalist to have remarked, that there was a time when the world was very thinly inhabited by beasts, as well as men, and that the woods had leisure to rise high before animals had bred numbers sufficient to intercept them.

Sir James Macdonald, in part of the wastes of his territory, set or sowed trees, to the number, as I have been told, of several millions, expecting, doubtless, that they would grow up into future navies and cities; but for want of inclosure, and of that care which is always necessary, and will hardly ever be taken, all his cost and labour have been lost, and the ground is likely to continue an useless heath.

Having not any experience of a journey in Mull, we had no doubt of reaching the sea by daylight, and therefore had not left Dr. Maclean's very early. We travelled diligently enough, but found the country, for road there was none, very difficult to pass. We were always struggling with some obstruction or other, and our vexation was not balanced by any gratification of the eye or mind. We were now long enough acquainted with hills and heath to have lost the emotion that they once raised, whether pleasing or painful, and had our mind employed only on our own fatigue. We were however sure, under Col's protection, of escaping all real evils. There was no house in Mull to which he could not introduce us. He had intended to lodge us, for that night, with a gentleman that lived upon the coast, but discovered on the way, that he then lay in bed without hope of life.

We resolved not to embarrass a family, in a time

of so much sorrow, if any other expedient could be found; and as the island of Ulva was over-against us, it was determined that we should pass the strait, and have recourse to the laird, who, like the other gentlemen of the islands, was known to Col. We expected to find a ferry-boat, but when at last we came to the water, the boat was gone.

We were now again at a stop. It was the sixteenth of October, a time when it is not convenient to sleep in the Hebrides without a cover, and there was no house within our reach, but that which we had already declined.

ULVA.

While we stood deliberating, we were happily espied from an Irish ship, that lay at anchor in the strait. The master saw that we wanted a passage, and with great civility sent us his boat, which quickly conveyed us to Ulva, where we were very liberally entertained by Mr. Macquarry.

To Ulva we came in the dark, and left it before noon the next day. A very exact description therefore will not be expected. We were told, that it is an island of no great extent, rough and barren, inhabited by the Macquarrys; a clan not powerful nor numerous, but of antiquity, which most other families are content to reverence. The name is supposed to be a depravation of some other; for the Erse language does not afford it any etymology. Macquarry is proprietor both of Ulva and some adjacent islands, among which is Staffa, so lately raised to renown by Mr. Banks.

When the islanders were reproached with their

ignorance, or insensibility of the wonders of Staffa, they had not much to reply. They had indeed considered it little, because they had always seen it; and none but philosophers, nor they always, are struck with wonder, otherwise than by novelty. How would it surprise an unenlightened ploughman, to hear a company of sober men, enquiring by what power the hand tosses a stone, or why the stone, when it is tossed, falls to the ground!

Of the ancestors of Macquarry, who thus lie hid in his unfrequented island, I have found memorials in all places where they could be expected.

Enquiring after the reliques of former manners, I found that in Ulva, and, I think, no where else, is continued the payment of the *mercheta mulierum;* a fine in old times due to the laird at the marriage of a virgin. The original of this claim, as of our tenure of *borough English,* is variously delivered. It is pleasant to find ancient customs in old families. This payment, like others, was, for want of money, made anciently in the produce of the land. Macquarry was used to demand a sheep, for which he now takes a crown, by that inattention to the uncertain proportion between the value and the denomination of money, which has brought much disorder into Europe. A sheep has always the same power of supplying human wants, but a crown will bring at one time more, at another less.

Ulva was not neglected by the piety of ancient times; it has still to show what was once a church.

INCH KENNETH.

In the morning we went again into the boat, and were landed on Inch Kenneth, an island about a mile long, and perhaps half a mile broad, remarkable for pleasantness and fertility. It is verdant and grassy, and fit both for pasture and tillage; but it has no trees. Its only inhabitants were Sir Allan Maclean and two young ladies, his daughters, with their servants.

Romance does not often exhibit a scene that strikes the imagination more than this little desert in these depths of western obscurity, occupied not by a gross herdsman, or amphibious fisherman, but by a gentleman and two ladies, of high birth, polished manners, and elegant conversation, who, in a habitation raised not very far above the ground, but furnished with unexpected neatness and convenience, practised all the kindness of hospitality, and refinement of courtesy.

Sir Allan is the chieftain of the great clan of Maclean, which is said to claim the second place among the Highland families, yielding only to Macdonald. Though by the misconduct of his ancestors, most of the extensive territory, which would have descended to him, has been alienated, he still retains much of the dignity and authority of his birth. When soldiers were lately wanting for the American war, application was made to Sir Allan, and he nominated a hundred men for the service, who obeyed the summons, and bore arms under his command.

He had then, for some time, resided with the young ladies in Inch Kenneth, where he lives not only with plenty, but with elegance, having con-

veyed to his cottage a collection of books, and what else is necessary to make his hours pleasant.

When we landed, we were met by Sir Allan and the ladies, accompanied by Miss Macquarry, who had passed some time with them, and now returned to Ulva with her father.

We all walked together to the mansion, where we found one cottage for Sir Allan, and, I think, two more for the domesticks and the offices. We entered, and wanted little that palaces afford. Our room was neatly floored, and well lighted; and our dinner, which was dressed in one of the other huts, was plentiful and delicate.

In the afternoon Sir Allan reminded us, that the day was Sunday, which he never suffered to pass without some religious distinction, and invited us to partake in his acts of domestick worship; which I hope neither Mr. Boswell nor myself will be suspected of a disposition to refuse. The elder of the ladies read the English service.

Inch Kenneth was once a seminary of ecclesiasticks, subordinate, I suppose, to Icolmkill. Sir Allan had a mind to trace the foundations of the college, but neither I nor Mr. Boswell, who bends a keener eye on vacancy, were able to perceive them.

Our attention, however, was sufficiently engaged by a venerable chapel, which stands yet entire, except that the roof is gone. It is about sixty feet in length and thirty in breadth. On one side of the altar is a bas-relief of the Blessed Virgin, and by it lies a little bell; which, though cracked, and without a clapper, has remained there for ages guarded only by the venerableness of the place. The ground

round the chapel is covered with grave-stones of chiefs and ladies; and still continues to be a place of sepulture.

Inch Kenneth is a proper prelude to Icolmkill. It was not without some mournful emotion that we contemplated the ruins of religious structures, and the monuments of the dead.

On the next day we took a more distinct view of the place, and went with the boat to see oysters in the bed, out of which the boatmen forced up as many as were wanted. Even Inch Kenneth has a subordinate island, named Sandiland, I suppose in contempt, where we landed, and found a rock, with a surface of perhaps four acres, of which one is naked stone, another spread with sand and shells, some of which I picked up for their glossy beauty, and two covered with a little earth and grass, on which Sir Allan has a few sheep. I doubt not but when there was a college at Inch Kenneth, there was a hermitage upon Sandiland.

Having wandered over those extensive plains, we committed ourselves again to the winds and waters: and after a voyage of about ten minutes, in which we met with nothing very observable, were again safe upon dry ground.

We told Sir Allan our desire of visiting Icolmkill, and entreated him to give us his protection, and his company. He thought proper to hesitate a little; but the ladies hinted, that as they knew he would not finally refuse, he would do better if he preserved the grace of ready compliance. He took their advice, and promised to carry us on the morrow in his boat.

We passed the remaining part of the day in such amusements as were in our power. Sir Allan related the American campaign, and at evening one of the ladies played on her harpsichord, while Col and Mr. Boswell danced a Scottish reel with the other.

We could have been easily persuaded to a longer stay upon Inch Kenneth, but life will not be all passed in delight. The session at Edinburgh was approaching, from which Mr. Boswell could not be absent.

In the morning our boat was ready; it was high and strong. Sir Allan victualled it for the day, and provided able rowers. We now parted from the young laird of Col, who had treated us with so much kindness, and concluded his favours by consigning us to Sir Allan. Here we had the last embrace of this amiable man, who, while these pages were preparing to attest his virtues, perished in the passage between Ulva and Inch Kenneth.

Sir Allan, to whom the whole region was well known, told us of a very remarkable cave, to which he would show us the way. We had been disappointed already by one cave, and were not much elevated by the expectation of another.

It was yet better to see it, and we stopped at some rocks on the coast of Mull. The mouth is fortified by vast fragments of stone, over which we made our way, neither very nimbly, nor very securely. The place, however, well repaid our trouble. The bottom, as far as the flood rushes in, was encumbered with large pebbles, but as we advanced was spread over with smooth sand. The breadth is about forty-five feet; the roof rises in an arch, almost regular, to

a height which we could not measure; but I think it about thirty feet.

This part of our curiosity was nearly frustrated; for though we went to see a cave, and knew that caves are dark, we forgot to carry tapers, and did not discover our omission till we were awakened by our wants. Sir Allan then sent one of the boatmen into the country, who soon returned with one little candle. We were thus enabled to go forward, but could not venture far. Having passed inward from the sea to a great depth, we found on the right hand a narrow passage, perhaps not more than six feet wide, obstructed by great stones, over which we climbed, and came into a second cave in breadth twenty-five feet. The air in this apartment was very warm, but not oppressive, nor loaded with vapours. Our light showed no tokens of a feculent or corrupted atmosphere. Here was a square stone, called, as we are told, *Fingal's table.*

If we had been provided with torches, we should have proceeded in our search, though we had already gone as far as any former adventurer, except some who are reported never to have returned; and measuring our way back, we found it more than a hundred and sixty yards, the eleventh part of a mile.

Our measures were not critically exact, having been made with a walking pole, such as it is convenient to carry in these rocky countries, of which I guessed the length by standing against it. In this there could be no great errour, nor do I much doubt but the Highlander, whom we employed, reported the number right. More nicety, however, is better,

buildings of Icolmkill. Whether it is now inhabited we could not stay to enquire.

At last we came to Icolmkill, but found no convenience for landing. Our boat could not be forced very near the dry ground, and our Highlanders carried us over the water.

We were now treading that illustrious island, which was once the luminary of the Caledonian regions, whence savage clans and roving barbarians derived the benefits of knowledge, and the blessings of religion. To abstract the mind from all local emotion would be impossible, if it were endeavoured, and would be foolish, if it were possible. Whatever withdraws us from the power of our senses; whatever makes the past, the distant, or the future predominate over the present, advances us in the dignity of thinking beings. Far from me and from my friends be such frigid philosophy, as may conduct us indifferent and unmoved over any ground which has been dignified by wisdom, bravery, or virtue. That man is little to be envied, whose patriotism would not gain force upon the plain of Marathon, or whose piety would not grow warmer among the ruins of Iona.

We came too late to visit monuments; some care was necessary for ourselves. Whatever was in the island, Sir Allan could demand, for the inhabitants were Macleans; but having little, they could not give us much. He went to the headman of the island, whom fame, but fame delights in amplifying, represents as worth no less than fifty pounds. He was perhaps proud enough of his guests, but ill prepared for our entertainment; however, he soon pro-

duced more provision than men not luxurious require. Our lodging was next to be provided. We found a barn well stocked with hay, and made our beds as soft as we could.

In the morning we rose and surveyed the place. The churches of the two convents are both standing, though unroofed. They were built of unhewn stone, but solid, and not inelegant. I brought away rude measures of the buildings, such as I cannot much trust myself, inaccurately taken, and obscurely noted. Mr. Pennant's delineations, which are doubtless exact, have made my unskilful description less necessary.

The episcopal church consists of two parts, separated by the belfry, and built at different times. The original church had, like others, the altar at one end, and tower at the other; but as it grew too small, another building of equal dimension was added, and the tower then was necessarily in the middle.

That these edifices are of different ages seems evident. The arch of the first church is Roman, being part of a circle; that of the additional building is pointed, and therefore Gothick or Saracenical; the tower is firm, and wants only to be floored and covered.

Of the chambers or cells belonging to the monks, there are some walls remaining, but nothing approaching to a complete apartment.

The bottom of the church is so encumbered with mud and rubbish, that we could make no discoveries of curious inscriptions, and what there are have been already published. The place is said to be known where the black stones lie concealed, on which the

old Highland chiefs, when they made contracts and alliances, used to take the oath, which was considered as more sacred than any other obligation, and which could not be violated without the blackest infamy. In those days of violence and rapine, it was of great importance to impress upon savage minds the sanctity of an oath, by some particular and extraordinary circumstances. They would not have recourse to the black stones, upon small or common occasions, and when they had established their faith by this tremendous sanction, inconstancy and treachery were no longer feared.

The chapel of the nunnery is now used by the inhabitants as a kind of general cowhouse, and the bottom is consequently too miry for examination. Some of the stones which covered the later abbesses have inscriptions, which might yet be read, if the chapel were cleansed. The roof of this, as of all the other buildings, is totally destroyed, not only because timber quickly decays when it is neglected, but because in an island utterly destitute of wood, it was wanted for use, and was consequently the first plunder of needy rapacity.

The chancel of the nuns' chapel is covered with an arch of stone, to which time has done no injury; and a small apartment communicating with the choir, on the north side, like the chapter-house in cathedrals, roofed with stone in the same manner, is likewise entire.

In one of the churches was a marble altar, which the superstition of the inhabitants has destroyed. Their opinion was, that a fragment of this stone was a defence against shipwrecks, fire, and miscarriages.

In one corner of the church the basin for holy water is yet unbroken.

The cemetery of the nunnery was, till very lately, regarded with such reverence, that only women were buried in it. These reliques of veneration always produce some mournful pleasure. I could have forgiven a great injury more easily than the violation of this imaginary sanctity.

South of the chapel stand the walls of a large room, which was probably the hall, or refectory of the nunnery. This apartment is capable of repair. Of the rest of the convent there are only fragments.

Besides the two principal churches, there are, I think, five chapels yet standing, and three more remembered. There are also crosses, of which two bear the names of St. John and St. Matthew.

A large space of ground about these consecrated edifices is covered with grave-stones, few of which have any inscription. He that surveys it, attended by an insular antiquary, may be told where the kings of many nations are buried, and if he loves to sooth his imagination with the thoughts that naturally rise in places where the great and the powerful lie mingled with the dust, let him listen in submissive silence; for if he asks any questions, his delight is at an end.

Iona has long enjoyed, without any very credible attestation, the honour of being reputed the cemetery of the Scottish kings. It is not unlikely, that, when the opinion of local sanctity was prevalent, the chieftains of the isles, and perhaps some of the Norwegian or Irish princes, were reposited in this vene-

rable inclosure. But by whom the subterraneous vaults are peopled is now utterly unknown. The graves are very numerous, and some of them undoubtedly contain the remains of men, who did not expect to be so soon forgotten.

Not far from this awful ground may be traced the garden of the monastery: the fishponds are yet discernible, and the aqueduct which supplied them is still in use.

There remains a broken building, which is called the Bishop's House, I know not by what authority. It was once the residence of some man above the common rank, for it has two stories and a chimney. We were shown a chimney at the other end, which was only a niche, without perforation; but so much does antiquarian credulity, or patriotick vanity prevail, that it was not much more safe to trust the eye of our instructor than the memory.

There is in the island one house more, and only one, that has a chimney; we entered it, and found it neither wanting repair nor inhabitants; but to the farmers, who now possess it, the chimney is of no great value; for their fire was made on the floor, in the middle of the room, and notwithstanding the dignity of their mansion, they rejoiced, like their neighbours, in the comforts of smoke.

It is observed, that ecclesiastical colleges are always in the most pleasant and fruitful places. While the world allowed the monks their choice, it is surely no dishonour that they chose well. This island is remarkably fruitful. The village near the churches is said to contain seventy families, which, at five in a family, is more than a hundred inhabitants to a mile.

There are perhaps other villages; yet both corn and cattle are annually exported.

But the fruitfulness of Iona is now its whole prosperity. The inhabitants are remarkably gross, and remarkably neglected: I know not if they are visited by any minister. The island, which was once the metropolis of learning and piety, has now no school for education, nor temple for worship, only two inhabitants that can speak English, and not one that can write or read.

The people are of the clan of Maclean; and though Sir Allan had not been in the place for many years, he was received with all the reverence due to their chieftain. One of them being sharply reprehended by him, for not sending him some rum, declared after his departure, in Mr. Boswell's presence, that he had no design of disappointing him, "for (said he) I would cut my bones for him; and if he had sent his dog for it, he should have had it."

When we were to depart, our boat was left by the ebb at a great distance from the water, but no sooner did we wish it afloat, than the islanders gathered round it, and, by the union of many hands, pushed it down the beach; every man who could contribute his help seemed to think himself happy in the opportunity of being, for a moment, useful to his chief.

We now left those illustrious ruins, by which Mr. Boswell was much affected, nor would I willingly be thought to have looked upon them without some emotion. Perhaps, in the revolutions of the world, Iona may be sometime again the instructress of the western regions.

It was no long voyage to Mull, where, under Sir Allan's protection, we landed in the evening, and were entertained for the night by Mr. Maclean, a minister that lives upon the coast, whose elegance of conversation, and strength of judgment, would make him conspicuous in places of greater celebrity. Next day we dined with Dr. Maclean, another physician, and then travelled on to the house of a very powerful laird, Maclean of Lochbuy; for in this country every man's name is Maclean.

Where races are thus numerous, and thus combined, none but the chief of a clan is addressed by his name. The laird of Dunvegan is called Macleod, but other gentlemen of the same family are denominated by the places where they reside, as *Raasay* or *Talisker*. The distinction of the meaner people is made by their christian names. In consequence of this practice, the late laird of Macfarlane, an eminent genealogist, considered himself as disrespectfully treated, if the common addition was applied to him. Mr. Macfarlane, said he, may with equal propriety be said to many; but I, and I only, am Macfarlane.

Our afternoon journey was through a country of such gloomy desolation, that Mr. Boswell thought no part of the Highlands equally terrifick, yet we came without any difficulty, at evening, to Lochbuy, where we found a true Highland laird, rough and haughty, and tenacious of his dignity: who, hearing my name, enquired whether I was of the Johnstons of Glencoe, or of Ardnamurchan?

Lochbuy has, like the other insular chieftains, quitted the castle that sheltered his ancestors, and

lives near it, in a mansion not very spacious or splendid. I have seen no houses in the islands much to be envied for convenience or magnificence, yet they bear testimony to the progress of arts and civility, as they show that rapine and surprise are no longer dreaded, and are much more commodious than the ancient fortresses.

The castles of the Hebrides, many of which are standing, and many ruined, were always built upon points of land, on the margin of the sea. For the choice of this situation there must have been some general reason, which the change of manners has left in obscurity. They were of no use in the days of piracy, as defences of the coast; for it was equally accessible in other places. Had they been sea-marks or light-houses, they would have been of more use to the invader than the natives, who could want no such directions on their own waters: for a watch-tower, a cottage on a hill would have been better, as it would have commanded a wider view.

If they be considered merely as places of retreat, the situation seems not well chosen; for the laird of an island is safest from foreign enemies in the centre: on the coast he might be more suddenly surprised than in the inland parts; and the invaders, if their enterprise miscarried, might more easily retreat. Some convenience, however, whatever it was, their position on the shore afforded; for uniformity of practice seldom continues long without good reason.

A castle in the islands is only a single tower of three or four stories, of which the walls are sometimes eight or nine feet thick, with narrow windows, and close winding stairs of stone. The top rises in

a cone, or pyramid of stone, encompassed by battlements. The intermediate floors are sometimes frames of timber, as in common houses, and sometimes arches of stone, or alternately stone and timber; so that there was very little danger from fire. In the centre of every floor, from top to bottom, is the chief room, of no great extent, round which there are narrow cavities, or recesses formed by small vacuities, or by a double wall. I know not whether there be ever more than one fire-place. They had not capacity to contain many people, or much provision; but their enemies could seldom stay to blockade them; for if they failed in their first attack, their next care was to escape.

The walls were always too strong to be shaken by such desultory hostilities; the windows were too narrow to be entered, and the battlements too high to be scaled. The only danger was at the gates, over which the wall was built with a square cavity not unlike a chimney, continued to the top. Through this hollow the defendants let fall stones upon those who attempted to break the gate, and poured down water, perhaps scalding water, if the attack was made with fire. The castle of Lochbuy was secured by double doors, of which the outer was an iron grate.

In every castle is a well and a dungeon. The use of the well is evident. The dungeon is a deep subterraneous cavity, walled on the sides, and arched on the top, into which the descent is through a narrow door, by a ladder or a rope, so that it seems impossible to escape, when the rope or ladder is drawn up. The dungeon was, I suppose, in war, a

prison for such captives as were treated with severity; and in peace, for such delinquents as had committed crimes within the laird's jurisdiction; for the mansions of many lairds were, till the late privation of their privileges, the halls of justice to their own tenants.

As these fortifications were the productions of mere necessity, they are built only for safety, with little regard to convenience, and with none to elegance or pleasure. It was sufficient for a laird of the Hebrides, if he had a strong house, in which he could hide his wife and children from the next clan. That they are not large nor splendid is no wonder. It is not easy to find how they are raised, such as they are, by men who had no money, in countries where the labourers and artificers could scarcely be fed. The buildings in different parts of the islands show their degrees of wealth and power. I believe that for all the castles which I have seen beyond the Tweed, the ruins yet remaining of some one of those which the English built in Wales, would supply materials.

These castles afford another evidence that the fictions of romantick chivalry had for their basis the real manners of the feudal times, when every lord of a seignory lived in his hold lawless and unaccountable, with all the licentiousness and insolence of uncontested superiority and unprincipled power. The traveller, whoever he might be, coming to the fortified habitation of a chieftain, would, probably, have been interrogated from the battlements, admitted with caution at the gate, introduced to a petty monarch, fierce with habitual hos-

and having learned, that nominal and real value may differ, they now tell no such stories, lest the foreigner should happen to collect, not that eggs are many, but that pence are few.

Money and wealth have, by the use of commercial language, been so long confounded, that they are commonly supposed to be the same; and this prejudice has spread so widely in Scotland, that I know not whether I found man or woman, whom I interrogated concerning payments of money, that could surmount the illiberal desire of deceiving me, by representing every thing as dearer than it is.

From Lochbuy we rode a very few miles to the side of Mull, which faces Scotland, where, having taken leave of our kind protector, Sir Allan, we embarked in a boat, in which the seat provided for our accommodation was a heap of rough brushwood; and on the twenty-second of October reposed at a tolerable inn on the main land.

On the next day we began our journey southwards. The weather was tempestuous. For half the day the ground was rough, and our horses were still small. Had they required much restraint, we might have been reduced to difficulties; for, I think, we had amongst us but one bridle. We fed the poor animals liberally, and they performed their journey well. In the latter part of the day we came to a firm and smooth road, made by the soldiers, on which we travelled with great security, busied with contemplating the scene about us. The night came on while we had yet a great part of the way to go, though not so dark but that we could discern the cataracts which poured down the hills on one side, and fell

into one general channel that ran with great violence on the other. The wind was loud, the rain was heavy, and the whistling of the blast, the fall of the shower, the rush of the cataracts, and the roar of the torrent, made a nobler chorus of the rough musick of nature than it had ever been my chance to hear before. The streams which ran across the way from the hills to the main current, were so frequent, that after a while I began to count them; and, in ten miles, reckoned fifty-five, probably missing some, and having let some pass before they forced themselves upon my notice. At last we came to Inverary, where we found an inn, not only commodious, but magnificent.

The difficulties of peregrination were now at an end. Mr. Boswell had the honour of being known to the duke of Argyle, by whom we were very kindly entertained at his splendid seat, and supplied with conveniencies for surveying his spacious park and rising forests.

After two days stay at Inverary we proceeded southward over Glencroe, a black and dreary region, now made easily passable by a military road, which rises from either end of the glen by an acclivity not dangerously steep, but sufficiently laborious. In the middle, at the top of the hill, is a seat with this inscription, *Rest and be thankful.* Stones were placed to mark the distances, which the inhabitants have taken away, resolved, they said, *to have no new miles.*

In this rainy season the hills streamed with waterfalls, which, crossing the way, formed currents on the other side, that ran in contrary directions as they fell to the north or south of the summit. Being, by

the favour of the duke, well mounted, I went up and down the hill with great convenience.

From Glencroe we passed through a pleasant country to the banks of Loch Lomond, and were received at the house of Sir James Colquhoun, who is owner of almost all the thirty islands of the loch, which we went in a boat next morning to survey. The heaviness of the rain shortened our voyage, but we landed on one island planted with yew, and stocked with deer, and on another containing perhaps not more than half an acre, remarkable for the ruins of an old castle, on which the osprey builds her annual nest. Had Loch Lomond been in a happier climate, it would have been the boast of wealth and vanity to own one of the little spots which it incloses, and to have employed upon it all the arts of embellishment. But as it is, the islets, which court the gazer at a distance, disgust him at his approach, when he finds instead of soft lawns and shady thickets, nothing more than uncultivated ruggedness.

Where the loch discharges itself into a river called the Leven, we passed a night with Mr. Smollet, a relation of doctor Smollet, to whose memory he has raised an obelisk on the bank near the house in which he was born. The civility and respect which we found at every place, it is ungrateful to omit, and tedious to repeat. Here we were met by a post-chaise, that conveyed us to Glasgow.

To describe a city so much frequented as Glasgow, is unnecessary. The prosperity of its commerce appears by the greatness of many private houses, and a general appearance of wealth. It is the only

episcopal city whose cathedral was left standing in the rage of reformation. It is now divided into many separate places of worship, which, taken all together, compose a great pile, that had been some centuries in building, but was never finished; for the change of religion intercepted its progress, before the cross isle was added, which seems essential to a Gothick cathedral.

The college has not had a sufficient share of the increasing magnificence of the place. The session was begun; for it commences on the tenth of October, and continues to the tenth of June, but the students appeared not numerous, being, I suppose, not yet returned from their several homes. The division of the academical year into one session, and one recess, seems to me better accommodated to the present state of life, than that variegation of time by terms and vacations, derived from distant centuries, in which it was probably convenient, and still continued in the English universities. So many solid months as the Scotch scheme of education joins together, allow and encourage a plan for each part of the year; but with us, he that has settled himself to study in the college is soon tempted into the country, and he that has adjusted his life in the country, is summoned back to his college.

Yet when I have allowed to the universities of Scotland a more rational distribution of time, I have given them, so far as my enquiries have informed me, all that they can claim. The students, for the most part, go thither boys and depart before they are men; they carry with them little fundamental knowledge, and therefore the superstructure cannot

be lofty. The grammar-schools are not generally well supplied; for the character of a schoolmaster being there less honourable than in England, is seldom accepted by men who are capable to adorn it, and where the school has been deficient, the college can effect little.

Men bred in the universities of Scotland cannot be expected to be often decorated with the splendours of ornamental erudition, but they obtain a mediocrity of knowledge, between learning and ignorance, not inadequate to the purposes of common life, which is, I believe, very widely diffused among them, and which, countenanced in general by a national combination, so invidious, that their friends cannot defend it, and actuated in particulars by a spirit of enterprise, so vigorous, that their enemies are constrained to praise it, enables them to find, or to make their way to employment, riches, and distinction.

From Glasgow we directed our course to Auchinleck, an estate devolved, through a long series of ancestors, to Mr. Boswell's father, the present possessor. In our way we found several places remarkable enough in themselves, but already described by those who viewed them at more leisure, or with much more skill; and stopped two days at Mr. Campbell's, a gentleman married to Mr. Boswell's sister.

Auchinleck, which signifies a *stony field*, seems not now to have any particular claim to its denomination. It is a district generally level, and sufficiently fertile, but, like all the western side of Scotland, incommoded by very frequent rain. It was, with the

rest of the country, generally naked, till the present possessor finding, by the growth of some stately trees near his old castle, that the ground was favourable enough to timber, adorned it very diligently with annual plantations.

Lord Auchinleck, who is one of the judges of Scotland, and therefore not wholly at leisure for domestick business or pleasure, has yet found time to make improvements in his patrimony. He has built a house of hewn stone, very stately and durable, and has advanced the value of his lands with great tenderness to his tenants.

I was, however, less delighted with the elegance of the modern mansion, than with the sullen dignity of the old castle. I clambered with Mr. Boswell among the ruins, which afford striking images of ancient life. It is, like other castles, built upon a point of rock, and was, I believe, anciently surrounded with a moat. There is another rock near it, to which the draw-bridge, when it was let down, is said to have reached. Here, in the ages of tumult and rapine, the laird was surprised and killed by the neighbouring chief, who perhaps might have extinguished the family, had he not in a few days been seized and hanged, together with his sons, by Douglas, who came with his forces to the relief of Auchinleck.

At no great distance from the house runs a pleasing brook, by a red rock, out of which has been hewn a very agreeable and commodious summer-house, at less expence, as lord Auchinleck told me, than would have been required to build a room of the same dimensions. The rock seems to have no

more dampness than any other wall. Such opportunities of variety it is judicious not to neglect.

We now returned to Edinburgh, where I passed some days with men of learning, whose names want no advancement from my commemoration, or with women of elegance, which perhaps disclaims a pedant's praise.

The conversation of the Scots grows every day less unpleasing to the English; their peculiarities wear fast away; their dialect is likely to become in half a century provincial and rustick, even to themselves. The great, the learned, the ambitious, and the vain, all cultivate the English phrase, and the English pronunciation, and in splendid companies Scotch is not much heard, except now and then from an old lady.

There is one subject of philosophical curiosity to be found in Edinburgh, which no other city has to show; a college of the deaf and dumb, who are taught to speak, to read, to write, and to practise arithmetick, by a gentleman, whose name is Braidwood. The number which attends him is, I think, about twelve, which he brings together into a little school, and instructs according to their several degrees of proficiency.

I do not mean to mention the instruction of the deaf as new. Having been first practised upon the son of a constable of Spain, it was afterwards cultivated with much emulation in England, by Wallis and Holder, and was lately professed by Mr. Baker, who once flattered me with hopes of seeing his method published. How far any former teachers have succeeded, it is not easy to know; the improvement

of Mr. Braidwood's pupils is wonderful. They not only speak, write, and understand what is written, but if he that speaks looks towards them, and modifies his organs by distinct and full utterance, they know so well what is spoken, that it is an expression scarcely figurative to say they hear with the eye. That any have attained to the power mentioned by Burnet, of feeling sounds, by laying a hand on the speaker's mouth, I know not; but I have seen so much, that I can believe more; a single word, or a short sentence, I think, may possibly be so distinguished.

It will be readily supposed by those that consider this subject, that Mr. Braidwood's scholars spell accurately. Orthography is vitiated among such as learn first to speak and then to write, by imperfect notions of the relation between letters and vocal utterance; but to those students every character is of equal importance; for letters are to them not symbols of names, but of things; when they write, they do not represent a sound, but delineate a form.

This school I visited, and found some of the scholars waiting for their master, whom they are said to receive at his entrance with smiling countenances and sparkling eyes, delighted with the hope of new ideas. One of the young ladies had her slate before her, on which I wrote a question consisting of three figures, to be multiplied by two figures. She looked upon it, and quivering her fingers in a manner which I thought very pretty, but of which I knew not whether it was art or play, multiplied the sum regularly in two lines, observing the decimal place; but did not add the two lines together, probably dis-

daining so easy an operation. I pointed at the place where the sum total should stand, and she noted it with such expedition as seemed to show that she had it only to write.

It was pleasing to see one of the most desperate of human calamities capable of so much help: whatever enlarges hope, will exalt courage; after having seen the deaf taught arithmetick, who would be afraid to cultivate the Hebrides?

Such are the things which this journey has given me an opportunity of seeing, and such are the reflections which that sight has raised. Having passed my time almost wholly in cities, I may have been surprised by modes of life and appearances of nature, that are familiar to men of wider survey and more varied conversation. Novelty and ignorance must always be reciprocal, and I cannot but be conscious that my thoughts on national manners, are the thoughts of one who has seen but little.

SERMONS.

[As the present edition of Dr. Johnson's Works may be thought imperfect without a specimen of the Sermons *attributed* to him, and left for publication by Dr. Taylor, for whom he wrote them, we now subjoin Sermon X. and Sermon XXV.]

SERMON X.

GALATIANS, C. vi. V. 7.

Be not deceived, God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he reap.

ONE of the mighty blessings bestowed upon us by the christian revelation, is, that we have now a certain knowledge of a future state, and of the rewards and punishments that await us after death, and will be adjusted according to our conduct in this world. We, on whom the light of the gospel shines, walk no longer in darkness, doubtful of the benefit of *good*, or the danger of *bad* actions; we know, that we live and act under the eye of our Father and our Judge, by whom nothing is overlooked or forgotten, and who, though to try our obedience he suffers, in the present state of things, the same events to happen to the good and to the evil, will at last certainly distinguish them, by allotting them different conditions beyond the grave; when it will appear, in the sight of men and of angels, how amiable is godliness, and how odious is sin; by the final sentence, which shall bring upon man the consequences of his

own actions, so as, that *whatsoever a man shall sow, that shall he reap.*

The ancient heathens, with whose notions we are acquainted, how far soever they might have carried their speculations of moral or civil wisdom, had no conception of a future state, except idle fictions, which those who considered them treated as ridiculous; or dark conjectures, formed by men of deep thoughts and great enquiry, but neither, in themselves, capable of compelling conviction, nor brought at all to the knowledge of the gross of mankind, of those who lived in pleasure and idleness, or in solitude and labour; they were confined to the closet of the student, or the school of the lecturer, and were very little diffused among the busy or the vulgar.

There is no reason to wonder, that many enormities should prevail where there was nothing to oppose them. When we consider the various and perpetual temptations of appetite within, and interest without; when we see, that on every side there is something that solicits the desires, and which cannot be innocently obtained; what can we then expect, but that, notwithstanding all the securities of the law, and all the vigilance of magistrates, those that know of no other world will eagerly make the most of this, and please themselves whenever they can, with very little regard to the right of others?

As the state of the heathens was a state of darkness, it must have been a state likewise, of disorder; a state of perpetual contest for the goods of this life, and by consequence of perpetual danger to those who *abounded,* and of temptation to those that were in *want.*

The Jews enjoyed a very ample communication of the divine will, and had a religion which an inspired legislator had prescribed. But even to this nation, the only nation free from idolatry, and acquainted with the perfections of the *true* God, was the doctrine of a future state so obscurely revealed, that it was not *necessarily* consequential to the reception, or observation, of their *practical* religion. The Sadducees who *acknowledged* the authority of the Mosaical law, yet *denied* the separate existence of the soul—had no expectation of a future state. They held that there was no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit.

This was not in those times the *general* state of the Jewish nation; the Pharisees held the resurrection, and with them probably far the greater part of the people; but that any man could be a Jew, and yet deny a future state, is a sufficient proof that it had not yet been *clearly revealed*, and that it was reserved for the preachers of christianity to bring life and immortality to light. In such a degree of light they are now placed, that they can be denied or doubted no longer, but as the *Gospel*, that shews them, is doubted or denied. It is now certain that we are *here*, not in our *total*, nor in our *ultimate existence*, but in a state of exercise and probation, commanded to qualify ourselves, by pure hearts and virtuous actions, for the enjoyment of future felicity in the presence of God; and prohibited to break the laws which his wisdom has given us, under the penal sanction of banishment from *heaven* into *regions of misery*.

Yet, notwithstanding the express declaration of our

Saviour, and the constant reference of our actions and duties to a future state, throughout the whole volume of the New Testament; there are yet, as in the apostles' time, men who are deceived, who act as if they thought God would be mocked or deluded, and who appear to forget, that *whatsoever a man sows, that shall he reap.*

From this important caution, given by the apostle immediately to those whom he was then directing, and consequently to all professors of the religion of Christ, occasion may be taken to consider,

First, how sinners *are deceived.*

Secondly, how certain it is, that *God is not mocked.*

Thirdly, in what sense it is to be understood, that, *whatsoever a man sows, that shall he reap.*

In examining, first, how sinners are deceived, it will immediately occur to us, that no man is deceived to his damnation, but by the devil himself. The subtleties of the devil are undoubtedly many; he has probably the power of presenting opportunities of sin, and at the same time of inflaming the passions, of suggesting evil desires, and interrupting holy meditations; but his power is so limited by the Governor of the universe, that he cannot hurt us without our own consent; his power is but like that of a wicked companion, who may solicit us to crimes or follies, but with whom we feel no necessity of complying; he therefore that yields to temptation has the greater part in his own destruction; he has been warned of his danger, he has been taught his duty; and if these warnings and instructions have had no

effect, he may be said voluntarily to desert the right way, and not so much to be deceived by another, as to deceive himself.

Of self-deceit, in the great business of our lives, there are various modes. The far greater part of mankind deceive themselves, by willing negligence, by refusing to think on their real state, lest such thoughts should trouble their quiet, or interrupt their pursuits. To live religiously, is to walk, not by sight, but by faith; to act in confidence of things unseen, in hope of future recompense, and in fear of future punishment. To abstract the thoughts from things spiritual is not difficult: things future do not obtrude themselves upon the senses, and therefore easily give way to external objects. He that is willing to forget religion may quickly lose it; and that most men are willing to forget it, experience informs us. If we look into the gay or the busy world, we see every eye directed towards pleasure or advantage, and every hour filled with expectation, or occupied by employment, and day passed after day in the enjoyment of success, or the vexation of disappointment.

Nor is it true only of men who are engaged in enterprises of hazard, which restrain the faculties to the utmost, and keep attention always upon the stretch. Religion is not only neglected by the projector and adventurer, by men who suspend their happiness on the slender thread of artifice, or stand tottering upon the point of chance. For, if we visit the most cool regular parts of the community, if we turn our eye to the farm, or to the shop, where one year glides

uniformly after another, and nothing new or important is either expected or dreaded; yet still the same indifference about eternity will be found. There is no interest so small, nor engagement so slight, but that, if it be followed and expanded, it may be sufficient to keep religion out of the thoughts. Many men may be observed, not agitated by very violent passions, nor overborne by any powerful habits, nor depraved by any great degrees of wickedness; men who are honest dealers, faithful friends, and inoffensive neighbours; who yet have no vital principle of religion; who live wholly without self-examination; and indulge any desire that happens to arise, with very little resistance or compunction; who hardly know what it is to combat a temptation, or to repent of a fault; but go on, neither self-approved, nor self-condemned; not endeavouring after any excellence, nor reforming any vicious practice or irregular desire. They have no care of futurity; neither is God in all their thoughts; they direct none of their actions to his glory, they do nothing with the hope of pleasing, they avoid nothing for the fear of offending him. Those men want not much of being religious; they have nothing more than casual views to reform, and, from being peaceable and temperate heathens, might, if they would once awaken to their eternal interest, become pious and exemplary Christians. But let them not be deceived; they cannot suppose that God will accept him who never wished to be accepted by him, or made his will the rule of action.

Others there are, who, without attending to the written revelation of God's will, form to themselves a

scheme of conduct in which vice is mingled with virtue, and who cover from themselves, and hope to cover from God, the indulgence of some criminal desire, or the continuance of some vicious habit, by a few splendid instances of public spirit, or some few effusions of occasional bounty. But to these men it may, with emphatical propriety, be urged, that God is not mocked; he will not be worshipped nor obeyed, but according to his own laws.

The mode of self-deception which prevails most in the world, and by which the greatest number of souls is at last betrayed to destruction, is the art which we are all too apt to practise, of putting far from us the evil day, of setting the hour of death, and the day of account, at a great distance.

That death is certain, every one knows; nor is it less known, that life is destroyed, at all ages, by a thousand causes; that the strong and the vigorous are liable to diseases, and that caution and temperance afford no security against the final stroke. Yet, as the thought of dissolution is dreadful, we do not willingly admit it; the desire of life is connected with animation; every living being shrinks from his destruction; to wish, and to hope, are never far asunder; as we wish for long life, we hope that our wishes will be granted; and what we hope, we either believe, or do not examine. So tenaciously does our credulity lay hold of life, that it is rare to find any man so old as not to expect an addition to his years, or so far wasted and enfeebled with disease, as not to flatter himself with hopes of recovery.

To those who procrastinate amendment in hopes of better opportunities in future time, it is too often

vainly urged by the preacher, and vainly suggested by a thousand examples, that the hour of death is uncertain. This, which ought to be the cause of their terrour, is the ground of their hope; that, as death is uncertain, it may be distant. This uncertainty is, in effect, the great support of the whole system of life. The man who died yesterday had purchased an estate, to which he intended some time to retire; or built a house, which he was hereafter to inhabit; and planted gardens and groves, that, in a certain number of years, were to supply delicacies to his feasts, and shades to his meditations. He is snatched away, and has left his designs and his labours to others.

As men please themselves with felicities to be enjoyed in the days of leisure and retreat; so among these felicities, it is not uncommon to design a reformation of life, and a course of piety. Among the more enlightened and judicious part of mankind, there are many who live in a continual disapprobation of their own conduct, who know, that they do every day what they ought to leave undone, and every day leave undone what they ought to do; and who therefore consider themselves as living under the divine displeasure, in a state in which it would be very dangerous to die. Such men answer the reproaches of conscience with sincerity and intention of performance, but which they consider as debts to be discharged at some remote time. They neither sin with stupid negligence, nor with impious defiance of the divine laws; they fear the punishments denounced against sin, but pacify their anxiety with possibilities of repentance, and with a plan of life to

be led according to the strict precepts of religion, and to be closed at last by a death softened by holy consolations. Projects of future piety are perhaps not less common than of future pleasure, and are, as there is reason to fear, not less commonly interrupted; with this dreadful difference, that he who misses his intended pleasure, escapes a disappointment; but he who is cut off before the season of repentance, is exposed to the vengeance of an angry God.

Whoever has been deluded by this infatuation, and has hitherto neglected those duties which he intends some time to perform, is admonished, by all the principles of prudence, and all the course of nature, to consider, how much he ventures, and with how little probability in his favour. The continuance of life, though, like all other things, adjusted by Providence, may be properly considered by us casual; and wisdom always directs us, not to leave that to chance which may be made certain, and not to venture any thing upon chance which it will much hurt us to lose.

He who, accused by his conscience of habitual disobedience, defers his reformation, apparently leaves his soul in the power of chance. We are in full possession of the *present* moment; let the *present* moment be improved; let that which must necessarily be done some time, be no longer neglected. Let us remember, that if our lot should fall otherwise than we suppose; if we are of the number of them to whom length of life is not granted; we lose what can never be recovered, and what will never be recompensed, the mercy of God, and the joys of futurity.

That long life is not commonly granted, is sufficiently apparent; for life is called long, not as being, at its greatest length, of much duration, but as being longer than common. Since therefore the common condition of man is not to live long, we have no reason to conclude that what happens to few will happen to us.

But, to abate our confidence in our own resolutions, it is to be remembered, that though we should arrive at the great year, destined for the change of life, it is by no means certain that we shall effect what we have purposed. Age is shackled with infirmity and diseases. Immediate pain and present vexation will then do what amusement and gaiety did before, will enchain the attention, and occupy the thoughts, and leave little vacancy for the past or future. Whoever suffers great pain, has no other care than to obtain ease; and if ease is for a time obtained, he values it too much, to lessen it by painful reflection.

Neither is an efficacious repentance so easy a work, as that we may be sure of performing it, at the time appointed by ourselves. The longer habits have been indulged, the more imperious they become; it is not by bidding them to be gone, that we can at once dismiss them; they may be suppressed and lie dormant for a time, and resume their force, at an unexpected moment, by some sudden temptation; they can be subdued only by continued caution and repeated conflicts.

The longer sin has been indulged, the more irksome will be the retrospect of life. So much uneasiness will be suffered, at the review of years spent in

vicious enjoyment, that there is reason to fear, lest that delay, which began in the love of pleasure, will be continued for fear of pain.

Neither is it certain, that the grace, without which no man can correct his own corruption, when it has been offered and refused, will be offered again; or that he who stopped his ears against the first call, will be vouchsafed a second. *He* cannot expect to be received among the servants of God, who will obey him only at his own time; for such presumption is, in some degree, a mockery of God; and we are to consider, secondly, how certain it is, that God is not mocked.

God is not mocked in any sense. He will not be mocked with counterfeit piety, he will not be mocked with idle resolutions; but the sense in which the text declares, that God is not mocked, seems to be, that God will not suffer his decrees to be invalidated; he will not leave his promises unfulfilled, nor his threats unexecuted. And this will easily appear, if we consider, that promises and threats can only become ineffectual by change of mind, or want of power. God cannot change his will; *he is not a man that he should repent*; what he has spoken will surely come to pass. Neither can he want power to execute his purposes; he who spoke, and the world was made, can speak again, and it will perish. God's *arm is not shortened, that he cannot save;* neither is it shortened, that he cannot punish; and that he will do to every man according to his works, will be shown, when we have considered,

Thirdly, in what sense it is to be understood, that whatsoever a man sows, that shall he reap.

To sow and to reap are figurative terms. To sow, signifies to act; and to reap, is to receive the product of our actions. As no man can sow one sort of grain, and reap another, in the ordinary process of nature; as no man gathers grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles, or when he scatters tares in the furrows, gathers wheat into his garners; so, in the final dispensations of Providence, the same correspondence shall be found in the moral system; every action shall at last be followed by its due consequences; we shall be treated according to our obedience or transgressions; the good shall not miss their reward, nor the wicked escape their punishment; but when men shall give account of their own works, they that have done good shall pass into everlasting life, and they that have done evil into everlasting fire.

Let us therefore, at this and at all times, most heartily and fervently beseech Almighty God to give us faithful and sincere repentance, to pardon and forgive us all our sins, to endue us with the grace of his Holy Spirit, aud to amend our lives according to his holy will and commandments.

SERMON XXV.

WRITTEN BY DR. JOHNSON FOR THE FUNERAL OF HIS WIFE.

JOHN, C. xi. V. 25, 26. (former part.)

Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live;
And whosoever liveth, and believeth in me, shall never die.

To afford adequate consolations to the last hour, to cheer the gloomy passage through the valley of the shadow of death, and to ease that anxiety to which beings prescient of their own dissolution, and conscious of their own danger, must be necessarily exposed, is the privilege only of revealed religion. All those to whom the supernatural right of heavenly doctrine has never been imparted, however formidable for power, or illustrious for wisdom, have wanted that knowledge of their future state, which alone can give comfort to misery, or security to enjoyment; and have been forced to rush forwards to the grave, through the darkness of ignorance; or, if they happened to be more refined and inquisitive, to solace their passage with the fallacious and uncertain glimmer of philosophy.

There were doubtless, at all times, as there are now, many who lived with very little thought concerning their end; many whose time was wholly filled up by public or domestic business, by the pursuits of ambition, or the desire of riches; many who dissolved themselves in luxurious enjoyment, and, when they could lull their minds by any present pleasure, had no regard to distant events, but withheld their imagination from sallying out into futurity, or catching any terrour that might interrupt their quiet; and there were many who rose so little above animal life, that they were completely engrossed by the objects about them, and had their views extended no farther than to the next hour; in whom the ray of reason was half extinct, and who had neither hopes nor fears, but of some near advantage, of some pressing danger.

But multitudes there must always be, and greater multitudes as arts and civility prevail, who cannot wholly withdraw their thoughts from death. All cannot be distracted with business, or stunned with the clamours of assemblies, or the shouts of armies. All cannot live in the perpetual dissipation of successive diversions, nor will all enslave their understandings to their senses, and seek felicity in the gross gratifications of appetite. Some must always keep their reason and their fancy in action, and seek either honour or pleasure from intellectual operations; and from them, others, more negligent or sluggish, will be in time fixed or awakened; knowledge will be perpetually diffused, and curiosity hourly enlarged.

But, when the faculties were once put in motion,

when the mind had broken loose from the shackles of sense, and made excursions to remote consequences, the first consideration that would stop her course must be the incessant waste of life, the approach of age, and the certainty of death; the approach of that time, in which strength must fail, and pleasure fly away, and the certainty of that dissolution which shall put an end to all the prospects of this world. It is impossible to think, and not sometimes to think on death. Hope, indeed, has many powers of delusion; whatever is possible, however unlikely, it will teach us to promise ourselves; but death no man has escaped, and therefore no man can hope to escape it. From this dreadful expectation no shelter or refuge can be found. Whatever we see, forces it upon us; whatever is, new or old, flourishing or declining, either directly, or by a very short deduction, leads man to the consideration of his end; and accordingly we find, that the fear of death has always been considered as the great enemy of human quiet, the polluter of the feast of happiness, and embitterer of the cup of joy. The young man who rejoiceth in his youth, amidst his music and his gaiety, has always been disturbed with the thought, that his youth will be quickly at an end. The monarch, to whom it is said that he is a god, has always been reminded by his own heart, that he shall die like man.

This unwelcome conviction, which is thus continually pressed upon the mind, every art has been employed to oppose. The general remedy, in all ages, has been to chase it away from the present moment, and to gain a suspense of the pain that could not be cured. In the ancient writings, we, therefore, find

the shortness of life frequently mentioned as an excitement to jollity and pleasure; and may plainly discover, that the authors had no other means of relieving that gloom with which the uncertainty of human life clouded their conceptions. Some of the philosophers, indeed, appear to have sought a nobler, and a more certain remedy, and to have endeavoured to overpower the force of death by arguments, and to dispel the gloom by the light of reason. They enquired into the nature of the soul of man, and shewed, at least probably, that it is a substance distinct from matter, and therefore independent on the body, and exempt from dissolution and corruption. The arguments, whether physical or moral, upon which they established this doctrine, it is not necessary to recount to a christian audience, by whom it is believed upon more certain proofs, and higher authority; since, though they were such as might determine the calm mind of a philosopher, inquisitive only after truth, and uninfluenced by external objects; yet they were such as required leisure and capacity, not allowed in general to mankind; they were such as many could never understand, and of which, therefore, the efficacy and comfort were confined to a small number, without any benefit to the unenlightened multitude.

Such has been hitherto the nature of philosophical arguments, and such it must probably for ever remain; for, though, perhaps, the successive industry of the studious may increase the number, or advance the probability, of arguments; and though continual contemplation of matter will, I believe, shew it, at length, wholly incapable of motion, sensation, or

order, by any powers of its own, and therefore necessarily establish the immateriality, and, probably, the immortality of the soul; yet there never can be expected a time, in which the gross body of mankind can attend to such speculations, or can comprehend them; and, therefore, there never can be a time in which this knowledge can be taught in such a manner as to be generally conducive to virtue or happiness, but by a messenger from God, from the Creator of the world, and the Father of Spirits.

To persuade common and uninstructed minds to the belief of any fact, we may every day perceive, that the testimony of one man, whom they think worthy of credit, has more force than the arguments of a thousand reasoners, even when the arguments are such as they may be imagined completely qualified to comprehend. Hence it is plain, that the constitution of mankind is such, that abstruse and intellectual truths can be taught no otherwise than by positive assertion, supported by some sensible evidence, by which the assertor is secured from the suspicion of falsehood; and that if it should please God to inspire a teacher with some demonstration of the immortality of the soul, it would far less avail him for general instruction, than the power of working a miracle in its vindication, unless God should, at the same time, inspire all the hearers with docility and apprehension, and turn, at once, all the sensual, the giddy, the lazy, the busy, the corrupt, and the proud, into humble, abstracted, and diligent philosophers.

To bring life and immortality to light, to give such proofs of our future existence, as may influence

the most narrow mind, and fill the most capacious intellect, to open prospects beyond the grave, in which the thought may expatiate without obstruction, and to supply a refuge and support to the mind amidst all the miseries of decaying nature, is the peculiar excellence of the Gospel of Christ. Without this heavenly instructor, he who feels himself sinking under the weight of years, or melting away by the slow waste of a lingering disease, has no other remedy than obdurate patience, a gloomy resignation to that which cannot be avoided; and he who follows his friend, or whoever there is yet dearer than a friend, to the grave, can have no other consolation than that which he derives from the general misery; the reflection, that he suffers only what the rest of mankind must suffer; a poor consideration, which rather awes us to silence, than sooths us to quiet, and which does not abate the sense of our calamity, though it may sometimes make us ashamed to complain.

But so much is our condition improved by the gospel, so much is the sting of death rebated, that we may now be invited to the contemplation of our mortality, as to a pleasing employment of the mind, to an exercise delightful and recreative, not only when calamity and persecution drive us out from the assemblies of men, and sorrow and woe represent the grave as a refuge and an asylum, but even in the hours of the highest earthly prosperity, when our cup is full, and when we have laid up stores for ourselves; for, in him who believes the promise of the Saviour of the world, it can cause no disturbance to remember, that this night his soul may be required

of him; and he who suffers one of the sharpest evils which this life can shew, amidst all its varieties of misery; he that has lately been separated from the person whom a long participation of good and evil had endeared to him; he who has seen kindness snatched from his arms, and fidelity torn from his bosom; he whose ear is no more to be delighted with tender instruction, and whose virtue shall be no more awakened by the seasonable whispers of mild reproof, may yet look, without horror, on the tomb which encloses the remains of what he loved and honoured, as upon a place which, if it revives the sense of his loss, may calm him with the hope of that state in which there shall be no more grief or separation.

To Christians the celebration of a funeral is by no means a solemnity of barren and unavailing sorrow, but established by the church for other purposes.

First, for the consolation of sorrow. Secondly, for the enforcement of piety. The mournful solemnity of the burial of the dead is instituted, first, for the consolation of that grief to which the best minds, if not supported and regulated by religion, are most liable. They who most endeavour the happiness of others, who devote their thoughts to tenderness and pity, and studiously maintain the reciprocation of kindness, by degrees mingle their souls, in such a manner, as to feel from their separation, a total destitution of happiness, a sudden abruption of all their prospects, a cessation of all their hopes, schemes, and desires. The whole mind becomes a gloomy vacuity, without any image or form of pleasure, a chaos of confused wishes, directed to no particular end, or to that which, while we wish, we cannot hope to ob-

tain; for the dead will not revive; those whom God has called away from the present state of existence, can be seen no more in it; we must go to them; but they cannot return to us.

Yet, to shew that grief is vain, is to afford very little comfort; yet this is all that reason can afford; but religion, our only friend in the moment of distress, in the moment when the help of man is vain, when fortitude and cowardice sink down together, and the sage and the virgin mingle their lamentations; religion will inform us, that sorrow and complaint are not only vain, but unreasonable and erroneous. The voice of God, speaking by his Son and his apostles, will instruct us, that she, whose departure we now mourn, is not dead, but sleepeth; that only her body is committed to the ground, but that the soul is returned to God, who gave it; that God, who is infinitely merciful, who hateth nothing that he has made, who desireth not the death of a sinner; to that God, who only can compare performance with ability, who alone knows how far the heart has been pure, or corrupted, how inadvertency has surprised, fear has betrayed, or weakness has impeded; to that God, who marks every aspiration after a better state, who hears the prayer which the voice cannot utter, records the purpose that perished without opportunity of action, the wish that vanished away without attainment, who is always ready to receive the penitent, to whom sincere contrition is never late, and who will accept the tears of a returning sinner.

Such are the reflections to which we are called by the voice of truth; and from these we shall find that comfort which philosophy cannot supply, and

that peace which the world cannot give. The contemplation of the mercy of God may justly afford some consolation, even when the office of burial is performed to those who have been snatched away without visible amendment of their lives: for, who shall presume to determine the state of departed souls, to lay open what God hath concealed, and to search the counsels of the Most Highest?—But, with more confident hope of pardon and acceptance, may we commit those to the receptacles of mortality, who have lived without any open or enormous crimes; who have endeavoured to propitiate God by repentance, and have died, at last, with hope and resignation. Among these she surely may be remembered whom we have followed hither to the tomb, to pay her the last honours, and to resign her to the grave: she, whom many, who now hear me, have known, and whom none, who were capable of distinguishing either moral or intellectual excellence, could know, without esteem, or tenderness. To praise the extent of her knowledge, the acuteness of her wit, the accuracy of her judgment, the force of her sentiments, or the elegance of her expression, would ill suit with the occasion.

Such praise would little profit the living, and as little gratify the dead, who is now in a place where vanity and competition are forgotten for ever; where she finds a cup of water given for the relief of a poor brother, a prayer uttered for the mercy of God to those whom she wanted power to relieve, a word of instruction to ignorance, a smile of comfort to misery, of more avail than all those accomplishments which confer honour and distinction among the sons of

folly.—Yet, let it be remembered, that her wit was never employed to scoff at goodness, nor her reason to dispute against truth. In this age of wild opinions, she was as free from scepticism as the cloistered virgin. She never wished to signalize herself by the singularity of paradox. She had a just diffidence of her own reason, and desired to practise rather than dispute. Her practice was such as her opinions naturally produced. She was exact and regular in her devotions, full of confidence in the divine mercy, submissive to the dispensations of Providence, extensively charitable in her judgments and opinions, grateful for every kindness that she received, and willing to impart assistance of every kind to all whom her little power enabled her to benefit. She passed through many months' languor, weakness, and decay, without a single murmur of impatience, and often expressed her adoration of that mercy which granted her so long time for recollection and penitence. That she had no failing, cannot be supposed: but she has now appeared before the Almighty Judge; and it would ill become beings like us, weak and sinful as herself, to remember those faults which, we trust, Eternal Purity has pardoned.

Let us therefore preserve her memory for no other end but to imitate her virtues; and let us add her example to the motives to piety which this solemnity was, secondly, instituted to enforce.

It would not indeed be reasonable to expect, did we not know the inattention and perverseness of mankind, that any one, who had followed a funeral, could fail to return home without new resolutions of a holy life: for, who can see the final period of all

human schemes and undertakings, without conviction of the vanity of all that terminates in the present state? For, who can see the wise, the brave, the powerful, or the beauteous, carried to the grave, without reflection on the emptiness of all those distinctions, which set us here in opposition to each other? And who, when he sees the vanity of all terrestrial advantages, can forbear to wish for a more permanent and certain happiness? Such wishes, perhaps, often arise, and such resolutions are often formed; but, before the resolution can be exerted, before the wish can regulate the conduct, new prospects open before us, new impressions are received; the temptations of the world solicit, the passions of the heart are put into commotion; we plunge again into the tumult, engage again in the contest, and forget that what we gain cannot be kept, and that the life, for which we are thus busy to provide, must be quickly at an end.

But, let us not be thus shamefully deluded! Let us not thus idly perish in our folly, by neglecting the loudest call of Providence; nor, when we have followed our friends and our enemies to the tomb, suffer ourselves to be surprised by the dreadful summons, and die, at last, amazed, and unprepared! Let every one whose eye glances on this bier, examine what would have been his condition, if the same hour had called him to judgment, and remember, that, though he is now spared, he may, perhaps, be to-morrow among separate spirits. The present moment is in our power: let us, therefore, from the present moment, begin our repentance! Let us not, any longer, harden our hearts, but hear, this day, the voice of our Saviour and our God, and begin to do,

with all our powers, whatever we shall wish to have done, when the grave shall open before us! Let those who came hither weeping and lamenting, reflect, that they have not time for useless sorrow; that their own salvation is to be secured, and that the day is far spent, and the night cometh, when no man can work; that tears are of no value to the dead, and that their own danger may justly claim their whole attention! Let those who entered this place unaffected and indifferent, and whose only purpose was to behold this funeral spectacle, consider, that she, whom they thus behold with negligence, and pass by, was lately partaker of the same nature with themselves; and that they likewise are hastening to their end, and must soon, by others equally negligent, be buried and forgotten! Let all remember, that the day of life is short, and that the day of grace may be much shorter; that this may be the last warning which God will grant us, and that, perhaps, he who looks on this grave unalarmed, may sink unreformed into his own!

Let it, therefore, be our care, when we retire from this solemnity, that we immediately turn from our wickedness, and do that which is lawful and right; that, whenever disease or violence shall dissolve our bodies, our souls may be saved alive, and received into everlasting habitations; where with angels and archangels, and all the glorious host of heaven, they shall sing glory to God on high, and the Lamb, for ever and ever!

INDEX.

*** The Roman Numerals refer to the Volume, and the Figures to the Page.

A.

ABERBROTHICK, account of the town of, xii. 236. Of the ruins of the monastery there, 238.

Aberdeen, account of, ix. 365. xii. 241. Account of the King's College, 243. Account of the Marischal College, 244. The course of education there, 245. Account of the English chapel, 246.

Abilities, the reward of, to be accepted when offered, and not sought for in another place, exemplified in the story of Gelaleddin of Bassora, v. 300.

Abouzaid, the dying advice of Morad his father to him, iv. 289.

Abridgements of books, remarks on, xi. 34.

Absence, a destroyer of friendship, v. 89.

Abyssinia, preface to the translation of Father Lobo's voyage to, x. 315.

Academical education, one of Milton's objections to it, vi. 89.

Acastus, an instance of the commanding influence of curiosity, iv. 60.

Achilles, his address to a Grecian prince supplicating life, improper for a picture, v. 180.

Action (dramatick), the laws of it stated and remarked, iv. 97.

Action (exercise), necessary to the health of the body, and the vigour of the mind, iii. 84. The source of cheerfulness and vivacity, 86.

Action (in oratory), the want of, considered, v. 361. Tends to uo good in any part of oratory, 362.

Actions, every man the best relater of his own, v. 259. The injustice of judging of them by the event, xi. 483.

Adam unparadised, a MS. supposed to be the embryo of Paradise Lost, x. 333.

Adams, Parson, of Fielding, not Edward, but William Young, viii. 341.

Addison, Joseph, supposed to have taken the plan of his Dialogues on Medals from Dryden's Essay on Dramatick Poetry, vi. 323. His life, vii. 74. The various schools at which he received

instruction, 75. Cultivates an early friendship with Steele, 76. Lends 100*l.* to Steele, and reclaims it by an execution, 77. Entered at Oxford, 1687, 77. Account of his Latin poems, 78. Account of his English poems, 78. On being introduced by Congreve to Mr. Montague, becomes a courtier, 79. Obtains a pension of 300*l.* a year, that he might be enabled to travel, 80. Publishes his travels, 82. Succeeds Mr. Locke as Commissioner of Appeals, as a reward for his poem *The Battle of Blenheim*, 83. Went to Hanover with Lord Halifax, 83. Made Under-secretary of State, 83. Writes the opera of Rosamond, 83. Assists Steele in writing the Tender Husband, 84. Goes to Ireland with Lord Wharton as Secretary, 84. Made Keeper of the Records in Birmingham's Tower, 84. The opposite characters of him and Wharton, 84. His reason for resolving not to remit any fees to his friends, 85. Wrote in the Tatler, 85. Wrote in the Spectators, 86. His tragedy of Cato brought on the stage, and supported both by the Whigs and Tories, 92. 95. Cato warmly attacked by Dennis, 95. Observations on his tragedy of Cato, 96. Other honours and enmities shewed to Cato, 97. Cato translated both into Italian and Latin, 97. Writes in the Guardian, 97. His signature in the Spectator and Guardian, 98. Declared by Steele to have been the author of the Drummer, 99. Wrote several political pamphlets, 99. Appointed Secretary to the Regency, 101. In 1715 publishes the Freeholder, 102. Marries the Countess of Warwick, 102. Secretary of State, 1717, but unfit for the place, and therefore resigns it, 103. Purposes writing a tragedy on the Death of Socrates, 104. Engages in his Defence of the Christian religion, 104. Had a design of writing an English dictionary, 105. His controversy with Steele on the Peerage Bill, 105. During his last illness sends for Gay, informs him that he had injured him, and promises, if he recovered, to recompense him, 109. Sends for the young Earl of Warwick, that he might see how a Christian ought to die, 109. Died June 17, 1719, 110. His character, 110. The course of his familiar day, 113. His literary character, 115. Account of his works, 117. Extracts from Dennis's Observations on Cato, 124. Considered as a critick, 141. Commended as a teacher of wisdom, 144. Character of his prose works, 144. A conversation with Pope on Tickell's translation of Homer, 274. Becomes a rival of Pope, viii. 95. Supposed to have been the translator of the Iliad, published under the name of Tickell, 99. His critical capacity remarked, iii. 91. 140. 143.

Admiration, and ignorance, their mutual and reciprocal operation, iii. 25.

Adventurers, xi. 371 to the end of the volume.

Adversaries, the advantage of contending with illustrious ones, ix. 200.

Adversity, a season fitted to convey the most salutary and useful instruction to the mind, iv. 58. The appointed instrument of promoting our virtue and happiness, 60.
Advertisements, on pompous and remarkable, v. 160.
Advice, good, too often disregarded, iii. 97. The causes of this assigned, 98. Vanity often the apparent motive of giving it, 99. When most offensive and ineffectual, iv. 90.
Affability, the extensive influence of this amiable quality, iv. 2.
Affectation, the vanity and folly of indulging it, ii. 131. 133. Wherein it properly differs from hypocrisy, 134. The great absurdity of it exposed in the character of Gelasimus, iv. 228.
Afflictions, proper methods of obtaining consolation under them, ii. 113. 332.
Africa, progress of the discoveries made on that coast by the Portuguese, x. 267.
Age, the present an age of authors, xi. 515.
Agriculture, its extensive usefulness considered, iv. 28. Thoughts on, both ancient and modern, x. 388. Productions of, alone sufficient for the support of an industrious people, 389. In high consideration in Egypt, *ibid.* The many ancient writers on that subject, 392. The enrichment of England, 393. A proper subject for honorary rewards, 395. Superior to trade and manufactures, 396. Danger to be apprehended from the neglect of, 398. An art which government ought to protect, every proprietor of lands to practise, and every enquirer into nature to improve, 401. Account of, at Raasay, one of the Hebrides, xii. 297. Bad state of, at Ostig, in Sky, 323. The raising of the rents of estates in Scotland considered, 344.
Ajut, his history, iv. 267. 271.
Akenside, Dr. Mark, his opinion of Dyer's Fleece, viii. 277. His life, 357. Son of a butcher at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, born 1721. Designed for a dissenting minister, but turns his mind to physick, 357. Pleasures of Imagination published, 1744, 358. Studies at Leyden, and becomes M.D. 1744, 358. An enthusiastick friend to liberty; and a lover of contradiction, 359. Practises physick at Northampton and Hampstead, 360. Settles at London, 360. Allowed 300*l.* a year by Mr. Dyson, 360. By his writings obtains the name both of a wit and scholar, 361. Died 1770, 361. Character of his works, 362.
Alabaster's Roxana, commended, vi. 87.
Alacrity, the cultivation of it the source of personal and social pleasure, iii. 18, 19.
Albion in lat. 3°, account of the friendly inhabitants found there by Drake, ix. 137.
Alexandrian Library, its loss lamented, v. 263.
Aliger, his character, iv. 354.
Allen, Mr. of Bath, praised by Pope in his Satires, viii. 135.
All's Well that Ends Well, observations on Shakspeare's, x. 201.

Almamoulin, the dying speech of Nouradin, his father, to him, iii. 314. His thoughtless extravagance, 316. The excellent advice which the sage gave him, 318.

Altilia, her coquetry described, iv. 246.

Amazons, observations on the history of the, v. 351. Old maids in England most like Amazons, 352.

Amazons, of the Pen, xi. 516.

Ambition, generally proportioned to capacity, ix. 17. A quality natural to youth, ii. 97. The peculiar vanity of it in the lower stations of life, 420, 421. A destroyer of friendship, v. 90. Characterized, i. 274.

America; Taxation no Tyranny, or, an Answer to the Resolutions and Address of the American Congress [1775], xii. 177. Considerations on the Indians granting their lands to foreign nations, xii. 35. Difficulty of ascertaining boundaries, 37. The power of the French there, 1756, 44. Colonies first settled there in the time of Elizabeth, 47. Colony first sent to Canada by the French, 54. The first discovery of Newfoundland by Cabot, and the settlement from thence to Georgia considered, 66. The encroachment of the French on our back settlements examined, 68.

Amicus, his reflections on the deplorable case of prostitutes, iii. 231.

Amoret, Lady Sophia Murray celebrated by Waller under that name, vi. 233.

Amusements, by what regulations they may be rendered useful, iii. 113.

Anacreon, Ode ix. translated, i. 351.

Anatomy, cruelty in anatomical researches reprobated, v. 66.

Andrew's, St. account of the city of, xii. 231. The ruins of the cathedral, 232. Account of the university, 233. Expence of education there, 235.

Angelo, Michael, observations on his style of painting, v. 318.

Anger, the necessity of checking and regulating it, ii. 66. A tumultuous and dangerous passion, derived from pride, 68. Exposed to contempt and derision, 70. The pernicious effects of it, 71, 72.

Animal food, on the choice and rejection of various sorts of, xii. 301.

Anningate and Ajut, the Greenland lovers, their history, iv. 267. 271.

Anoch, account of, viii. 244. Consists only of three huts, 244. Account of the landlord and his house, 245.

Anson, Lord, little advantage to have been expected, had his voyage succeeded to the extent of his wishes, xii. 122.

Anthea, her disagreeable character, ii. 220.

Antony and Cleopatra, observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 212.

Application, desultory, injurious to our improvements in knowledge and virtue, iii. 388. Active and diligent, strongly enforced by a view of the shortness and uncertainty of human life, 400.

Arbuthnot, Dr. with Pope, supposed to have assisted Gay in writing Three Hours after Marriage, vii. 243. Sketch of his character, viii. 133. The first volume of the Memoirs of Scriblerus published by him, in conjunction with Pope and Swift, 136.

Arcades, written by Milton, about 1637, vi. 92.

Archery, the importance of, in former times, ix. 324.

Arches, considerations on elliptical and semicircular, which is to be preferred, x. 379.

Architecture, the degenerate state of, at Rome, x. 384.

Argutio, his character, ii. 179.

Aristophanes, licentiousness of his writings exorbitant, xi. 63. The only author from whom a just idea of the comedy of his age may be drawn, 65. History of, 76. Plutarch's sentiments upon, 83. Justification of, 86.

Aristotle, his sentiments of what is requisite to the perfection of a tragedy, iii. 429. Account of a MS. translation of his politics in the library at Aberdeen, xii. 244.

Armidel, in the Isle of Sky, account of, xii. 286.

Army, causes of the superiority of the officers of France to those of England, xii. 69. Made formidable by regularity and discipline, 81.

Art, terms of, the necessity of, v. 280.

Artists' Catalogue, preface to, xi. 183.

Ascham, Roger, his life, ix. 318. Born at Kirby Wiske, near North Allerton, 1515, ibid. Educated with the sons of Mr. Wingfield, and entered at Cambridge, 1530, 319. Applied to the study of Greek, 320. A favourer of the Protestant opinion, ibid. Chosen Fellow of St. John's, 1534, 321. M. A. and tutor, 1537, 322. Not less eminent as a writer of Latin than as a teacher of Greek, 323. Fond of archery, 324. Published his Toxophilus, 1544, 324. Receives a pension of 10*l.* from Henry VIII. 327. The equivalent value of his pension, at this time, considered, ibid. Orator of the university, 329. Taught Prince Edward, Princess Elizabeth, and many of the nobility, writing, ibid. Receives a pension from Edward VI. ibid. Tutor to the Princess Elizabeth, which he quits without consent, ibid. Secretary to Sir Richard Morisine, ambassador to Germany, 330. On the death of Edward VI. loses his pension and places, 331. Latin Secretary to Philip and Mary, 332. Enquiry how he could as a Protestant hold the place under Philip and Mary, ibid. Favoured by Cardinal Pole, 334. Continued in the same employment under Elizabeth, ibid. Prebendary of Westwang, in the church of York, ibid. Died 1574, 337. His character, ibid.

Assurance, not always connected with abilities, iv. 114.
Astrology, the credit given to it in the seventeenth century, vi. 198.
Astronomer, the cause of uneasiness in an, v. 533. Supposes himself to have the power of the winds, rain, and seasons, 534. Leaves his directions to Imlac, 537. Pekuah wishes to become his scholar, 538. His opinion of the choice of life, 548. His superstition removed, by entering into the amusements of life, 557.
As you like it, observations on Shakspeare's, x. 200.
Athanatus, his just reflections on the near prospect of death, ii. 344.
Atterbury, Bp. Pope examined before the Lords on the trial of the Bishop, viii. 104. Presents Pope with a Bible at their last interview, 105.
Avarice, the vanity of, i. 217. Fatal effects of insatiable, ii. 249.
Aubigney, Lady, carries a commission from Charles I. to Sir Nicholas Crispe, vi. 243.
Auchinleck, Lord, his seat at Auchinleck described, xii. 430.
Augustus, Fort, account of, xii. 266.
Auknasheals, account of the village of, xii. 276.
Aurantius, his unjust and abusive treatment of Liberalis, iv. 141.
Aureng Zebe, a tragedy, remarks upon some improprieties in it, iii. 348.
Austerities, and mortifications, their use in religion, iii. 251.
Authors, have a desire of appearing to have done every thing by chance, vii. 191. The complaint of surreptitious editions enquired into, ix. 284. The difficulty of his first address, ii. 1. By what methods he may be introduced with advantage to the public, 3, 4. Often deluded by the visionary and vain anticipations of happiness, 11. The neglect of him the most dreadful mortification, 12. The folly of endeavouring to acquire fame merely by writing, 13. Some peculiar discouragements to which he is exposed, 13. His proper task is to instruct aud entertain, 14. The difficulty of executing it with advantage, 14. Increased by the caprice and ill nature of his readers, 14. His acquisition of fame difficult, and his possession of it precarious, 139. The great difference between the productions of the same author accounted for, 141. Naturally fond of their own productions, 362. Many deluded by the vain hope of acquiring immortal reputation, iii. 221. Their literary fame destined to various measures of duration, 223. iy. 35. Their being esteemed, principally owing to the influence of curiosity or pride, iii. 224. Their proper rank and usefulness in society, 411. Characters of the manufacturers of literature, iv. 32. As they grow more elegant become less intelligible, v. 143. Difficulties they find in publishing their works, 222. The precarious fame of, 236. Who write on subjects which have been pre-occupied by great men generally sink,

265. Journal of an, 267. Seldom write their own lives, 405. Their lives full of incident, 406. Signs of knowing how a publication is received, 406. Writing their own lives recommended, 407. Their misfortune in not having their works understood by the readers, xi. 411. Not to be charged with plagiarism merely for similarity of sentiment, 477. No want of topick whilst mankind are mutable, 482. The present age an age of authors, 515. Want of patronage complained of, 516. Their importance to the welfare of the publick, 553. The good they do to mankind compared to a single drop in a shower of rain, 556. Who provide innocent amusement, may be considered as benefactors to life, 557. Their condition with regard to themselves, 559. Their expectation before publication considered, 560. The pleasure and difficulties of composition, 561. After all, the publick judgment frequently perverted from the merit of his work, 563. The merit of his works ascertained by the test of time which they have retained fame, x. 132. A century the term fixed for the test of literary merit, 134. The genius of the age to be considered in order to fix the abilities of, 73. The expectation they form of the reception of their labours, 305. Project for the employment of, xi. 46.

Authority, the accidental prescriptions of it often confounded with the laws of nature, iv. 96.

Authority, parental, frequently exerted with rigour, iv. 45.

Autumn, an ode, i. 329.

B.

BACON, Francis, Lord, the life prefixed to the edition of his works, 1740, written by Mallet, viii. 352. His severe reflection on beautiful women, ii. 246. Was of opinion that his moral essays would be of longer duration than his other works, iii. 226. Observations on his character, xi. 547.

Bail, the danger of becoming, exemplified in the character of Selenus, xi. 418.

Baillet, his collection of critical decisions remarked, iii. 138.

Bamff, account of that town, xii. 25.

Bards, uncertainty in the account of them, xii. 367.

Bargains, the folly of buying bargains exposed, v. 138.

Barra, Island of, account of, xii. 386. Horses there not more than thirty-six inches high, ibid.

Barratier, John Philip, his life, ix. 149. Son of a Calvinist minister, and born at Schwabach, 1720-21, 149. His early acquirements of learning, 150. In his ninth year could speak Latin, German, and French, equally well, 151. In his eleventh year translated the Travels of Rabbi Benjamin from the He-

brew into French, with notes, 151. The method by which his father taught him the languages, 154. Published Anti-Artemonius, 1735, 156. Patronized for his learning by the King of Prussia, 1735, 156. Died 1740, 159. Additions to Life, 159.

Barretti, translation of some lines at the end of his Easy Phraseology, i. 356.

Bashfulness, sometimes the effect of studious retirement, iv. 106. 114. Frequently produced by too high an opinion of our own importance, 116.

Baxter, Mr. Richard, incitement he often urged to the present exercise of charity, iii. 4.

Bayes, that character designed for Dryden, vi. 349. That character also supposed to be designed for Davenant and Sir Robert Howard, 350.

Beaumont and Fletcher, their plots in Spanish stories, vi. 330.

Beauty, disgustingly described, vi. 35. A mental quality, merely relative and comparative, iii. 128. The disadvantages incident to such as are celebrated for it, 377. The folly of anxiety and solicitude upon account of it, 378. The natural principle of, v. 330. The most general form of nature the most beautiful, 330. Depends much on the general received ideas, 332. Novelty said to be one of the causes of beauty, 333.

Beggars, the best method of reducing the number, xi. 250. As numerous in Scotland as in England, xii. 240. Account of, in the Hebrides, 389.

Bell, Mrs. epitaph on, i. 365.

Bellaria, her character, iv. 293.

Bellurmine, Cardinal, writes in defence of Paul V. against the Venetians, ix. 6.

Bemoin (a Prince of Africa), account of him, x. 274. Is driven from his kingdom, visits Portugal, and becomes a Christian, 275. On his return to regain his kingdom, through the assistance of the Portuguese, is stabbed by the Portuguese commander, 277.

Beneficence, mutual, the great end of society, ii. 357. The extent and proportion of it to be adjusted by the rules of justice, iii. 63.

Ben Hannase Rabbi Abraham, his account of the power of the magnet in the detection of incontinence, iv. 341.

Benserade, Mons. translation of his lines *à son lit*, i. 357.

Bentley, Dr. his saying on Pope's translation of Homer, viii. 185.

Bernardi, John, account of him, viii. 205. Died in Newgate in 1736, 205.

Betterton, a picture of him painted by Pope, viii. 74.

Bible, the veneration always paid to sacred history, vi. 54.

Biography, impediments in the way of, vii. 108. By what means it is rendered disgustful and useless, ii. 385. A species of writing entertaining and instructive, 386. Most eagerly read

of any kind of writing, v. 339. More useful than history, 339. Every man the best writer of his own story, 340. Difficulties in writing the life of another, 341. Few authors write their own lives, whilst statesmen, generals, &c. frequently do, 405.

Biographia Britannica, many untruths in that publication in the life of Dr. E. Young, viii. 337.

Birch, Thomas, Εις Βιρχιον, i. 387. Review of his History of the Royal Society, xi. 314.

Black Friars Bridge, considerations on the plans offered for the construction of, x. 379.

Blackmore, Sir Richard, charged by Dryden with stealing the plan of Prince Arthur from him, vi. 365. Libels Dryden in his Satire upon Wit, 379. His life, vii. 206. Born at Corsham, in Wiltshire, 206. Educated at Westminster, and entered at Oxford 1668, 206. Made Doctor of Physick at Padua, 206. For a short time a schoolmaster, 206. Fellow of the College of Physicians, April 12, 1687, 207. Resided at Sadlers' Hall, Cheapside, 207. Wrote for fame, or to engage poetry in the cause of virtue, 207. Published his Prince Arthur 1695, 208. Made Physician in ordinary to K. William, and knighted, 209. His Paraphrase of Job 1700, 210. His Satire on Wit, the same year, 211. Creation, a philosophical poem, 1712, 212. His account of wit, 216. Observations on the Tale of a Tub, 217. Extract from his Essay on the Spleen, 219. Censor of the College of Physicians 1716, 220. His New Version of Psalms 1721, 220. His Alfred 1723, 221. Becomes despised as a poet, and neglected as a physician, 221. Wrote many books on physick, 221. His censure of Hippocrates's Aphorisms, 222. His opinion of learning, 222. Died Oct. 8, 1729, 223. His character, and as an author, 224. Extract from his Prince Arthur, 227.

Blackwell, Thomas, review of his Memoirs of the Court of Augustus, xi. 225.

Blake, Robert, Admiral, his life, ix. 41. Son of a merchant, and born at Bridgewater 1598, 41. Entered at Oxford 1615, where he continued to 1623, 41. On being refused a fellowship of Wadham College, retires to the country, 42. Chosen Member for Bridgewater, by the Puritan party, 1640, 42. Declares for the Parliament, and raises a troop of dragoons, 43. Governor of Taunton 1645, which he defends against Lord Goring, 43. Commissioner of the Navy 1648–9, 43. Sent in pursuit of Prince Rupert, whom he drives into the Tagus, 44. Takes seventeen and burns three Portuguese ships, 44. Takes a French man of war, valued at one million, 44. Drives Prince Rupert into Carthagena, 45. Attacks the Prince in the harbour of Malaga, 45. Takes a French man of war in the Mediterranean, 45. His conduct in the war with Holland 1652, 46. His opinion that it is not the business of a seaman

to mind state affairs, 54. Sent with a fleet into the Mediterranean 1654, 56. Forces Algiers to submission 1656, 56. Obliges Tunis and Tripoli to submit to him, 57. Obliges the Governor of Malaga to give up a priest who had beat some sailors for paying no respect to a procession of the host, ibid. Destroys the plate fleet of Spain 1656, 58. Died at sea, and buried in Henry VII.'s Chapel, 60. After the Restoration, his body taken up, and thrown into a pit in St. Margaret's Churchyard, 60. His military character, by Lord Clarendon, 60. His moral character, by the author of Lives English and Foreign, 61. Got his brother discharged from the command of a ship for not having done his duty, 62.

Blank Verse, characterized, viii. 363.

Blount, Martha, some account of her acquaintance with Pope, viii. 144.

Bluster, Squire, some account of his infamous character, iv. 9.

Body Natural and Body Politick, the parallel between, v. 135.

Boerhaave, Herman, M. D. his life, ix. 11. Born at Voorhout, near Leyden, 1668, 11. His character of his father, 12. Designed for the ministry, 12. A stubborn ulcer on his thigh the cause of his turning his thoughts to medicine, 13. His progress in learning at Leyden, 14. Loses his father in 1682, 14. His diligence at the University, 15. Continues in the study of Divinity, 16. His fortune being exhausted by his education, he reads Lectures in Mathematicks, 17. Begins to study Physick, 17. Engages in the practice of Chemistry, 18. Makes researches in botanical knowledge, 19. Takes the M. D. degree at Hardewich 1693, 19. Designs to obtain a licence to preach, but finds difficulties, from being suspected of atheism, 20. Cause of that suspicion, 20. Begins the practice of Physick, 21. Invited to settle at the Hague, but refuses it, 22. Elected Professor of Physick 1701, 23. Recommends the study of Hippocrates, and reads Lectures as well in Chemistry as Physick, 23. Invited to the Professorship of Physick at Groningen, which he refuses, 24. Recommends Mathematicks in the science of Physick, 24. Advanced to the highest degrees of the University 1714, 25. Makes an Oration, recommending the attaining to certainty in Natural Philosophy, 25. This Oration opposed by the Professor of Franeker, who at length submits to him, 26. Elected member of the Academy of Sciences at Paris 1728, 27. Professor of Chemistry at Leyden 1718, 27. Violently afflicted with the gout 1722, 28. Seized with a violent fever 1727, 29. Resigns his Professorships of Botany and Chemistry 1726, 30. Visited by patients from all parts of Europe, 31. His readiness at discovering disorders, 31. His own account of his last illness, 31. His opinion of the soul, 32. Died 1738, 34. His person described, 34. His character, 34. Catalogue of his works, 39. His serious reflection on the execution of criminals, iii. 272.

Boerhaave, James, character of him, by his son Herman Boerhaave, xi. 11.
Boetius, Hector, (*First President of the King's College, Aberdeen.*) account of him, xii. 243. His revenue, as President, forty Scottish marks, about *2l. 4s. 6d.*, ibid.
Boileau, his opinion of Epick Poetry, vi. 364. His sentiments on the power of diction, iv. 164.
Bolingbroke, Lord, supposed to have declared his opinions to Mr. Hooke, though he concealed them from Pope, viii. 127. Pope leaves his MS. papers to him, 146. Burns 1500 copies of the Patriot King, printed by Pope without his knowledge, 146. Employs Mallet to traduce the memory of Pope, and Warburton defends it, 147. Leaves his works to Mallet, 354.
Bombasine, Mrs. her character, ii. 74.
Books, the study of them not sufficient to constitute literary eminence, iv. 86. Observations on the multiplication of, v. 343. Compilations in general useless, 343. Multiplication of books distracts choice, and disappoints inquiry, 376. Of travels, most generally read of any, and in general disappoint their readers, 386. How they tend to the civilization of mankind, xi. 555. The various motives to reading, 556.
Booksellers, their treatment of authors complained of, v. 223.
Boscovich, his interview with Dr. Johnson, i. 93.
Bower, Archibald, patronized by Lord Lyttelton, viii. 386.
Boyle, Robert, philosophy much improved by his discoveries, iii. 225. His opinion of the best expedients for promoting manufactures, iv. 352.
Bracelet, observations on the re-appearance of it, v. 155. Proposal to make them a mark of distinction of the character or temper of the wearer, 156. Proper emblems for soldiers to wear on bracelets, 158.
Braidwood, Mr. account of his academy at Edinburgh for the deaf and dumb, xii. 432.
Brevity, on what occasions it is necessary and useful in an author, ii. 5.
Bridges, considerations on the strength of arches for bridges, x. 378.
Bristol and London, delineated by Savage, vii. 397.
Britæin, Great. See *Great Britain.*
Brodæus, Græcorum epigrammatum versiones metricæ, i. 393.
Brogues, those made use of in the isles of Sky, described, xii. 287.
Brooke, Mr. See *Stage.*
Broom, Betty, history of her life, v. 100. Educated in a charity school, 100. Objected to as a servant because she could read and work, 101. Goes to London, and an account of the various places she engaged in there, 102. 113. Five hundred pounds left her by her mistress, with which she resolves to retire into the country, and teach poor girls to read and write, 116.
Broome, William, born in Cheshire, viii. 49. Educated upon the

foundation at Eton, and sent to St. John's College, 49. In conjunction with Ozell and Oldisworth, translates the Iliad, 49. Assists Pope in the notes to the Iliad, 50. Some pieces of his poetry in Pope's Miscellanies, 50. Assists Pope in the translation of the Odyssey, 50. Wrote all the notes to the Odyssey, 50.

Brown, Thomas, answers Dryden's Hind and Panther, vi. 360. Some account of him, ibid.

Browne, Edward, M. D. his life, ix. 303. Son of Sir T. Browne, born at Norwich 1642, 304. Educated at Norwich, first entered at Cambridge, and removed to Oxford, ibid. Travelled through Germany, Austria, Hungary, and Thessaly, 1668 and 1669, ibid. Published his Travels, ibid. Physician to Charles II. and Bartholomew Hospital, ibid. Assists in the translation of Plutarch's Lives, 305. President of the College of Physicians and died 1708, ibid.

Browne, Sir Thomas, his life, ix. 281. Descended from a family in Cheshire, and born at London 1604, ibid. Educated at Winchester, ibid. Deprived of part of his fortune by a guardian, 282. Entered Gentleman Commoner at Oxford 1623, ibid. Practised Physick in Oxfordshire, ibid. Goes to Ireland with his father-in-law, ibid. Travels through France and Italy, 283. Created M. D. at Leyden, ibid. Returns to London about 1634, ibid. Wrote Religio Medici 1635, ibid. History of that publication, 284. Settled at Norwich 1636, 289. Incorporated M. D. at Oxford 1637, ibid. Married Mrs. Mileham 1641, ibid. Printed his Inquiry into Vulgar Errors 1646, 290. Writes his Hydriotaphia 1658, 292. His account of the belief of the Ancients of a Future State, 293. His Treatise on the Garden of Cyrus, 294. Two collections of his posthumous works, one published by Dr. Tenison, the other 1722, 296. Chosen Honorary Fellow of the College of Physicians 1665, 302. Knighted by Charles II. 1671, ibid. Died at Norwich 1682, ibid. His character by Mr. Whitefoot, 305. Remarks on his style of writing, 313. Some expressions in his works tending to deism and atheism accounted for, 314.

Browny (the fairy), account of, xii. 360.

Bruce, the traveller, remarks on Father Lobo's Voyage, 1. 21. 23.

Brumoy's Greek theatre, general conclusion to, xi. 61.

Brun, Le, saying of Prior to the King of France on the paintings of, vii. 164.

Buccarelli, the propriety of his attack of Fort Egmont considered, xii. 135.

Buckingham, Edmund, Duke of, Pope's epitaph on him, viii. 217.

Buckinghamshire, John Sheffield, Duke of, characterizes Dryden under the character of Bayes, in the Rehearsal, vi. 349. His life, vii. 152. Son of Edmund Earl of Mulgrave, was born

1649, 152. Not satisfied with his tutor, undertakes his own education at twelve years of age, 152. Served under Prince Rupert, in the war against the Dutch, 152. Commanded an independent troop of horse, 153. Had a quarrel with the Earl of Rochester, 153. Served at sea in the Dutch war 1672, 153. Obtains a Garter, and made Gentleman of the bedchamber, 154. Entered into the French service, 154. Lieutenant of Yorkshire, and Governor of Hull, 154. Sent with 2000 men to the relief of Tangier, 154. Accepts places under King James, whom he attends to mass, 155. Acquiesces in the Revolution, 156. Made Marquis of Normandy 1694, 156. Received into the Cabinet Council, with a pension of 3000*l.* 156. Said to have courted Queen Anne, when young, 157. Made Lord Privy Seal, 157. Lord Lieutenant of the North Riding of Yorkshire, 157. Made Duke of Normandy, and after of Buckinghamshire, 157. Joined the Tories, 157. Offered the Chancellorship, 157. Lord Chamberlain of the Household, 157. After the Queen's death opposed the Court, 157. Died Feb. 24, 1720-21, 157. His character, 158. His character as a writer, 158.

Bucolus, his account of Mrs. Busy's economical character and conduct, iii. 426.

Budgel, Eustace, writes the Epilogue to Philips's translation of Racine's Andromache, viii. 252.

Buller of Buchan, account of the extraordinary cavity there, xii. 248.

Burman, Peter, his life, ix. 178. Born at Utrecht 1668, ibid. Educated at Utrecht, and admitted into the University in his thirteenth year, ibid. His quick acquirement of learning, 179. Becomes a pupil under Grævius, 180. Studied philosophy at Leyden, 181. Doctor of Laws 1688, 182. Travelled into Switzerland and Germany, ibid. Collector of the Tenths 1691, 183. Visits Paris 1714, where he is introduced to Montfaucon, 184. Professor of History, Eloquence, and the Greek language, at Leyden, 1715, 185. Chief Librarian at Leyden, 186. Died March 31, 1741, ibid. His character, 187. Catalogue of some of his works, 189.

Burnet, Gilbert, Observations on Dryden's Answer to his Remarks on Varillas, vi. 358.

Business, the neglect of it foolish and pernicious, iv. 240. The folly of a man's attempting to do too much business himself, by which all is neglected: exemplified in the history of Jack Whirler, v. 72. Very seldom reckoned a pleasure, 405.

Bustle, Lady, her character expressive of the active scenes of a country life, ii. 325.

Busy, Mrs. the particularities of her character, iii. 426.

Butler, Samuel, assisted Buckingham in writing the Rehearsal, vi. 349. His life, 183. The son of a farmer at Strensham, Wor-

cestershire, 183. Not known whether he was of either University, 184. Clerk to a Justice of the Peace in Worcestershire, 185. Amused himself in Musick and Painting, 185. Taken into the family of the Countess of Kent, 185. Afterwards into the family of Sir S. Luke, 185. Secretary to the Earl of Carbury, and Steward of Ludlow Castle, 186. Married Mrs. Herbert, 186. Part I. of Hudibras published 1663, Part II. 1664, 186. Supposed to have been secretary to the Duke of Buckingham, when Chancellor of Cambridge, 187. Story of his being to be introduced to the Duke of Bucks, by Mr. Wycherley, 187. Part III. of Hudibras published 1678, 188. Died 1680, and interred in the church-yard of Covent-Garden, 188. Reported to have received 100*l.* a year of the Treasury, 189. Copy of his monument in Westminster-Abbey, 189. Three volumes of his posthumous Works published, 189. Two volumes more, lately, by Mr. Thyer of Manchester, 189. He ridiculed the establishment of the Royal Society, 190. Character of his Hudibras, 190.

C.

CADENCY in poetic numbers considered, iii. 143.
Cairne, in Sky, a burying-place, described, xii. 292.
Calder Castle, account of, xii. 255.
Calumnies, the difficulty in suppressing, ix. 21.
Camilla, her affected disrelish of the dispositions and conduct of her own sex exposed, iii. 279.
Canaries, Islands of, account of the first discovery and settlement of, x. 264. John de Cerda crowned king of the Canaries, 265.
Candidus, his history, xi. 420.
Cannon, two observations on the danger of, vii. 153.
Cantilenus, his low taste censured, iv. 218.
Captator, a legacy hunter, his history, iv. 327.
Carter, Mrs. a writer in the Rambler, ii. 288. iii. 183.
Castles in the Hebrides, account of, xii. 421. Evidences of the fictions of chivalry having had the manners of feudal times for their basis, 423.
Catalogue of the Harleian Library, plan of the catalogue, x. 225. General use of catalogues, 226.
Cato, rather a poem in dialogue than a play, vii. 122. Extracts from Mr. Dennis's Observations, 124.
Cattle, importance of breeding, x. 391. Account of those bred in the islands of Sky, xii. 328.
Cave, Edward, his life, ix. 220. Born in Warwickshire 1691, ibid. Educated at Rugby school, 221. At first encouraged

by his master, but afterwards, being charged with stealing a cock, loses all his master's favour, ibid. Lives with a collector of Excise, 222. Comes to London, and lives some time with a timber-merchant, ibid. Apprenticed to Collins, a printer, ibid. After two years sent to conduct a printing-house, and manage a weekly paper, at Norwich, 223. Writes in Mist's Journal, ibid. Gets a small place in the Post-Office, ibid. Engaged in several small publications, 224. Loses his place in the Post-Office, ibid. Purchases a small printing-office, and begins the Gentleman's Magazine, 225. Spent much money in projects, ibid. Died 1754, 227. Inscription at Rugby, written by Dr. Hawkesworth, to the memory of Cave's father, himself, and brother, ibid. His character, 228.

Caves, some remarkable ones in the isles of Sky, described, xii. 315.

Caution, the connexion of it with hope, iii. 306.

Celibacy, no pleasures in a state of, v. 490.

Censure, our fondness for it derived from an imagined superiority, ii. 8. On what occasions it becomes equitable and laudable, 319.

Chairman, his complaint on charging the fat people no more than thin ones, v. 112.

Character, not to be drawn from a person's own letters, viii. 157.

Characters, the general inclination to copy those of other persons considered, iv. 145. The variety of, in England, exemplified by the company in a stage-coach, xi. 454. The folly of assuming, 457.

Chariessa, her reflections upon the fashionable follies of modish life, iii. 183.

Charity, the discharge of its duties should be regulated and adjusted by the rules of justice, iii. 62. Introduced by Revelation, v. 13. No account of it in ancient times transmitted to us, 13. Roman donatives rather popular than virtuous, 13. Of Mahometans transplanted from Christianity, 14. Of the present age, commended, 14. Danger of its abating, 15. Danger from the competitions between different hospitals, 16. If no want, no charity, 359.

Charity Schools, the false notion of the mischief of them, v. 100.

Charles I. tries the *Sortes Virgilianæ*, vi. 8. Charged with inserting a prayer in the *Icon Basilike*, taken from Sidney's Arcadia, which is, however, supposed to have been interpolated by Milton, 107.

Charles II. employs Salmasius to write in defence of Charles I. and Monarchy, vi. 108. Passes an act of oblivion to all except the Regicides, 122.

Charles XII. of Sweden, the vanity of a warrior exemplified in him, i. 214.

Charters, their extent and authority, viii. 169.

Chartophylax, his character, iv. 218.
Charybdis, her disposition to profuse expences, iii. 282.
Chaucer, Geoffry, January and May, and the Prologue to the Wife of Bath, put into modern English, by Pope. See POPE.
Cheerful Man characterized, vi. 155.
Chesterfield, Earl of, Dr. Johnson's contemptuous letter to, i. 77.
Cheynel, Francis, his life, ix. 200. Born at Oxford 1608, ibid. Entered at that university 1623, ibid. Fellow of Merton College, 201. Takes orders in the Church of England, 201. Refused his degree of B. D. for disputing concerning Predestination, 201. Account of the disputes at Merton College, 203. Presented to a valuable living near Banbury, ibid. Has a dispute with Archbishop Laud, ibid. Declares himself a Presbyterian, and a friend of the Parliament, 204. His house plundered, and living forfeited, 204. Retires into Sussex, 205. His behaviour to Chillingworth when a prisoner to the Parliament's troops, 206. In the army of Essex, shews himself equally brave as learned, 208. Is presented by Parliament to the living of Petworth, ibid. Sent by the Parliament, with six others, to reform the University, ibid. Fixes a Scruple-shop at Oxford, 209. His disputes with Earbury and the Independents, 210. His controversy with Mr. Hammond, on his Practical Catechism, 213. His further proceedings at Oxford, 214. President of St. John's College, and Lady Margaret Professor, 216. Writes in defence of the Trinity against the Socinians, 217. Retires from Oxford to his living at Petworth, 218. Loses Petworth at the Restoration, 219. Supposed to have died distracted 1665, 219.
Chillingworth, Dr. for a short time embraced Popery, vi. 356. Account of his sickness and death, in the hands of the Parliament's troops, ix. 206.
Chinese, account of a man of that country at the island of Ternate, ix. 140.
Christianus perfectus, i. 376.
Chrysalus, the fatal effects of his peevishness, iii. 261.
Cibber, Mr. the lives of the poets not written by him but by one Robert Shiels, vii. 278. Appointed Poet Laureat, 348. Takes umbrage at the Volunteer Laureat, 350. Celebrated by Pope in his last book of the Dunciad, viii. 139. He resents the affront in a pamphlet, 140.
Cicero, his reflections upon the vanity of transitory applause, iii. 300. His remarks upon the importance of being acquainted with past transactions, iv. 85.
Clarendon, Lord, the story of Smith being employed to alter his history, false, vii. 25. His character of Waller, with observations on it, 260. His character of Admiral Blake, ix. 60. The peculiar excellency of his History of the Rebellion, iii. 330. Thoughts on the publication of the sequel to his History,

v. 259. Doubts of the unfaithful publication of his History, 261.
Cleobulus, his maxim on the excellency of mediocrity, ii. 245.
Cleora, her Letter on Gaming, ii. 96.
Clergy, Milton's objections to entering into the ministry, vi. 89, 90.
Clifford, Martin, attacks Dryden's Conquest of Grenada, with a specimen, vi. 333. Assisted Buckingham in writing the Rehearsal, 349.
Climate, has no influence on freedom and slavery, or virtue and vice, v. 41.
Coach, provided by marriage-articles without horses, v. 218.
Coal-pit, compared to the sun, vi. 32.
Coins, observations on the collectors of, v. 226.
Col, Island of, account of, xii. 377.
Collier, Jeremy, account of his dispute on the entertainments of the stage, vii. 194.
Collins, William, his life, viii. 267. Born at Chichester 1720, 267. Admitted at Winchester College 1733, 267. Came to London, about 1744, a literary adventurer, 267. His uncle leaves him about 2000*l.*, 268. Troubled with disease and insanity, 269. His character, 269. Died 1756, 271. His works characterized, 272.
Colonies, observations on the settlement of, vii. 361. Considerations how they are constituted, xii. 186. Constitution of English colonies, 189. Ought to be bound by statutes of the Mother-country, 191. The plea of want of representation examined, 193.
Colson, Mr. the mathematician, his supposed character, ii. 161.
Columbus, little advantage to Europe from his discoveries, xii. 188.
Comedy, history of, xi. 67. Tragedy more uniform than, 103. Critical remarks upon the manner of composing it, iii. 345.
Commendation, false claims to it censured, iv. 282.
Commentators, the difficulties they meet with, x. 123.
Commerce, Preface to Rolt's Dictionary of, x. 305. The present predilection of mankind to, ibid. Difficulties in acquiring the knowledge of, 307. One of the daughters of fortune, 396. Must owe its success to agriculture, 397.
Companions, different classes of them described, iv. 280.
Compassion, supposed by some to be a selfish passion, v. 14.
Competitions, often supported by interest and envy, iv. 249. Their different influence on this occasion stated, 250, 251.
Complainers, incessant, represented as the screech-owls of mankind, ii. 376.
Complaint, little got by it, v. 378.
Complaints of the conduct of others, what principles will support our claim to it, ii. 319, 320.
Composition, different methods of, viii. 166.

Compton, Sir Spenser, presents Thomson with twenty guineas, having dedicated *Winter* to him, viii. 225.

Comus, the Masque of, first acted in 1634, vi. 91. Derived from Homer's Circe, 91. The fact on which it was founded, 91. Supposed by the editor to be derived from the Comus of Erycius Puteanus, 91. Acted April 5, 1750, for the benefit of a grand-daughter of Milton, 150. Characterized, 157. Prologue to, when acted for the benefit of a grand-daughter of Milton, i. 323.

Conduct, the absurdity of it, whence it ariseth, iii. 407.

Congo, Island of, first discovered by the Portuguese, x. 281.

Congreve, William, his life, vii. 189. Descended from a family in Staffordshire, 189. Born about 1672, the place uncertain, 189. First educated at Kilkenny, afterwards at Dublin, 189. Entered at the Middle-Temple, but paid little attention to Statutes or Reports, 190. The Old Batchelor, his first dramatick labour, 1693, 191. This play procured him the patronage of Halifax, who made him a Commissioner for licensing coaches, and places in the Pipe-office and Customs, 192. Account of this comedy, 192. The Double Dealer, 1694, 193. Love for Love, 1695, 193. Mourning Bride, 1697, 194. Defends the stage against Collier, 196. Writes the Way of the World, 197. Retires from the world as a writer, 197. Made Secretary for the island of Jamaica, 198. Wished to be considered rather as a gentleman than an author, 198. His conversation with Voltaire, 198. Loses his sight, 199. Died Jan. 29, 1728-9, buried in Westminster Abbey, and a monument erected by the Duchess of Marlborough, to whom he left 10,000*l.*, 199. His character as an author, 200.

Consolation under afflictions, by what methods it may be obtained, ii. 332. On what occasion it may be drawn from a view of the afflictions of others, 333. Its useful influence against the depressions of melancholy, 334. The tendency of it to strengthen patience and fortitude, 336.

Constantia and Philetus, written by Cowley at twelve years of age, vi. 3.

Constantius, his history and character, iv. 299.

Contentment with the situation in life assigned us, recommended, ii. 400.

Controversies of the learned, a moderator recommended in them, x. 248.

Controversy, the writers of it, their short-lived fame soon succeeded by disrelish and neglect, iii. 225.

Convenience, progress from rudeness to, v. 252.

Conversation, the pleasures and distastes of it, ii. 274. 297. The importance of acquiring it, iv. 217. The art of it difficult to be attained, 277. What methods are most proper for this end, 278. The errors in sentiment and practice relating to

this, into which many are led, 279. Requires the same ingredients as punch, v. 135. The ingredients of both compared, 136.

Conway, Lord, taken up for being concerned in Waller's Plot, vi. 246. After being examined several times by the Lords is admitted to bail, 249.

Coot, account of a bird in Scotland so called, xii. 248.

Corbet, Mrs. Pope's Epitaph on her, viii. 208.

Coriatachan, in Sky, account of, xii. 290.

Coriolanus, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, x. 211.

Corn Laws, Considerations on, x. 402.

Cornelia, her account of Lady Bustle's employment, ii. 325.

Cornice, Bob, his history, xi. 407.

Cornish Men, a supposed Address from them, in order to shew the false Arguments in the American Resolutions and Address, xii. 215.

Coronation of George III. thoughts on, xi. 171.

Coulson. See *Colson.*

Country Life, the pleasures expected to be met with in it seldom prove so, exemplified in the history of Dick Shifter, v. 284.

Court, the danger of dangling after places there, exemplified in the character of Lentulus, xi. 422.

Courtier, his manner described, iv. 39. 44.

Courtly, Mrs. her character, ii. 78.

Cowley, Abraham, his life, vi. 1. The son of a grocer, and born in 1618, 1. Became a poet from reading Spenser's Fairy Queen, 2. Educated at Westminster School, 2. Could not retain the rules of Grammar, 2. A Volume of Poems printed in his thirteenth year, 3. Wrote Pyramus and Thisbe at ten years of age, and Constantia and Philetus at twelve, 3. Removed to Cambridge in 1636, 4. Ejected from Cambridge, and takes shelter at St. John's College, Oxford, in 1643, 5. Employed in cyphering and decyphering the letters between the King and Queen, 5. Writes his *Mistress* without being in love, 5. Secretary to Lord Jermyn at Paris, 7. Some of his letters preserved in Brown's *Miscellanea Aulica*, 7. His opinion of the Scotch Treaty, 8. Sent back from Paris, under pretence of privacy and retirement, 10. Seized by the usurping powers, and obliged to give a security of 1000*l.*, 10. Supposed to relax from his loyalty, 10. Purposes to retire to America, 10. Takes up the character of physician, 11. Writes a copy of Verses on the Death of Oliver, 11. Made Dr. of Physick at Oxford 1657, 12. Writes in the Philosophical Transactions, 12. Studies Botany, and writes several Books on Plants in Latin, 13. Superior to Milton in Latin Poetry, 13. Retires into Surrey, 16. Obtains a lease of the Queen's lands, 17. His letter to Dr. Sprat, 17. Died at Chertsey, 1667, and buried with great pomp, near Chaucer

and Spenser, 18. Charles II. said, Cowley had not left behind him a better man in England, ibid. Was at one time too much praised, at another too much neglected, 19. Critical remarks on his Poems, 23. The best metaphysical poet, 39. A passage in his writings illustrated, ii. 36. His epitaph, with observations on it, x. 324.

Cradock, Zachary, elected provost of Eton, vi. 257.

Craggs, James, Pope's Epitaph on him, viii. 206.

Credulity, the common failing of unexperienced virtue, iv. 208. Described, v. 37. Of political zealots the most obstinate, 37. Of the bigots of philosophy examined, 37.

Crispe, Sir Nicholas, assisted the king with 100,000*l.*, vi. 243. Forms a plot in favour of the king, 243.

Criticism, not criminal, viii. 188. Genuine, the offspring of labour, truth, and equity, ii. 161. The art of it regulated by precarious and fluctuating principles, 151. iv. 107. The proper end to which it should be applied, 213. Minute, censured and exploded, 214. The importance of that study, v. 238. Story of Dick Minim, a critick, 239. Plan for an academy, 244.

Criticks, their true character, ii. 15. The different dispositions and measures of the candid and the severe, 151, 152. Remarks on their censures of other writers, iii. 139. They are often misled by interest, 140. The different classes of criticks assigned, and their arts and insults exposed, iv. 211. 213. The methods by which their malevolent designs may be defeated, 214. Their character, v. 12. Their duty to young actors, 97. Observations on, 305. Their use to the world, x. 190.

Cromwell, O. commenced Protector with kingly power, vi. 111. Instance of Milton's flattery of, 112. Versed in ancient history, 251. Character of Waller's panegyrick on, 252. Desirous of the title of king, 252. His dissolution of parliament recommended as a proper subject for an historical painting, v. 181.

Cromwell, Mr. an early correspondent of Pope, viii. 61.

Crousaz, a view of the controversy between him and Warburton on Pope's Essay on Man, x. 248.

Cruelty, in experimental philosophy and anatomy reprobated, v. 66.

Cuddy fish, account of, xii. 319.

Cunning, characterized, v. 368.

Cupidus, his observations on the folly of visionary opulence, iii. 14.

Curiosity, the danger of indulging an injudicious, iii. 70. A principle of powerful and extensive operation, 196. 304. The folly of being solely influenced by it in the pursuit of knowledge, 204. To be indulged with caution and judgment, 205. The great folly of it when extravagant, 206. The first and last

passion in great and generous minds, iv. 59. An instance of its commanding influence, 60. A strong principle of action, 123.
Curiosities, the extravagant love of, exposed, v. 224. Arts practised by collectors, 225. The advantage of collections made with prudence, 227.
Curll, Mr. called before the Lords for publishing letters between Pope and several noblemen, and discharged, viii. 116.
Custom, to conquer it requires the utmost efforts of fortitude and virtue, ii. 92. The folly of continuing bad ones, and the difficulty of breaking them, v. 109.
Cymbeline, observations on Skakspeare's play of, x. 215.

D.

DÆMONOLOGIE, system of, adopted by such as courted the favour of King James, x. 76.
Davenant, Sir William, his life saved by the intercession of Milton, who is afterwards saved by the intercession of Davenant, vi. 123. In conjunction with Dryden, alters Shakspeare's Tempest, 323. The quickness of his fancy, 323.
Davideis, written by Cowley when at Cambridge, vi. 4. Designed to be extended to twelve books, only four of which were completed, 53. Various specimens of, 55. Said by Rymer to be superior to the Jerusalem of Tasso, 60.
Dead, prayer for, propriety of, ix. 455. Apparitions of the dead, discussed, 459.
Deaf and Dumb, account of Braidwood's academy at Edinburgh for, xii. 432.
Death, a voyage, vi. 32. The due contemplation of, a proper method for suppressing fear, ii. 113. The instructions arising from the near views of it, 345. The dispositions of mind suitable to that instructive and awful season, 347. 349. The different sentiments we then form of men and things; and particularly as to friends, rivals, and enemies, 349, 350. The immediate effects of death awful and important, iii. 44. The impressions made by it too generally transient, 46. The remembrance of it when it predominates in our minds a great and animating incentive to virtue, 47. Considerations on it, v. 164. The desire of the most decrepid to live one year longer, and the credit they give to it, xi. 433. As described by the author of the Origin of Evil, xi. 295.
Debtors, considerations on the imprisonment of, v. 84. Creditors' reasons for imprisonment of, 85. Should be obliged to surrender their property, 86. Frequently occasioned by compulsive traffick, 86. He who trusts a man he designs to sue is criminal, 87. Loss to the community by their imprisonment computed, 150. More confined in England than in the monas-

teries in other countries, 152. Other mischiefs of imprisonment, 153. The infamy ought to be transferred from the unfortunate debtor to the remorseless creditor, 154. The miserable life they lead, xi. 372. The danger of being bail for, exemplified in the character of Serenus, 418.

Dedications, xi. 144. Dr. James's Dictionary, 144. The Female Quixote, 145. Shakspeare illustrated, 146. Payne's Game of Draughts, 150. Evangelical History of Christ, 151. Angell's Stenography, 156. Baretti's Dictionary, 157. Kennedy's Chronology, 159. Hoole's Tasso, 160. Gwynn's London and Westminster improved, 161. Ascham's Works, 162. Adams on the Globes, 163. Bishop Pearce's Works, 165.

Definition, in what respect not the province of man, iv. 344. The neglect of it prejudicial to the writers of plays, 345.

Dejection of spirit frequently increased by vain terrors, ii. 377.

Demochares, his character, iii. 191.

Denham, Sir John, born at Dublin in 1615, vi. 72. Son of Sir John Denham of Essex, Chief Justice of the Exchequer in Ireland, and afterwards one of the Barons of the Exchequer in England, 72. Educated in London, and went to Oxford 1631, 72. More given to dice and cards than study, 72. Removed to Lincoln's Inn, 73. Divides his study between law and poetry, 73. Employed in carrying on the king's correspondence, 74. Conveys James Duke of York from London into France, 74. Resides in France, 74. The remains of his estate sold by parliament, 75. Rewarded for his loyalty by being made surveyor of the King's buildings, and Knight of the Bath, 75. Died March 19, 1688, and buried in Westminster Abbey near Cowley, 76. His character as a poet, 76.

Dennis, John, enraged by Pope's Essay on Criticism, viii. 63. Attacks the Rape of the Lock, and the Temple of Fame, 72. Pope writes a narrative of his frenzy, 73. Attacks Addison's Cato, vii. 124. Savage's epigram on him, 326.

Dentatus, his address to Tranquilla described, iii. 311.

Dependence, perpetual, contrary to the dignity of wisdom, iv. 129.

Depravation of the mind by external advantages not so universal as is apprehended, iv. 189.

Desires of mankind more numerous than their attainments, iii. 210. A perpetual conflict with natural desires the lot of our present state, 255.

Desires, excessive, restrained by the attentive prospect and contemplation of death, ii. 111.

Despair, considerations proposed for preventing it, iii. 374.

Dicaculus, his affectation of the character of a wit, iv. 199.

Diction, the attractive power of its charms in the conveyance of truth to the mind, iv. 164. See *Language*.

Dictionaries, writers of, characterized, x. 31.

Dictionary, English. See *English Dictionary*.

Diffidence, the advantageous influence of this quality in managing a debate, iv. 114.
Digby, Sir Kenelm, embraced popery, vi. 356. Account of his animadversions on Brown's Religio Medici, ix. 285.
Digby, Hon. Robert, and his sister Mary, Pope's Epitaph on them, viii. 210.
Dilatoriness and indolence in managing important affairs, their fatal effects, iii. 401.
Diligence, too frequently relaxed and abated by applause, iii. 256. Often obstructed by friendship, ibid.
Discord, little things often produce it, iii. 183.
Discontent, attendant on every state of life, ii. 372. iii. 387.
Dispute and controversy, the fatal effects of, when ill conducted, iii. 153. Frequently influenced by the dispositions of pride and vanity, 154.
Distinction, the folly of attaining it by ridicule or censure, v. 67.
Divorce. See *Marriage*.
Dobson, Mr. attempts to translate Pope's Essay on Man into Latin verse, viii. 127.
Dodsley, Mr. summoned before the Lords for publishing Whitehead's poem called *Manners*, viii. 135.
Domestic conduct, the importance of regulating it by the dictates of wisdom and goodness, ii. 431. The danger of betraying our weakness to our servants, one motive to a regular life, 433. See *Servants*.
Domestic discord enquired into, v. 488.
Donne, Dr. specimens of his metaphysical poetry, vi. 24. Some of his Satires published by Pope, viii. 132.
Dorset, Charles Sackville Earl of, life, vi. 287. Born January 24, 1637, 287. Educated under a private tutor, and travelled through Italy, 287. Member for East Grinstead in the first parliament after the Restoration, 287. One of his frolicks, 287. A volunteer in the fleet under the Duke of York, 288. Receives favourable notice from King James, 289. Concurs to the Revolution, 289. A favourite of King William, Chamberlain of the Household and Knight of the Garter, 289. Died at Bath Jan. 19, 1705-6, 290. His character, 290. Applauded as good-natured, though angry, ii. 71.
Dorset, Charles Earl of, Pope's Epitaph on him, with criticisms on it, viii. 201.
Double, Tom, his story, v. 369.
Douglas, Rev. Mr. (Bishop of Carlisle), letter to, written for William Lauder, x. 337.
Dragon, story of the Isle of Rhodes being ravaged by one, v. 30. The story applied, 31.
Drake, Sir Francis, his life, ix. 63. Son of a clergyman in Devonshire, ibid. Apprenticed to the master of a small vessel trading to France and the Netherlands, ibid. His master dying,

leaves him his little vessel, 64. Sells his vessel, and enters into the West India trade, ibid. Loses his all in Captain Hawkins's expedition, 65. Account of his expedition against the Spaniards in America, 1572, 66. Enters into treaty with the Symerons or fugitive negroes, 76. Returns to Plymouth August 9, 1573, 99. Sails with five ships to the South Seas 1577, 100. A design formed at Port Julian to murder him, 116. Arrives at Plymouth September 26, 1580, 144. Receives a visit from Queen Elizabeth on board his ship at Deptford, when he is knighted, 145. Commands a fleet of twenty-five ships against the Spaniards 1585, ibid. His success against the Spaniards, 146. In conjunction with Sir John Hawkins sent with a fleet to the East Indies 1595, 147. Died 1597, and buried in the sea, 147.

Drama. See *Stage.*

Drowsy, Tom, his history, xi. 437.

Drugget, Ned, his history, v. 60. His false conceptions of pleasure such as pursued by mankind in general, 68.

Dryden, John, his life, vi. 315. Born at Aldwincle, Northamptonshire, August 9, 1631, 315. Said to have inherited an estate of 200*l.* a year, and to have been bred an Anabaptist, 315. Educated at Westminster-school under Dr. Busby, 316. Admitted Bachelor at Cambridge 1653, 316. His first poem on the death of Lord Hastings, 316. Wrote a Stanza on the death of Cromwell, and on the Restoration *Astrea Redux,* 317. Commenced a writer for the stage about 1663, 319. His first play the Wild Gallant, 319. Published the Rival Ladies 1664, 319. Joins Sir Robert Howard in writing the Indian Queen, 320. The Indian Emperor published 1667, 320. Published his *Annus Mirabilis* 1667, 321. Has a controversy with Sir Robert Howard on dramatick rhyme, 321. Succeeds Sir W. Davenant as Poet Laureat, 322. Publishes his Essay on Dramatick Poetry, 322. Secret Love, or the Maiden Queen, 323. Sir Martin Mar-all, 323. In conjunction with Davenant, alters Shakspeare's Tempest, 323. His quiet disturbed by Settle's Empress of Morocco, 324. His character of Settle, with remarks on the Empress of Morocco, 324. His Mock Astrologer, dedicated to the Duke of Newcastle, 330. Tyrannick Love, or the Virgin Martyr, 331. Conquest of Granada, 332. That play attacked by Martin Clifford, 333. Settle vindicates himself, 334. His Marriage A-la-mode, dedicated to the Earl of Rochester, 339. The Assignation, or Love in a Nunnery, dedicated to Sir Charles Sedley, ibid. Amboyna, 340. Troilus and Cressida, altered from Shakspeare, 340. The Spanish Fryar, 340. The Duke of Guise, written in conjunction with Lee, 341. Albion and Albanius, 341. State of Innocence and Fall of Man, 342. Many hundred copies in MS. before it was printed, ibid. Aureng Zebe, 343. All for Love, or the World

well Lost, founded on the Story of Antony and Cleopatra, 344. Limberham, or the Kind Keeper, 344. Œdipus, formed by him and Lee from Sophocles, ibid. Don Sebastian, 345. Amphitryon, derived from Plautus and Moliere, 345. Cleomenes, 346. King Arthur, 346. Love Triumphant, 346. Did not raise his fortune by the number of his pieces, 347. Wrote a dedication to almost every piece, 347. Used to add a preface of criticism to his plays, 347. Wrote prologues to many plays, the price of which was two guineas, and afterwards raised to three guineas, 348. Contracted to furnish four plays a year, 348. In 1678, produced six full plays, 348. Attacked by criticks, and opposed by rivals, 349. Characterized by the name of Bayes in the Rehearsal, 349. Criticks nor rivals did him no harm, 351. Repels censure by an adamantine confidence, 351. Waylaid and beaten for being supposed to have been the author of an Essay on Satire, 352. His name thought necessary for the success of every poetical and literary performance, 352. He wrote the lives of Polybius, Lucian, and Plutarch, and translated the first book of Tacitus, 352. Assisted in translating Ovid's Epistles, and adds a preface on translation, 353. Writes Absalom and Achitophel, which is several times answered, 353. The Medal, which is answered by Settle and others, 355. After the accession of James, declared himself a convert to Popery, 356. Engaged to defend the papers found in the strong box of Charles II. 357. Translates Maimburg's History of the League, and the Life of Francis Xavier, 358. Supposed to have undertaken to translate Varillas's History of Heresies, and to have answered Burnet, 358. Burnet's observation on the Answer, 358. Publishes the Hind and Panther, which is answered by the Earl of Halifax, Prior, Tom Brown, &c. 360. Writes on the birth of a prince, 362. At the Revolution loses the place of Laureat, 362. Celebrates Shadwell's inauguration in Mac Flecknoe, 362. Lord Dorset is said to have continued the salary of Laureat to him, 363. In 1690, writes Don Sebastian, and in 1691 four other dramas, 333. In 1693, publishes his translation of Juvenal and Persius, 363. Purposes writing an Epick poem either on Arthur or the Black Prince, 364. He charged Blackmore with stealing his plan, 365. In 1694, begins his translation of Virgil, which he publishes in 1697, 365. Translates Fresnoy's Art of Painting into English prose, 365. Fables, his last work, published 1699, 366. Died in Gerard-street, May 1, 1701, 366. A wild story respecting his funeral, 367. Buried amongst the Poets in Westminster Abbey, 371. A monument erected to his memory by the Duke of Buckinghamshire, 371. Account of his descendants, 371. His character as described by Congreve, 372. Differently described by Dr. Johnson, 373. Copy of the agreement with Jacob

Tonson, to pay him 250 guineas for 10,000 verses, 382. Said to have received 500*l.* from the Duchess of Ormond, as a compliment for his Fables, 384. Said to have received forty pounds from a musical society for the use of Alexander's Feast, 384. In his younger years put confidence in judicial astrology, 385. His character as a poet and critick, 386. The father of English Criticism, 386. Criticisms on various passages of his poems, 397. Specimen of Milbourne's criticism on Dryden's Translation of Virgil, 426. His observations on Rymer's remarks on the tragedies of the last age, 447. Copy of a Letter to his sons in Italy, 458. His opinion of Lord Roscommon's Essay on translated Verse, 218. Milton thought him a good rhymist, but no poet, 146. Declares that Swift will never be a poet, viii. 6. Compared with Pope, 168. Wrote merely for the people, 168. His prose works characterized, 170. Composed without consideration, and published without correction, 170. His inattention and inaccuracy remarked, ii. 202. His character of Shakspeare. x. 193. Translation of his Epigrams on Milton, i. 414.

Dryden, John, jun. writer of The Husband his own Cuckold, vi. 371.

Du Halde's History of China, Letter on, xi. 213.

Duke, Richard, his life, vii. 29. Bred at Westminster, and took his Master's Degree at Cambridge 1682, 29. Prebendary at Gloucester, and chaplain to Queen Anne, 30. Died February 10, 1710-11, 30.

Dumb and Deaf, account of Braidwood's academy at Edinburgh for, xii. 432.

Dun or Borough, in the Isle of Sky, described, xii. 314.

Dun Bay, account of, xii. 248.

Dunciad, the part Savage was supposed to have in publishing it, vii. 325.

Dutch War of 1652, account of the engagement at sea between the Dutch Admirals and Admiral Blake, ix. 47.

Dutch, their revolt against the power of Spain, xii. 48. Raised to power by their plan of commerce, 49. Their increasing power, 53.

Dyer, John, his life, viii. 274. Born in 1700, at Aberglasney, in Caermarthenshire, 274. Educated at Westminster, and designed for the law, 274. Becomes itinerant painter, 274. Travels to Italy, and on his return publishes the Ruins of Rome, 275. Enters into the Church, 275. His preferments, 275. Publishes The Fleece 1757, 275. Died 1758, 276. His works characterized, 276. Akenside's opinion of The Fleece, 277.

E.

EARBURY, Mr. account of him, and his pretending to prophecy, ix. 210. His disputes with Mr. Cheynel, 211.
Earse Language, used in a kirk at Inverness, xii. 259. Account of, 371. Many dialects of, 373.
Earth, advantages from the position of it, v. 171.
Editors, the impropriety of their altering works of authors left to their care, viii. 229. The duty of, x. 172.
Education, the difficulty attending it, ix. 149. Those who make the avenues to it easier are the friends of mankind, 150. The method used by Barretier for instructing his son in the languages, 154. The importance of conducting it aright, iii. 78. 88. Errors in the conduct thereof censured, 243. 388. iv. 294. The pernicious effects of wrong management in this affair, iii. 255. The folly of employing girls on useless needle-work, and neglecting every other part of their education, v. 50. The importance of, x. 285. Want of variety and novelty in books designed for, 286. Considerations on the education of the children of the poor, xi. 251.
Egmont Port. See *Falkland Islands*.
Elgin, account of, xii. 252.
Eloquence, that false sort which only confuses the reader, ridiculed, v. 144.
Elphinstone, James, Letter to, on the death of his mother, ix. 341.
Elwood the Quaker, some account of, vi. 126.
Eminent Men, least eminent at home, v. 202.
Embalming, on the practice of, v. 555.
Emigration, state of, from the Hebrides, considered, xii. 345.
Eminence, a proof of it in having many enemies as well as friends, ii. 58.
Employment, the necessity of, v. 291.
Enemies, the duty and charity of relieving them, xii. 80.
England, supposed by Milton to be too cold a climate for flights of imagination, vi. 132.
English, remarkably barren of historical genius, iii. 329. The little proficiency made by them in civil wisdom, xii. 88. On the bravery of their common soldiers, 81. Arises very much from the dissolution of dependence which obliges every man to regard his own character, 83.
English Dictionary, plan of that work addressed to the Earl of Chesterfield, x. 3. Difficulties in fixing the plan, 6. Preface to the English Dictionary, 31. Writer of Dictionaries characterized, ibid. Advertisement to the Fourth Edition, 68. Preface to the Octavo Edition, 70.

English Language, the progress of, v. 254. Richer than commonly supposed, 365. Contains sufficient information in every branch of science, 366.
Ennius, his epitaph written by himself, x. 327.
Envy, its malignant influence described, iv. 252. Will often sacrifice truth and friendship to weak temptations, 253.
Epaminondas, his death a proper subject for a picture, v. 181.
Epick Poetry, what it is, vi. 160. Requisites in a writer of, 161. Boileau's opinion of, 364.
Epictetus, his salutary instructions for preserving the mind from the elevation of vanity, and the dejection of grief, ii. 12. His excellent sentiments on the advantage of being influenced by the fears of poverty and death, 111. His epitaph, x. 329. Epigramma, i. 410.
Epigram—de Sacerdote furem consolante epigramma, vii. 185.
Episcopacy, Mr. Waller's speech against it, vi. 237.
Epistolary Writing, its difficulty and excellence, iv. 70. It ought to bear a strict conformity to nature, and the various purposes designed by it, 72. 74.
Epitaphs, i. 364. Essay on, x. 320. Enquiry into what the perfection of consists, 321. Intended to perpetuate examples of virtue, 322. The name alone sufficient for eminent men, ibid. All allusions to Heathen mythology absurd, 324. Impropriety of addressing the passenger in, 326. First rule in writing, not to omit the name, 327. Regard for truth to be observed, ibid. Private virtue the best subject for, 328.
Erasmus, his diligent and unwearied improvement of time applauded, iii. 237.
Eriphile, her excessive peevishness censured, iii. 262.
Errol, Earl of, invites Dr. Johnson to his seat at Slanes Castle, xii. 247.
Error, the aversion of most persons to be convinced of it, ii. 201. 203. Their attempts to justify it generally the effect of obstinacy or pride, ibid.
Etymology, difficulties in settling it, x. 14.
Essays, the extensiveness and variety of this kind of writing, iv. 254. The advantages and inconveniences of it, ibid.
Essence of Things, less regarded than their external and accidental appendages, iv. 130.
Eubulus, his character, ii. 168. 180.
Evening, an Ode to Stella, i. 335.
Events, some of the most considerable often produced by casual and slender causes, iv. 1.
Evil, thoughts on the origin of, v. 357. The cause of all good, 358. Review of a Free Enquiry into the Nature and Origin of, xi. 276. The folly of lamenting evils which may never happen, v. 494.
Eumathes, his free censure of the errors of modern education,

iii. 388. 393. His judicious conduct in the tuition of a young nobleman, iv. 310. His narrative of the low insidious arts by which his good designs were obstructed and defeated, 313. The mean adventures of his pupil related, 317.
Eumenes, his character, ii. 404.
Euphelia, an account of her rural amusements, ii. 270. 295.
Euphemia, her character, ii. 80.
Euphues, his character, ii. 160.
Euripides, parody of a translation from the Medea, i. 354.
Eutropius, his account of the indecent and insulting conduct of Triplierus, iii. 175.
Excellence, the desire of it laudable, ii. 421. Practical and ideal, widely different, iii. 260.
Exercise, its necessity to the health and vigour of the body, iii. 86.
Existence, every stage and period of it should be distinguished by some improvement, iv. 94.
Expectation, the torment of it greatest in the early seasons of life, iii. 255. The practice of disappointing the expectations of others inconsistent with true friendship, iv. 135. This instance of wrong conduct exemplified in the case of Liberalis, 140, 141. Our expectations often visionary and disappointing, 323, 324.
Expeditions and Voyages in search of new countries, abstract account of, xii. 119.
External Appearances frequently delusive, iv. 323.
Extravagance, some instances of it related, iv. 299.

F.

FAILINGS, the detection of them too generally received with disgust, ii. 156.
Falkland, Lord, tries the *Sortes Virgilianæ*, vi. 8.
Falkland Islands, thoughts on the late transactions respecting them (1771), xii. 118.
Fall of Fiers, account of, xii. 265.
False Alarm, (1770), xii. 87.
Falsehood, its guilt widely extended, iii. 159. Often imitates truth, 160. The influence of it on the passions, 162. The artifices of it exploded, iv. 284.
Falstaff, Sir John, Prince Henry's tender reflections on his death, iii. 10.
Fame, the love of it when irregular and dangerous, ii. 315. When laudable, ibid. The only recompense mortals can bestow on virtue, 317. The ill economy of it the effect of stupidity, 359. The acquisition and loss of it considered, iii. 358. That of authors casual, precarious, and short-lived, iv. 37, 38. Of a short duration when it is not properly founded, 87. The ascent to it obstructed by envy and competition, 148. That of authors very precarious, v. 235.

Famine, how different countries are affected by it, xii. 400.
Farmer, English, the honour due to, x. 394.
Fate, the practice of seeking it in books, vi. 8.
Fear, the distresses of it obviated and alleviated by the contemplation of death, ii. 113. Superstitious, censured and exploded, 377. In what cases it characterizes a coward, iii. 353. Not intended to overbear reason, but to assist it, ibid. The pernicious effects of an irrational indulgence of it, 402.
Fenton, Elijah, his life, vii. 230. Born near Newcastle, in Staffordshire, 230. Educated at Cambridge, 231. Refused to take the oaths, 231. Secretary to Charles Earl of Orrery, and tutor to his son, 232. Schoolmaster at Sevenoaks in Kent, 232. Writes in praise of Queen Anne, and extols the Duke of Marlborough, 232. Undertakes to instruct Secretary Craggs, 233. Assists Pope in translating the Odyssey, 233. Gains near 1000*l.* by his tragedy of Mariamne, 233. Died at Lady Trumbal's in 1730, 235. His character, 235. Account of his works, 236. Pope's letter to Mr. Broome on the Death of Fenton, 238. Assisted Pope in the translation of the Odyssey, viii. 50. Pope's Epitaph on him, 213.
Ferocula, her ungoverned passions described and censured, iii. 267.
Ferratus, his favourite passion, iv. 218.
Fiction, the works formed upon the plan of it, wherein useful and defective, ii. 20. They too frequently corrupt the mind of youth, 22. 26.
Fire-arms, the introduction and progress of, ix. 325.
Fire-works, Letter on, xi. 42.
Firebrace, Lady, verses to her, at Bury assizes, i. 341.
Flatterer, character of an insidious, iv. 134.
Flattery, the fatal and mischievous effects of, ii. 407. The principal causes of it described, iii. 212. It is often profusely addressed to the unworthiest objects, 213. The peculiar infamy of such prostitution, ibid. Most successful when accommodated to particular circumstances or characters, 221, iv. 193. 234. 285. Openness to it the disgrace of declining life, 133. The influence of it to quiet conviction and obtund remorse, 192.
Flavia, her agreeable character, iii. 78.
Flavilla, her levity and inconstancy displayed, iv. 245.
Flirtilla, instructed upon the subject of masquerades, ii. 64.
Florentius, his character, ii. 120.
Florentulus, his education conducted upon an irregular and injurious plan, iii. 241. 245.
Flosculus, the manner of his addresses to Tranquilla, iii. 310.
Flying, attempts to discover the art of, v. 433.
Flying Fish, account of, ix. 105.
Follies, fashionable, particularly described, iii. 184. The modern round of favourite weekly diversions regarded as the most important end of human life, 186.

Fontenelle, his Dialogues of the Dead, translated by Mr. Hughes, vii. 148.
Fores (the town to which Macbeth was travelling), account of, xii. 255.
Forgetfulness, the necessity of, v. 289.
Fortitude of women described, i. 271.
Foster, Mrs. Elizabeth, grand-daughter of Milton, subscriptions solicited for, x. 335.
Fosterage, account of the custom of, in the isle of Col, viii. 374.
Foundling-Hospital, care of the morals and religion of the children there, recommended, xi. 252.
Fountains, a fairy tale, xi. 351.
Fox, Mr. lampooned by Pope in his Satires, viii. 135.
France, the power of, in America, 1756, xii. 44. Sends a colony to Canada, 46.
Fraud, those persons who are most addicted to it, generally the most suspicious, ii. 408.
Freeholder, account of that periodical publication, vii. 102.
Free Masonry allowed in Prussia, ix. 239.
French, just to the memory of learned men, by writing their lives, vi. 303.
French Prisoners of War. Introduction to the Proceedings of the Committee appointed to manage the Contributions begun at London, Dec. 18, 1758, for clothing them, xii. 78.
Friend, the difficulty of finding a faithful and able one, ii. 184. The essential ingredients of that amiable character, 406. Thoughts on the loss of a, v. 164. Poem to a, i. 337.
Friendship, the progress of the abatement of, viii. 95. The firmest too often dissolved by openness and sincerity, ii. 261. The qualities requisite to form and establish it, 406. iv. 121. Envy and flattery most injurious to its interests, ii. 406. Esteem and love essential to its composition, 408. Virtue its most lasting support, 408. The most common obstructions to it, 410, 411. The measures necessary to maintain and continue it, iii. 180. The partialities with which it is often attended, 182. Characterized, v. 88. Accidents to which it is liable, 88. Absence, interest, ambition, disputes begun in jest, &c. 89. An Ode, i. 361.
Frolick, Mr. his character, as exhibiting a striking specimen of vanity, ii. 390.
Frugality, the excellence of it, ii. 364. Cautions and rules for directing the practice of it, 367.
Fruition, the limits of it fixed by immovable boundaries, iv. 221.
Fugitive Pieces, their origin and importance, x. 238.
Fungoso, his addresses to Tranquilla described, iii. 310.
Furia, her character, ii. 120.
Future State, Sir T. Browne's account of the belief of the ancients, xii. 283.
Futurity, the prospects of it fitted to influence and regulate our

present conduct, ii. 9. Anxiety about it censured, 190. 376. 381. The folly of building our hopes upon it, iv. 366.

G.

GABRIEL, his dress described, vi. 58.
Gaming, Cleora's letter concerning it, ii. 96. 100. Its pernicious effects, 101. Destructive of the peace, harmony, and pleasures of domestick life, 102.
Garret, the advantages of it for contemplation and improvement, iii. 293. Subservient to gaiety and sprightliness, 297. The history and antiquities of several inhabitants of a, iv. 125, 126.
Garrick, David, characterized under the name of Prospero, iv. 347.
Garth, Sir Samuel, his life, vii. 54. Descended from a family in Yorkshire. 54. Student at Cambridge, 54. Admitted Fellow of the College of Physicians, London, June 26, 1693, 54. Writes the Dispensary, a Poem, 56. Spoke the Harveian Oration 1697, 57. Censor of the College, 57. Member of the Kit Kat Club, 57. Knighted, and made Physician in Ordinary to the King, and Physician General to the Army, 57. Died Jan. 18, 1717-18, and buried at Harrow on the Hill, 58. His character, and that of his works, 58.
Gay, John, his life, vii. 240. Born in Devonshire in 1688, 240. Educated under Mr. Luck, 240. Apprentice to a Silk Mercer in London, 240. Secretary to the Duchess of Monmouth, 241. Inscribes his first publication to Pope, 241. Secretary to the Earl of Clarendon, 242. Dedicates his Shepherd's Week to Bolingbroke, 242. Pope and Arbuthnot supposed to have assisted him in writing Three Hours after Marriage, 243. Gained 1000*l.* by publishing his Poems, 244. Became possessed of the value of 20,000*l.* in the South Sea Stock, which he lost, 244. Appointed Gentleman Usher to the Princess Louisa, which he refuses, and is afterwards neglected by the Court, 246. Pope's account of the origin and success of the Beggar's Opera, 246. His Polly prohibited by the Lord Chamberlain, 249. Patronized by the Duke and Duchess of Queensberry, 249. Died Dec. 4, 1732, and buried in Westminster-abbey, 249. His character, 250. Account of his Works, 251.
Gelaleddin, of Bassora, the story of, v. 300.
Gelasimus, his character, iv. 228.
Gelidus, his character, ii. 158.
Genersoa, her complaint of want of attention to enquiries made by women, iii. 356.
Genius, true, what, vi. 2. The expediency and importance of consulting it in chusing our station in life, ii. 129, 130. iii. 287.
Gentle, Miss, her history, v. 397.

Gentle, Phil. his story, v. 337.
Gentleman's Magazine, history of, ix. 225. Prefaces to, xi. 24.
George, Fort, account of, xii. 256.
Germany, Emperor of, account of the confusions occasioned by his death, 1740, ix. 242. The Elector of Bavaria invested with the Imperial dignity, 254. State of the war between the King of Prussia and the Queen of Hungary, in defence of the election, 269.
Ginger, Deborah, (wife of a city wit), her complaint, v. 186.
Glasgow, account of, xii. 428. Account of the University, 429.
Glenelg, account of, xii. 284.
Glensheals, account of the valley of, xii. 276.
Gluttony, the indulgence of this vice freely censured, iv. 381, 382.
God, frequent reflections on his wisdom and goodness the chief security against the anguish of impatience, ii. 212. His placability an essential principal of all religion, iii. 246.
Godliness defined, v. 359.
Gold, the general ill effects of, i. 208. Not so valuable as iron for the use of man, v. 146. Necessaries of life plentiful as iron, superfluities scarce as gold, 146.
Goldsmith, Oliver, character of as a writer, vii. 49. Epitaph on, i. 367.
Good Company, mischiefs of, v. 210. Different definitions of, 210.
Good Hope, Cape of, first discovered by the Portuguese, 1487, x. 281.
Good Nature and affability, the extensive influence of these amiable qualities, iv. 2.
Good-natured Man, Prologue to, i. 324.
Goodness, the effect of evil, v. 358. Female, too easily vanquished, ii. 445.
Good sort of Woman, characterized, v. 400.
Gordon, Sir Alexander, xii. 241.
Government, the difficulty of preventing oppressions, v. 440.
Gower's, Lord, letter in favour of Dr. Johnson, i. 36.
Granville, Greenville, or *Grenville, George*, his life, vii. 254. Born about 1667, 254. Educated at Cambridge, 254. True to the King and Church, 255. Letter to his father, requesting leave to enter into the service of James II. 256. Lived retired during the reign of William III. 258. Member of Parliament in the reign of Queen Anne, 259. Secretary at War, 1710, 260. Created Lord Lansdown 1711, 260. Comptroller of the Household and Privy Counsellor 1712, 260. Treasurer of the Household 1713, 260. At the accession of George I. lost his places, and soon after sent to the Tower, but released, 260. Writes in defence of General Monk and Sir R. Grenville, 261. Published a splendid edition of his works 1732, 261. Died Jan. 30, 1735, 261. His character, 262. His works characterized, 262.
Gratitude, the effects of resentment more certain than, vii. 340.

Gray, Thomas, his life, viii. 366. Son of a scrivener of London, born 1716, 366. Educated at Eton, and entered at Peterhouse, Cambridge, 366. Travels through France into Italy with Mr. Horace Walpole, 366. They quarrel at Florence, and finish their travels separately, 367. Retires to Cambridge, where he becomes Bachelor of Civil Law, 367. Loses his friend Mr. West, 367. Applies seriously to poetry, 1742, 368. Intended to excel in Latin poetry, 368. Removes to Pembroke Hall, 369. Several of his pieces published with Bentley's Designs 1753, 369. Refuses the place of Poet Laureat, 370. Asks for the place of Professor of Modern History, but is refused, 370. Takes a journey into Scotland 1765, 370. Is appointed Professor of History, 370. Visits Westmoreland and Cumberland 1769, 371. Died 1771, 371. His character by the Rev. Mr. Temple, 371. Additions by Mr. Mason, 371. His account of Lord Shaftesbury, 373. His works characterized, 375.

Great Britain, observations on the affairs of, 1756, xii. 34. Introduction to the political state of, 1756, 47. The present system took its rise in the reign of Elizabeth, ibid. State of, at the death of Elizabeth, 50. State of, under James I. 51. State of, under Charles I. 52. State of, under Cromwell, 55. State of, under Charles II. 58. State of, under James II. 62. State of, under William and Mary, 62. State of, under Anne, 64.

Greatness, disquisition upon, v. 491.

Greek, began to be studied in England about 1530, ix. 319.

Greenville, George. See *Granville*.

Gregory, Mr. convicted with Savage of the murder of James Sinclair, vii. 313.

Greogach, or the Old Man with the Long Beard, account of, xii. 361.

Grey, Dr. observations on his notes on Shakspeare, x. 180.

Grief, immoderate, assuaged by the contemplation of our latter end, ii. 113. On the transient impressions of, 352. Of short duration in the decline of life, v. 428. Time the best remedy for, 516.

Grissipol, in Col, account of, xii. 380.

Guardian, account of that periodical publication, vii. 97.

Guardian, (Cowley's comedy of), first published without the consent of the author, vi. 4. Altered to Cutter of Coleman-street, 14. Character of that comedy, 15.

Guardians, their duty in preventing the improper marriage of their wards, viii. 68.

Gulosulus, his criminal indulgence in excessive feeding exposed, iv. 382.

H.

HABITS, their uncommon influences and effects, iii. 42.
Hacho, King of Lapland, his history, v. 382.
Hale, Sir Matthew, his prudent concern for securing the reputation of virtue, ii. 92. The mutilation which his Pleas of the Crown suffered, v. 260.
Halifax, Charles Mountague, Earl of, his life, vii. 43. Born at Horton in Northamptonshire, April 16, 1661, 43. King's Scholar at Westminster, 43. Solicited to be removed to Cambridge, on account of his friendship with Mr. Stepney, 43. Joined Prior in the City Mouse and Country Mouse, 44. Signed the invitation to the Prince of Orange, and sat in the Convention, 44. Married the Countess Dowager of Manchester, ibid. Chancellor of the Exchequer, 1694, 45. Completed a re-coinage, ibid. Projected the general Fund, and raised the credit of the Exchequer, ibid. Impeached by the Commons, but the articles were dismissed by the Lords, 46. Dismissed from the Council by Queen Anne, 46. Again attacked by the Commons, and protected by the Lords, 46. Negotiated the Union with Scotland, 46. Appointed one of the Regents at the death of the Queen, 46. Created Earl of Halifax, by George I., 46. Flattered by all the poets of the time, except Swift and Pope, 47. Fed with Dedications, and no Dedicator went unrewarded, 47. Rather a pretender to taste than really possessed of it, viii. 92. Story of Pope's reading his translation of the Iliad to him, 92.
Hamet, the Indian, the moderation and modesty of his desires, ii. 250.
———, the Poet, his ingratitude, iv. 292.
Hammond, Dr. Henry, his dispute with Cheynel in defence of the Practical Catechism, ix. 213.
————, *James*, his life, vii. 278. Born about 1710, and educated at Westminster, 279. Equerry to the Prince of Wales, 279. A companion of Cobham, Lyttelton, and Chesterfield, 279. Member of Parliament for Truro, 279. Died in June 1742, 280. The preface to his elegies, written by the Earl of Chesterfield, ibid.
Hamlet, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, x. 221.
Hampton's Polybius, Review of, xi. 316.
Hanmer, Sir Thomas, observations on his edition of Shakspeare's Works, x. 175. *Epitaphium*, i. 344. Epitaph paraphrased by Dr. Johnson, 346.
Hanway, Jonas, Review of his Eight Days' Journey from Portsmouth to Kingston upon Thames, with an Essay on Tea, xi. 240. Reply to a Paper of his in the Gazetteer of May 26, 1757, 256.
Happiness, not promoted by fortune, rank, or capacity, vii. 284.

Our indulging chimerical wishes of it, often productive of great disappointment, ii. 27. When dependant upon external circumstances, precarious and delusive, 33. Chimerical provision for it exploded, 35, 36. Of mankind, dependant not upon opinion, but on practice, 174. The insufficiency of sensual pleasures to procure it, 345. The folly of repining at it in others, 401. The anxieties by which it is often disturbed in females, iii. 341. The fruition of it dependant on our own sensations, iv. 60. The highest we can enjoy in this life derived from self-approbation, and the applauses of conscience, 61. The methods by which it may be often destroyed, 209. Distant and lasting, secured only by the forbearance of present gratifications, 223. Human schemes of promoting it visionary and delusive, 359. 386. The general pursuit of it at a distance, xi. 434. To be acquired only by industry, 435. The folly of a tradesman seeking it in rural retirement, 491. The folly of beholding it at a distance, 504. How advanced by comparison with misery, 512. Not to be found in idleness, 513. Generally found in labours of great and laudable undertakings, ibid. The happiest man who is in want of the fewest things, 521. Inquiry into the value and importance of, xi. 290. Not well enjoyed without a knowledge of the miseries of life, v. 452. Inquiry into, ibid. Not to be found in the company of young men of spirit and gaiety, 468. Not in pastoral life, 473. Not in the greatest prosperity, 475. Not in a state of solitude, 477. Not in living according to nature, 480. Not in high stations, 484. Not in private life, 486. Not often found between parents and children, 489. Not in the single life, 490.

Harcourt, Hon. Simon, Pope's Epitaph on him, viii. 205.

Hard Words, on the use of, v. 279.

Harley, Mr. character as a minister, viii. 11.

Harleian Library, account of it, x. 225. Plan of the Catalogue, ibid. General use of Catalogues, 227. Preface to the Catalogue, vol. 3. 411.

Harleian Miscellany, introduction to that work, x. 238.

Harmony, the end of poetical measures, iii. 117.

Harmony and friendship, by what methods maintained and secured, iv. 122.

Harrison's, Elizabeth, Miscellanies, Review of, xi. 317.

Hawkesworth, Dr. Inscription written by him, and put up at Rugby to the memory of Joseph Cave and his two Sons, ix. 227.

Hawkins, Capt. John, his unfortunate expedition to Mexico, ix. 65.

Hawkins's Maiden Land. See *Falkland Islands.*

Health, the necessity of it to the duties and pleasures of life, ii. 308. The folly and wickedness of squandering it, ibid. The anxious care of it in the valetudinarian, vain and ridiculous, ibid. The power of it in exalting the happiness of life, 309. Neglect-

ed by the votaries of business and the followers of pleasure, 311. By what methods to be preserved, iii. 258.
Hearne, Mr. Thomas, the antiquary, his just reflections on the fragility of human life, iii. 4.
Heartless, Peggy, a young lady just married, her complaint of living in a second floor, when she came to London, because Mr. Quick found objections to all other lodgings, v. 346.
Hebrides, Johnson's Journey to, xii. 227. Additional particulars of, ix. 360.
Heedful, Sophia, her history, v. 390.
Henry II. Story of the publication of his life, by Lord Lyttelton, viii. 387.
Henry IV. observations on Shakspeare's plays of, x. 204.
Henry V. observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 206.
Henry VI. observations on Shakspeare's plays of, x. 207, 208.
Henry VIII. observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 210.
Henry, King of France, observations on the epitaph on his heart, x. 326.
Hercules, his death cannot well be painted, v. 180.
Hermeticus, his secret for detecting incontinence, iv. 344.
Hermit, history of an, v. 361. His directions for the choice of life, 362.
Hertford, Countess of, obtains Savage's pardon for the murder of Sinclair, vii. 316.
Hesiod, his distribution of mankind into three classes, ii. 441.
Hesitation, the effect of indolence and divided attention, iii. 403.
Hickman, Miss, Verses to her, playing on the Spinnet, i. 348.
Highlands of Scotland, account of, xii. 277. Journey to the Hebrides, *passim*.
Hill, Aaron, a friend to Savage, vii. 304. Corrects Savage's tragedy of Sir T. Overbury, and writes the Prologue and Epilogue, 304. Encourages a volume of Savage's Miscellany of Poems, by publishing his story in the Plain Dealer, and by which seventy guineas was left for him in a few days, 305.
Hints, the folly of giving orders to servants by hints, v. 182.
Hippocrates, Sir R. Blackmore's censure of his Aphorisms, vii. 222.
Hirsutus, his character, iv. 217.
History, the writers of it often chargeable with the depravation of mankind, iii. 52. The difficulty of writing a good one, 329. England remarkably barren of historical genius, 329. Not to be written in the style of poetry, v. 318. Presses on the mind with the weight of truth, 339. Not so useful to make a man wise as biography, 339. Many of the relations of historians would not be credited unless well authenticated, 350.
Hogarth, W. Epitaph for him, i. 357.
Homer, the Iliad translated by Broome, Ozell, and Oldesworth, viii. 50. See POPE. Remarks on the propriety of Pope's ver-

sification, iii. 130, 131. 144. 147. Why reckoned inferior to Virgil, by Scaliger, 141.

Honours, transitory, Cicero's reflections upon them, iii. 300.

Hope, the strong influence of it upon our resolutions and actions, ii. 9. Of remote advantages should be indulged with caution, as it often vitiates the human understanding, 11, 12. Frequently attended with discontent and impatience, 27. Fallacious and afflictive, necessary in some degree in every condition of life, 423. 427. The rational advantages of it acquired by wisdom and fortitude, 428. The visionary and delusive amusements of it subside in age and want, 429. It ought to be cherished when it operates as an excitement of industry, iii. 292. It predominates amidst frequent disappointments, iv. 323. In what respect the chief happiness of man, 367. Its frustration less dreadful than its extinction, v. 234. Described by Cowley, vi. 37.

Horace, remarks on several passages of, xi. 412. Lib. iv. Ode vii. translated, i, 349.

Horse-Racing, the folly of, xi. 404.

Hospitals for the Sick, the use and advantages of, v. 15. Their being made permanent recommended, 15. Danger from the competitions between different hospitals, 16.

Howard, Sir Robert, joins Dryden in writing the Indian Queen, vi. 320. Has a controversy with Dryden on dramatick rhyme, 320, 321.

Hudibras, Part I. published 1663. Part II. 1664. Part III. published 1678, vi. 186. The idea taken from Don Quixote, 190. The characters compared, 191. Being written on a temporary subject, is now nearly forgotten, v. 236.

Hughes, John, his life, vii. 146. Born at Marlborough, in Wiltshire, 146. Educated in a dissenter's academy, 146. Became skilled in poetry and musick, 146. Held a place in the office of Ordnance, 146. Translated Fontenelle's Dialogues of the Dead, and added two new ones, which he dedicates to Lord Wharton, who promised to provide for him in Ireland, 148. Assisted in the Tatler, Spectator, and Guardian, 148. Made secretary to the Commissioners of Peace, 1717, 150. Died in 1719-20, 150. Account of his works, 151. His character, according to Swift and Pope, 151.

Hum, story of Burnet and Sprat respecting the practice of humming, when sermons were approved of, vii. 41.

Human Wishes, the Vanity of, in imitation of the Tenth Satire Juvenal, i. 207.

Humour, good, the peculiar value of this quality, iii. 7, 8.

Humourist, considerations on that character, xi. 549.

Hungary, Queen of, opposes the King of Prussia's claim on Silesia, ix. 245. Surrenders half of Silesia to the King of Prussia, 247. Opposed on every side, prepares for resistance, 255. 500,000*l.* voted to her by the English Parliament, 256. Makes peace

with the King of Prussia, and surrenders the remaining half of Silesia to him, 260. Proceedings against the army of France, 261.

Hunt, Arabella, vii. 204.

Hymenæus, his account of the disagreeable qualities of some ladies, iii. 265. 278. His marriage with Tranquilla, and the happiness connected with it, iv. 158.

Hyperboles, examples of, enormous and disgusting, vi. 29.

Hyperdulus, account of his treatment by his relations, iv. 51.

Hypertatus, his reflections upon the conveniencies and advantages of a garret, iii. 292.

Hypocrisy, not always to be charged upon such as are zealous for virtues which they neglect to practise, ii. 90. Wherein it differs from affectation, 134.

I. and J.

JAMAICA characterized, xii. 56.

James I. King, characterized, xii. 51. A remarkable conversation between him and the Bishops of Durham and Winchester, vi. 230.

Ianthe, her character, ii. 121.

Java, island of, account of, and of the inhabitants, ix. 143.

Icolmkill, account of, xii. 414.

Idleness, its fatal effects, iii. 89. Its competition with pride, v. 121. Character of the true votaries of, 121. Under the appearance of business, ridiculed, 191.

Idler, definition of an, v. 1. The peculiar characteristic of man, 2. Has no rivals or enemies, 3. His privilege to form schemes, 3. Always inquisitive, and seldom retentive, 3. Naturally censorious, 4. May sometimes be stimulated to vigour and activity, 4. Invites correspondents, 4. Laments his not having received any essays, 6. A genuine one described, 34. Enemies to the Idler, 36. Journal of a genuine one, 129. His farewell, 408.

Idlers, the various employment of, v. 64. Cruel Idlers reprobated, 65.

Jenyns, Soame, review of his Free Enquiry into the Nature and Origin of Evil, xi. 276.

Ignorance of ourselves, the source of most errors in human conduct, ii. 158. And admiration, their mutual and reciprocal operation, iii. 25.

Images, how the same images strike the mind in a similar manner, as Spring, Night, Grove, &c. xi. 502.

Imagination, the danger of indulging the excursions and amusements of it, v. 538. iii. 110.

Imitation of others, when attended with servility, highly censurable, iv. 145.

Imlac, the history of, v. 439.
Impatience of study, the mental disease of the present generation, iv. 82.
Imperia, her ambition and pride, iii. 283.
Improviso on a young heir's coming of age, i. 363.
Inch Keith, island of, account of, xii. 229.
Inch Kenneth, account of, xii. 407. Account of a remarkable cave there, 411.
Inconsistency, distinguished from diversity, v. 441.
Incontinence, the effect of the magnet in the detection of, iv. 341. A scheme for the detection of it proposed, 344.
Independents and Presbyterians, account of the disputes between them at Oxford, on the authority of ministers, ix. 210.
Indian, speech of an Indian on the European encroachments, v. 325.
Indians of America, considerations on their granting their lands to foreign nations, xii. 35.
Indians on the coast of Brazil, their method of taking ostriches, ix. 108. Account of them, ibid.
Indolence, the difficulty of being reformed from it, iv. 93.
Industry, necessary, as well as genius, to acquire an eminence in literary productions, ii. 165. 167.
Ingratitude, the peculiar baseness and infamy of it, iv. 51. The effect of great depravity of mind, ibid.
Injuries, the forgiveness of them necessary to happiness, iv. 260. When easiest to be practised, 261. The motives to encourage it, ibid.
Innocence, the great prerogative of, ii. 434.
Interest, the influence of it upon the resolutions and actions of life, iv. 250. A destroyer of friendship, v. 89.
Intromission, vicious, case of, xi. 190.
Inverary, account of, xii. 427.
Inverness, account of, xii. 257.
John, King, observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 203.
Johnson, his Tour to the Western Islands. See *Hebrides*.
Johnson, Dr. life of, i. 1. Statue in St. Paul's, i. 192.
Johnson, Michael, epitaph on, i. 364.
Johnson, Mrs. Samuel, i. 365.
Johnson, Mr. (of the Lay Monastery), his character, vii. 214.
Johnson, Mrs. See *Stella*.
Iona, account of, xii. 416.
Jonson, Ben, made his own plots, vi. 330. Characterized as a writer of plays, i. 220.
Jortin, Mr. assists Pope in the notes to the Iliad, viii. 81.
Journal, of a senior fellow of a college, v. 129. Of a scholar, 267.
Journey into Devonshire, exaggeratingly related, v. 194.
Ireland, may date its riches and prosperity from the patronage of Dean Swift, viii. 37.

Irene, a tragedy, i. 223.
Iron, every where to be found, v. 146. More valuable for the use of man than gold, 146. Necessaries of life plentiful as iron, superfluities scarce as gold, 146.
Julian, Port, account of the inhabitants of, ix. 113.
Julius Cæsar, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, x. 212.
Junius, his writings characterized, xii. 150.
Junius, (the Grammarian), account of his writings, x. 39.
Justice, the measure of it prescribed to us, clear and comprehensive, iii. 60. A strict regard to it ought to regulate the distributions of mercy, 61. The exercise of it should be softened by prudence and lenity, 271. First impelled by injustice, v. 358.
Juvenal, Satire III. imitated, in London, a poem, i. 195. Satire X. imitated, in the Vanity of Human Wishes, i. 207.

K.

KELP, account of the manufacture of, in Sky, xii. 337.
King, William, his life, vii. 31. Born in London, 1663, and allied to Clarendon, 31. Scholar at Westminster, and elected to Christ-Church, 31. Was said to have read over and made his remarks on more than 22,000 books and MSS. before he was of eight years' standing, 31. Took his Master's degree as Grand Compounder, 31. Admitted Advocate at Doctors' Commons, 32. Wrote a confutation of Varillas's Account of Wickliffe, 32. Translates several books from the French, 32. Answers Molesworth's account of Denmark, 32. Mingled in the controversy between Boyle and Bentley, 32. In 1699, writes a Journey to London, 32. Satirizes Sir Hans Sloane in the Transactioner, 32. Signalizes himself in the defence of the Earl of Anglesea against his lady, 33. Made judge of the Admiralty, and Keeper of the Records in Birmingham's Tower, 33. Finds an idle and thoughtless friend in Upton, 33. Returns to London in 1708, 33. Account of his works, 33. Made Gazetteer, which he soon resigned, 34. Died on Christmas-day, 1712, 35.
Kings, advantages from their being acquainted with the lower lines of life, ix. 236.
Kneller, Sir Godfrey, Pope's Epitaph on him, viii. 211.
Knolles, Sir Francis, the peculiar excellence of his History of the Turks, iii. 331.
Knowledge, its greatest importance, when useful to virtue and happiness, iii. 72. The desire of acquiring it should be subservient to some nobler principle, 202. The desire of it, in many, of feeble and transient influence, iv. 223. The failures to which men devoted to the study of it are peculiarly exposed, 233. The difficulty in obtaining it, v. 364. The folly of searching for it in foreign languages, and neglecting our own, 365.

Know yourself, Translation of Dr. Johnson's γνωθι σεαυτον, i. 84.
Knowledge of ourselves, its great use and importance, ii. 158. The indiscretions and disadvantages which arise from the neglect of it, 158, 159. Necessary to preserve us from crimes as well as follies, 181. Promoted by scenes of adversity, 186.
Knowledge, *Tree of*, metaphysically described, vi. 24.

L.

LABOUR and Rest the parents of health and vigour, ii. 218.
Ladies, many of their indiscretions and errors arise from unacquaintance with themselves, ii. 161. Some of their appropriate virtues related, iii. 165. Several of their degrading qualities described in the characters of Ferocula, Misothea, and Sophronia, 268. The folly of rendering themselves cheap, 171.
Lady, *unfortunate*, on whom Pope wrote verses, story of, viii. 68.
Landsdown, *Lord*. See *Granville*, *George*.
Language, the impossibility of reducing it to a fixed standard, x. 61. Remarks on the purity and propriety of it, iv. 165. The progress of, v. 253. A plan for a society for the reformation, formed by the Earl of Roscommon assisted by Dryden, vi. 214. The plan revived by Dr. Swift, 215. The probable consequences of such a society, 216.
Last, the general dread of the last, v. 408. Reflections on the use to be made of the last of any human action, 409.
Latronia, her character, iv. 246.
Laud, *Abp.* account of a dispute between him and Cheynel, ix. 203.
Lauder, *William*, Letter from, to Mr. Douglas, written by Johnson, x. 339. Testimonies concerning, 353.
Laurence, *Th. M.D.* ad, cum filium peregre agentem desiderio nimis tristi persequeretur, i. 381.
Law, Dr. Johnson's opinions on questions of, xi. 186.
Lay Monastery, account of a periodical paper of that name, published as a sequel to the Spectator, vii. 214.
Lay Patronage, case of, in Scotland, xi. 198.
Laziness, commonly associated with timidity, iii. 402.
Lear, *King*, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, x. 216.
Learned Men, advantages from their living in societies, xi. 395. Their complaints of ill treatment and neglected merit examined, iii. 36. The neglect of some occasioned by their own inconsistency of conduct, 38. Such become objects of just contempt, who by their writings seduce others to vice, 41. By various actions exposed to contempt, 420. Their condescension and affability sources of great esteem, 422.
Learning, the advantages of, xi. 461. History of a man of, v. 531. Eminence in, not to be obtained without labour, ii. 139.

The possession of applause on that account, a precarious tenure, 140. Its origin and excellence, 144. Wherein it differs from wit, 145. The mutual advantages from an union with wit, ibid. The proper business of youth, iii. 238. Degraded by promiscuous and indecent dedications, 413. Wherein the chief art consists, 418. Literary eminence not to be acquired from the study of books, iv. 86. Advanced by adhering to a settled plan, v. 266. Sometimes improved by accident, 266. Obstructions to, 375. Not confined to time or place, 376. Sir R. Blackmore's opinion of, vii. 222.

Leasowes, rendered elegant by the taste of Shenstone, viii. 280.

Lee, Nath. in conjunction with Dryden wrote the Duke of Guise and Œdipus, vi. 341. 344.

Legacy-Hunter, his character represented in the history of Captator, iv. 327.

Legendary Tales, burlesque on the modern versification of, i. 360.

Lentulus, his history, xi. 422.

Letters, characters not to be established from them, viii. 156.

Leviculus, his character, iv. 244.

Levet, Dr. Robert, verses on his death, i. 342.

Liar, characterized, xi. 397. Lie of vanity defined, 399. Ought to be punished at the whipping-post or in the pillory, 403.

Liberalis, the wit, some account of the disagreeable treatment he met with, iv. 127.

Liberty of the Press, reflections on, vii. 325.

Licensers of the stage. See *Stage*.

Lies, once uttered, sullenly supported, vii. 190.

Life, human, Theodore's Vision on the progress of, xi. 333. Posidippus's account of, 499. Metrodorus's account of, ibid. The tediousness of, to those who are averse to the pleasures of solitude, ii. 29. The shortness and uncertainty of it should determine us to moderate our passions and contract our desires, 114. The miseries incident to it designed for the exercise and improvement of virtue, 209. Instinct and passion the first springs and motives of action in it, 313. Often distressed by new desires and artificial passions, which strongly operate, and produce avarice, vanity, and ambition, 314. The main of it composed of small incidents, 430. The great end of prudence is to direct some of its principal scenes, 431. The shortness of it not duly regarded, iii. 3. The fragility of it not duly regarded, 4. Exact calculations of the value of it more useful in traffick than in morality, 5. The duties of it commensurate to its duration, 6. Described under the similitude of the ocean, 195. The numerous dangers which attend our passage through it, 197. The gulph of intemperance peculiarly dangerous and fatal, 199. The numerous blessings of it to be esteemed and improved as means of happiness, 257. A conviction of the shortness of it should repress our projects, and

limit our expectations, iv. 147. Of multitudes compared to a lottery, 244. The general plan of it should be formed from reflections, 255. On the uncertainty of, v. 164. Compared to a day and a year, 172. Plans laid down seldom put in practice, exemplified in the history of Omar, 402.

Life, choice of, observations on, v. 468. The hermit's directions, 477.

Life, country, the busy scenes of it described in the character of Lady Bustle, ii. 325.

Life, fashionable, or modish, disgraced by numerous and detestable follies, iii. 286.

Light, the poetical propagation of, vi. 33.

Lilinet the Fairy, story of, xi. 350.

Linger, Dick, the story of, v. 80.

Listlessness characterized, in the story of Dick Linger, v. 80.

Literary Magazine, Johnson's connexion with, xi. 33. Writings in, 225, &c. Preface to, 57.

Literary Property, the villainy of piracy in, vi. 308. Never heard of but in England, 308. Stupidity the surest title to an author's writings, 309.

Literature, the manufacturers of it, account of their characters, iv. 32.

Lobo, Father, Preface to the Translation of his Voyage to Abyssinia, x. 315. Account of it, i. 15.

Lochbuy, account of, xii. 420. 424.

Lofty, Lady, her character, ii. 76.

London and Bristol, delineated by Savage, vii. 397. Happiness of the great on their return to London, v. 322. Happiness of virgins going there to try their fortunes, 322. Their happiness generally ends in disappointment, 324. A poem, in imitation of the Third Satire of Juvenal, i. 195.

London Chronicle, Preliminary Discourse to it, Jan. 1, 1757, x. 253.

Longueville, William, some account of, vi. 184.

Longitude, account of an attempt to ascertain, x. 368.

Lottery, the life of multitudes compared to it, iv. 244. The passionate and ensnaring hopes of gain by them, 238, 239. Most commonly visionary and fallacious, 239. The imaginary prospects of fortuitous riches, injurious to trade, and the sources of perpetual delusion, 240, 241.

Love, metaphysically described, vi. 26. In geographical poetry compared to travels through various countries, 26. Described according to the laws of augury, 27. A lover neither dead nor alive, 32. A lover's heart, a hand grenado, 33. A mistress beloved is fairer in idea than in reality, 34. Meditations of a lover, 35. Described by Dryden, 434. Man inspired to honour and glory by it, i. 321. The universal agent of the stage, except in Shakspeare, x. 137. Success in it most easily obtained by indirect approaches, ii. 3.

Love of excellence, natural, vi. 6.
Love's Labour Lost, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, x. 199.
Love's Riddle, written by Cowley, when at school, vi. 3.
Lough Ness, account of, xii. 260.
Louisbourg, the English and French account of the capture of it, contrasted, v. 76.
Lucan, his Pharsalia translated by Christopher Pitt, before he was twenty years of age, viii. 219.
Lucas Family, all the brothers valiant, all the sisters virtuous, v. 47.
Lucifer, described by Cowley, vi. 55.
Lucretius, remarks on his system, ii. 336.
Luxury, united with indolence produceth the most pernicious effects, ii. 217. The veterans of it strongly addicted to sallies and excess of resentment and fury, 259. Its fatal effects exemplified in the history of Hacho, King of Lapland, v. 382.
Lyce, an elderly lady, verses to, i. 341.
Lycidas, written by Milton, in 1637, vi. 91. Character of that poem, 153.
Lyttelton, George, Lord, his life, viii. 382. Son of Sir Thomas Lyttelton of Hagley, Worcestershire, born 1709, 382. Educated at Eton, and removed to Christ Church, 382. An early writer both in verse and prose, 382. Leaves Oxford 1728, and travels through France and Italy, 383. An opponent in parliament to Sir R. Walpole, 383. Secretary to the Prince of Wales, 383. Introduces Thomson and Mallet into the suite of the Prince of Wales, 383. Lord of the Treasury 1744, 384. Writes observations on the conversion of St. Paul, 1747, 385. His father's letter to him on that publication, 385. Succeeds his father in the title of Baronet 1751, 385. Becomes Cofferer and Privy Counsellor 1754, 386. Chancellor of the Exchequer 1755, 386. Travels into Wales, 386. Patronises Archibald Bower, 386. Publishes Dialogues on the Dead, 386. Created Lord Lyttelton, 387. Story of the publication of his life of Henry II. 387. Account of his last illness and death 1763, by his physician, 388. His epitaph, 390. His poetical works characterized, 399.

M.

MACBETH, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, x. 73. 202. Remarks on the impropriety, as well as energy of its diction, iv. 165. Account of the castle of, at Inverness, xii. 257.
Macclesfield, Earl and Countess of, account of their divorce, vii. 287. The Countess marries Col. Brett, 288. Gives 50*l.* to Savage, 299. Disappointed in her South Sea traffic, 300. Continues to persecute her son, 301.
Macdonald, Sir Alexander, account of his house at Armidel in the

Isle of Sky, xii. 285. The tradition of one of his predecessors burning the inhabitants of Culloden in a church, ibid.

Macdonald, Hugh, account of his conspiracy against his chief to whom he was heir in the time of James VI. xii. 317.

Macdonald, Flora, interview with, ix. 391. xii. 309.

Mackinnon, account of his house at Coriatachan in Sky, xii. 292.

Maclean of Col, account of himself and family, xii. 377.

Macleod, account of that happy family, proprietors of the island of Raasay, xii. 297. Account of that family and their house at Dunvegan, 309.

Madock, Prince, epitaph on, i. 415.

Magnet, first discovered 1299, x. 259. The pretended and imaginary influence of it, iv. 341.

Mallet, David, writes part of the prologue to Sophonisba, vii. 228. In conjunction with Thomson, writes the Masque of Alfred, 231. His Life, 349. Of the Clan of Macgregors, his father took the name of Malloch, 349. Janitor of the High School at Edinburgh, 349. Tutor to the sons of the Duke of Montrose, 349. Travels with his pupils, and on his return to London, is introduced to persons of the highest rank and character, 350. William and Margaret, his first production, 1724, 350. His other works, 350. Changes his name to Mallet, 351. Becomes acquainted with Pope, 351. Writes the Life of Bacon prefixed to his works, 1750, 352. Undertakes the Life of Marlborough, 352. Under-secretary to the Prince of Wales, with a pension of 200*l.* a year, 352. In conjunction with Thomson, writes the Masque of Alfred, 352. His conversation with Garrick on introducing his name in the life of Marlborough, 352. Duchess of Marlborough leaves him 1000*l.*, 353. Leaves no historical labours behind him, 353. Mustapha acted at Drury Lane, 1739, 353. Sells the copy of Amyntor and Theodora for 120*l.*, 354. Introduced to the friendship of Lord Bolingbroke, 354. Lord Bolingbroke leaves him his works, 354. Masque of Britannia, acted 1755, 355. Elvira acted 1763, 355. Keeper of the book of entries for ships in the port of London, 355. Writes a letter of accusation against Admiral Byng, under the character of a Plain Man, for which he receives a pension, 355. Died 1765, 355. Character of him and his works, 355.

Malouines. See *Falkland Islands*.

Man, a good man, a telescope, vi. 28. All he has to do is to live and die, 34. Who travels and his wife who stays at home, compared to a pair of compasses, 38. Characters of a cheerful and pensive man, 155. Lord Rochester's satire criticised, 207. Diversified by various tastes, ii. 31. In the different classes have desires and pleasures peculiar to themselves, 441. Their desires more numerous than their attainments, iii. 210. Ranged under the two classes of merely animal and reasonable

beings, iv. 226. The importance of every one in his own eyes, v. 45. Most men struggle for fame, 45. The difficulty of getting a name, 45. The necessity of his being acquainted with himself, 105. The difficulty of such enquiries, 105. His desires encrease with his acquisitions, 117. Money and time the heaviest burthens of life, 118. The similar condition in all situations of life, 203. Few opportunities of shewing great powers, 204. The necessity of the enquiry, "*What have ye done?*" 354. The characters of a reading man, a ready man, and of an exact man, considered, xi. 461.

Man and Wife, on disputes between, v. 49.

Manna, metaphysically described, vi. 24.

Manuscripts, the propriety of placing them in some publick library, v. 261. The loss of knowledge, by the loss of old libraries, lamented, 263.

Marino, metaphysical poetry borrowed from him, vi. 23.

Marlborough, Duke of, his life undertaken by Mallet. See *Mallet*.

Marlborough, Henrietta, Duchess of, her partiality for Congreve, vii. 199. Congreve leaves her 10,000*l.*, 199. Erects a monument to his memory, 199.

Marlborough, Sarah, Duchess of, celebrated by Pope in his characters of women, under the character of Atossa, viii. 132. Severe reflections on her conduct, ii. 84. Review of her Conduct, xi. 218.

Marmor Norfolciense, an Essay on an Ancient Prophetical Inscription, xii. 3.

Marriage, the divorce of the Earl and Countess of Macclesfield by the Lords, considered as a bad precedent, vii. 287. The dictate of nature, and the institution of Providence, ii. 116. General observations concerning it, 226. The source of those infelicities which frequently attend that state, 253. Why so many are unsuitable, 292. Contracts of it begun in fraud, end in disappointment, 294. The officiousness of some in promoting them censured, iii. 278. The folly of publishing them in newspapers, v. 46. Praises on that occasion generally fallacious, 47. Proposal for an office for writing matrimonial panegyricks, 48. Has many pains, but celibacy no pleasures, 491. On the happiness and unhappiness of that state, 495. Early marriages characterized, 497. Misfortunes of late marriages, 500. Early marriages best pleased with their partners, late ones with their children, ibid.

Martin, (who wrote the history of the Hebrides), account of him, xii. 305.

Marvel, Will, story of his journey into Devonshire, v. 194.

Mason, Mr. additions to Mr. Temple's character of Gray, viii. 371.

Masquerades, their pernicious influence and effects, ii. 64.

Matter, considerations on the hypothesis of, by Sir Isaac Newton, xi. 235.

May, Thomas, superior both to Cowley and Milton in Latin poetry, vi. 13.

Maypole, Miss, her observations on the imprudent conduct of her mother, ii. 351.

Measure for Measure, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, x. 198.

Mediocrity, a quality essential to happiness as well as virtue, ii. 245.

Melanthia, her character, ii. 255.

Melcombe, Lord, his *Tusculan la Trappe*, sent to Dr. Young, viii. 332. His Letter to Young, 333.

Melissa, her character, iii. 25. Her vanity excited by a general veneration, 25. By an unexpected reduction of her fortune, subject to various mortifications, 29.

Melissus, his character, ii. 121.

Memory, the peculiar exercise of that faculty of the mind, ii. 265. Characterized, v. 175. Collection and distribution, the two offices of, 175. Collection the most agreeable part, 175. Themistocles' wish to learn the art of forgetfulness, 177. Observations on the improvement of, 288. The mother of the Muses, 296. The necessity of, in the acquisition of knowledge, 296. Nature seldom sparing in the gifts of, 296. Few examples of enormous, wonderful, and gigantic memory, 297. Methods of improvement, 298.

Menander, style of, clear and natural, xi. 79. Plutarch's sentiment upon, 83.

Mercator, his history, xi. 490.

Merchant, the knowledge necessary for a merchant, x. 310. The necessity of, between the manufacturer and consumer, explained, xii. 334.

Merchant of Venice, observations on Shakspeare's, x. 199.

Merchant, Mr. in company with Savage and Gregory when James Sinclair was murdered, v. 309.

Merit, the complaints of the neglect of it often ill-grounded, ii. 378. The persecutors of real merit distinguished into various classes, iv. 24.

Merriment, preconcerted, seldom answers the expectation, v. 232. Generally the effect of chance, 233.

Merry Wives of Windsor, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, x. 196.

Merton College, Oxford, accounts of the disputes respecting the visitation of, ix. 203.

Metaphysical Poetry, what, vi. 19. Borrowed from Marino and his followers, and recommended by Donne and Jonson, 23. Other successors, 23. Critical remarks on this kind of writing, 23.

Metastasio, translation of an air in the Clemenza of, i. 359. Translation of the speech of Aquileio, in the Adriano of, 360.
Metrodorus, his account of life, xi. 500.
Midsummer, an Ode, i. 328.
Midsummer Night's Dream, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, x. 199.
Milbourne, Rev. Mr. specimen of his criticism on Dryden's translation of Virgil, vi. 426.
Milton, John, remarks on his versification, iii. 91. 105. The peculiarity of it, wherein it consists, 106. He formed his scheme of it upon the models of Greece and Rome, 115. Critical remarks on his Samson Agonistes, a tragedy, 431. 437. Preface to an essay on his use and imitation of moderns in his Paradise Lost, x. 331. From whence he took the first hints of Paradise Lost, 332. MSS. called Adam Unparadised, supposed to be the embryo of Paradise Lost, 333. Subscriptions solicited for Mrs. Eliz. Foster, his grand-daughter, 334. Inferior both to May and Cowley in Latin Poetry, vi. 13. Life of, 84. Descended from the proprietors of Milton, near Thame in Oxfordshire, 84. His grandfather keeper of the forest of Shotover, 84. His father a Scrivener, and eminent for his skill in musick, 84. His mother's name Caston, a Welsh family, 85. His brother Christopher knighted by King James, and made a Judge, 85. His sister Anne, married Edward Philips, Secondary in the Crown Office, who left two sons, John and Edward, who were educated by the poet, 85. Born at his father's the Spread Eagle, in Bread-street, London, Dec. 9, 1608, 15. Received private tuition under Mr. Young, then went to St. Paul's school, and entered Sizar at Christ's College, Cambridge, Feb. 12, 1624, 16. At fifteen years of age, he versified Psal. cxiv. and cxxxvi. 86. Wrote many elegies in his eighteenth year, 86. Wrote Latin verses with classic elegance, 87. Received corporal punishment at Cambridge, 87. Took his Bachelor's degree, 1628, and Master's, 1632, 88. Observations on his "*Scheme of Education*," 89. One of his objections to academical education, 89. His objections to entering into the ministry, 89. After leaving the university, he spent five years with his father in the country, where he read the Greek and Latin authors, 90. His Mask of Comus, first acted in 1634, 91. His Lycidas, written in 1637, and his Arcades about the same time, 92. Travels in 1638, 92. Scarce any ever wrote so much, or praised so few, 93. Particularly noticed at Florence, 93. Receives various Italian testimonies in his favour, 94. Returns to London, 95. Instructs his nephews, J. and E. Philips, and some other boys, 95. His biographers inclined to shrink from this part of his life, 96. A schoolmaster an honest and useful employment, 97. In education, he is said to have performed wonders, 97. On Sundays he instructed his scholars in theology, 99. His treatise on Reformation, published in 1641, 99.

Answers a book of Bishop Usher's in defence of Episcopacy, 100. Publishes his reasons of church government urged against prelacy, and two other pamphlets on the same subject, 100. Marries Mary Powel, who leaves him after one month, 102. Publishes several books on divorce, for which he is called before the Lords, but soon dismissed, 103. Becomes an enemy to the Presbyterians, 104. Pays his addresses to a daughter of Dr. Davis, 104. His wife asks forgiveness, and returns to him, 104. Publishes his Areopagitica, 104. Publishes a collection of Latin and English poems 1645, 105. Takes a larger house in Barbican for his scholars, 105. Grants a refuge to the relations of his wife, 105. As a schoolmaster compared to a chamber milliner, 106. Is supposed to have had a design of entering into Sir W. Waller's army as Adjutant General, 106. Removes to a small house in Holborn, 106. Writes in justification of the King's murder, 106. Writes remarks on the articles of peace between Ormond and the Irish rebels, 106. Suspected of having interpolated the *Icon Basilike*, 107. Answers Salmasius's *Defensio Regis*, 108. His blindness laid to the charge of Salmasius's book, 110. Loses his wife in childbed, 111. Marries a daughter of Capt. Woodcock, who also dies in childbed in the first year, 111. Various answers to the "*Defensio Populi*," 112. Writes his "*Defensio Secunda*," 112. Instance of his flattery to Cromwell, 112. Supposed to have written the declaration of the reasons for a war with Spain, 114. Attempts to collect a Latin Dictionary, which is afterwards made use of in a new edition of Littleton, 115. Compiles a history of England to the Conquest, 115. Designs his Paradise Lost, 116. Sketch of the original plan, 116. Continues to write in favour of a Commonwealth, even to within a few weeks of the Restoration, 121. At the Restoration concealed himself in Bartholomew Close, 122. His Defence burned by the common hangman, 122. His prosecution stopped by the intercession of Davenant, whose life Milton had saved, 123. Removes to Jewin Street, and marries Elizabeth Minshul, 125. Is said to have had an offer of continuing in his place, 125. Accidence commenced Grammar 1661, 126. Employs Elwood the quaker to read Latin to him, 126. Takes a house in Artillery Walk, 127. Wrote his Paradise Lost only between the autumnal and vernal equinoxes, 129. Was of opinion that the world was in its decay, 131. Imagined the climate too cold for flights of imagination, 132. His daughters were not taught to write, 133. Lives unmolested after the Restoration, 134. Retires to Chalfont during the plague, 135. The next year returns to Bunhill-fields, 135. A complete copy of Paradise Lost first seen 1665, 135. Obtains a licence, and sells the copy for 5*l.* and 5*l.* at the sale of 1300 copies of each of the first three editions, 135. Causes of the supposed neglect of the Paradise Lost, 136. Books of

various languages read to him by his daughters and friends, 138. Publishes his history of England three years after Paradise Lost, 140. Publishes Paradise Regained, and Samson Agonistes, in the same year, 140. Publishes his *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio* 1672, 141. Publishes a Treatise on true Religion, &c. 142. Reprints his juvenile Poems with some additions, 142. His last publication was familiar Epistles in Latin, some academical exercises, 142. Died Nov. 10, 1674, and buried at St. Giles's, Cripplegate, 143. A monument erected to his memory in Westminster-Abbey by Mr. Benson, 143. His person described, 143. His domestic habits described, 144. His salary, as Latin Secretary, 200*l.* a year, 145. Received 1000*l.* for his Defence of the People, and lost very considerable sums of money, 145. Left 1500*l.* to his widow, 145. Account of his great learning, 146. His theological opinions, 146. His political notions, 148. He thought woman made only for obedience, and man for rebellion, 149. Account of his family, 149. Comus acted April 5, 1750, for the benefit of a grand-daughter of Milton, Dr. Johnson wrote a prologue, 150. Account of his poetical works, 152. Character of his Lycidas, 153. Character of *L' Allegro* and *Il Penseroso*, 155. Many of their images borrowed from Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy, 157. Mask of Comus characterised, 158. His Sonnets characterised, 160. His Paradise Lost characterised, 160. His Paradise Regained characterised, 178. His Samson Agonistes characterised, 178. Philips's Parody on him characterised, 300. His Paradise Lost becomes popular through Addison's remarks, vii. 142.

Mince Pies and Plumb Porridge, animosities excited by the use of, vi. 197.

Mind, the productions of, proceed step by step, xi. 69. The freest part of man, 93. The tranquillity of it, from what sources generally derived, ii. 33. Its extensive powers displayed, 266. The rise and progress of its dispositions and faculties, iv. 65. Shewn in the gradations from pleasure to ambition and avarice, 68. The medicines most suitable to its distempers, often unpleasing to the taste, 117.

Mines, alone, not the source of wealth, x. 398.

Minim, Dick, his history, v. 239. His opinion of many of the poets, 240. Becomes a critick, 242. Forms a plan for an academy of criticism, 244. Presides in a critical society, 245. His advice to a student, 247.

Ministers, account of the disputes between the Independents and Presbyterians on the authority of, ix. 210.

Misanthrope, of Moliere, a complete character, xi. 82.

Misella, her affecting narrative of her being betrayed by the treachery of her uncle, and the fatal influence of it on her virtue and happiness, iv. 175. 181.

Misellus, his account of his commencing an author, ii. 103.

Misery, how increased by comparison with happiness, xi. 509.
Miseries of the World, the knowledge of, necessary to happiness, v. 452.
Misocapelus, the events which discouraged him from engaging in trade, iii. 285. His appearing in the character of a wit, 333.
Misocolax, his censure of the practice of giving unmerited praise, iii. 355.
Misothea, her fondness for disputation, iii. 268.
Misty, Dick, his history, v. 315.
Mitissa, her conduct in a married life described, ii. 230.
Modena, Duke of, translation of a distich on his running away from a comet, i. 357.
Moderation, man of, his character, iv. 26.
Molesworth, his account of Denmark, answered by Dr. King, vii. 32.
Monastick life, considerations on, v. 552.
Monboddo, Lord, visited by Dr. Johnson, xii. 240.
Money, no man can be born a lover of it, viii. 130. Enquiry into the value of, in Scotland, about 200 years ago, xii. 243.
Money Lenders, their vile practices exposed, xi. 386.
Montague, Lady Mary Wortley, Savage's flattery of her in the dedication to his miscellany of poems, vii. 307.
Montague, Mrs. on her bust, i. 362.
Montrose, account of, xii. 239.
Morad, his history, iv. 287.
Morality, inquiries relating to it vastly preferable to physical contemplations, ii. 157. This truth illustrated in the character of Gelidus, 158. The ancient poets very exceptionable teachers of it, 188.
Morin, Lewis, his life translated from the Eloge by Fontenelle, ix. 170. Born at Mens 1635, ibid. Applies to the study of botany, ibid. Studied philosophy at Paris, 171. Studies physick, and confines himself to a regimen of bread, water, and fruit, ibid. Admitted Doctor of Physick 1662, ibid. Physician to the Hotel Dieu, 172. Physician to the Mad. de Guise, who, at her death, leaves him a pension of 2000 livres, 173. Retires to St. Victor, ibid. Associate botanist of the Royal Academy 1699, ibid. Pensionary of the Royal Academy, ibid. Died 1714, 175. He kept a journal of the weather for forty years, 176.
Morrow, Demetrius's speech on the expectation of, i. 263.
Mortality, the due consideration of it a proper means of preventing our misery, and promoting our happiness, ii. 110.
Mother, their greater cruelty in distressing their offspring than in murdering it, vii. 317.
Mountains, on the measurement of the height of, xii. 271. Advantages of travelling through mountainous and barren countries, 273.

Muck Island, account of, xii. 313.
Mull Isle, account of, xii. 399.
Mulso, Miss, her papers in the Rambler, ii. 65.
Murray, Lady Sophia, celebrated by Waller under the name of Amoret, vi. 233.
Myrtilla, her account of the character and behaviour of Flavia, iii. 78.
Muses, Memory the mother of, v. 296.
Musick, the pleasure of ladies in attending musical performances, v. 68.
Mysargyrus, his history, xi. 371. 385. History of his companions in the Fleet Prison, 404. 418.

N.

NAIRN, account of, xii. 255.
Narration, historical, the difficulty of this kind of writing illustrated, iii. 328.
Nature, the contemplation of its works, fitted to afford pleasure and instruction, ii. 30. It furnishes a source of proper materials for reflection from the objects about us, and discovers new reasons for adoring the sovereign Author of the universe, 31. By enlarging our curiosity after the works of nature we multiply the inlets of happiness, 32.
Nation, its state to be discovered by the manners of the common people, xii. 251.
Natural History, difficulties in writing on that subject, v. 220.
Nature, no danger of her being exhausted, v. 10.
Navigation, no tradition of, before Noah's Ark, x. 258. Slow progress of, for two centuries after the discovery of the compass, 259. Don Henry, son of John I. King of Portugal, the first who formed the design of making new discoveries about 1410, 260. Short account of discoveries made under the direction of Don Henry, 261. Short account of the progress of other discoveries, 269.
Neale, Edmund, known by the name of Smith. See *Smith*.
Necessaries, and superfluities of life considered, v. 147.
Needle-work, the folly of confining girls wholly to it, v. 50.
Negligence, the power of it strengthened by small indulgencies, iv. 354.
Nelson, Robert, anecdote of him, xi. 552.
Neutrality, a prisoner may promise to observe it, vii. 11.
News, on the fond appetite for, ii. 387.
Newspapers, the advantage of, to idlers, v. 25. Contribute to the knowledge of the common people, 26. Directions for spinning out news, 27. The amazing increase of, 119. Description of a news-writer, by Sir Henry Wotton, 119. Qua-

lifications of a news-writer, 119. On the increase of advertisements, 159. Account of the Mercurius Aulicus, Mercurius Rusticus, and Mercurius Civicus, vii. 88. Account of L'Estrange's Observator, and Lesley's Rehearsal, 89.

Newton, Sir Isaac, Pope's Epitaph intended for him, viii. 216. Observations on his character, x. 322. An epitaph recommended for him, ibid. Review of his four letters to Dr. Bentley, containing some arguments in proof of a Deity, xi. 235.

Night, described by Dr. Donne, vi. 37.

Nitella, her excessive nicety freely censured, iii. 281.

Noir, M. le, short account of, v. 192.

Nombre de Dios, account of Drake's expedition against it, ix. 67.

Nothing, criticism on Lord Rochester's poem on, vi. 205. Poema J. Passeratii de Nihilo, 208

Novelty, the strong propensity of the human mind towards it, iii. 54. Hence we grow weary of uniformity, 55. An eminent source of pleasing gratification, 409. The charms of it transitory however endearing the possession, iv. 191. In writers, considered, xi. 476.

Nouradin, the merchant of Samarchand, his dying address to his son Almamoulin, iii. 314.

Nugaculus, his mean and absurd character delineated, iii. 206.

O.

OBSCURITY in writing, often the effect of haste, iv. 173.

Obidah, his journey of a day, an instructive description of human life, ii. 412.

Old age, its best pleasures drawn from a review of a virtuous life, ii. 268. By what means it becomes entitled to veneration, 323. The peculiar vices of it described, 324. The numerous infelicities which attend it, 436. Wealth only an imaginary support of it, ibid. Piety the only proper and adequate relief and best provision against the infirmities and distressess of that season, 440. Is peculiarly given to procrastination, iii. 2.

Oldfield, Mrs. allows Savage 50*l.* a year during her life, vii. 300. Celebrated in the *Wanderer* for her beauty, 301.

Oldisworth, with Broome and Ozell, translate the Iliad, viii. 49.

Omar (the son of Hassan), his history, v. 401.

Opera, the Italian, an exotick and irrational entertainment, vii. 147.

Opinions, causes of the variety of, considered, xi. 496. Formed in solitude, liable to error, viii. 59.

Oppression, the difficulty of preventing it in governments, v. 440. Domestick, the terror and distress of it, iv. 48.

Opulence, visionary, the folly of, iii. 15.

Oratory, as practised by the English, considered, v. 361.
Order for Merit, instituted in Prussia, ix. 240.
Orthography, difficulties in settling it, x. 10.
Ortogrul of Basra, his history, v. 393. Resolves to gain riches by silent profit, and persevering industry, 395. Does not find happiness in riches, 396.
Ossian, Dr. Johnson's opinion of the authenticity of the poems of, xii. 374.
Ostig in Sky, account of, xii. 322.
Ostriches, the Indian method of taking them, ix. 108.
Othello, observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 222.
Otway, Thomas, life of, vi. 223. Son of Humphrey Otway, Rector of Woolbeding, born at Trottin in Sussex, March 3, 1651, 223. Educated at Winchester school, and Fellow Commoner of Christ Church, 1669, 223. Commences Player, in which he fails, 223. Writes the tragedy of Alcibiades, 1675, 224. Translates "Titus and Berenice," and the Cheats of Scapin, 1677, 224. Writes Friendship in Fashion in 1678, 224. Enters into the army as Cornet, but soon quits it, 225. His Don Carlos, said to have been acted for thirty nights successively, 226. His Orphan, exhibited 1680, 226. History and Fall of Caius Marius, in the same year, 226. The Soldier's Fortune published 1683, 226. Venice Preserved published 1685, 227. Died April 14, 1685, 227.
Overbury, Sir Thomas, account of Savage's tragedy, vii. 303.
Ovid, the Epistle of Sappho to Phaon, translated by Pope, viii. 58.
Ozell, Mr. with Oldisworth and Broome, translated the Iliad, viii. 50.

P.

PAGE, Judge, his speech to the jury on the trial of Savage, vii. 312. Savage revenges the insolence and partiality by a satire on the Judge, 319. Story of his sending to Pope respecting the filling up a blank with his name, viii. 193.
Painting, positions respecting miniature and cupola painting, vi. 306. The parallel of, with poetry, v. 134. The fondness of the English to their own portraits, 178. Advantages of historical pictures, 179. Actions not momentary cannot be properly represented in a picture, 180. Proper and improper subjects considered, 180. To be a connoisseur rather than a critick, recommended, 305. On imitating nature, 317. Different schools not to be united, 318. Observations on the Dutch and Italian styles, 318. Observations on the style of Michael Angelo, 319. More enthusiasm recommended to painters, 319.

Attending to accidental discriminations, is to deviate from the line of beauty, 334.

Pamphlets, history of their origin and progress, x. 238.

Papilius, his account of the ingredients necessary to form a wit, iv. 4.

Paradise Lost, designed by Milton, vi. 116. Sketch of the original plan, 116. The uncertainty from whence he took the plan, 127. Written only between the autumnal and vernal equinoxes, 130. Chiefly composed in the night and the mornings, 134. A complete copy first seen 1665, 135. Obtains a license, and sells the copy for 5*l.* and 5*l.* more at the sale of 1300 copies of each of the three first editions, 135. First edition 1667, second 1674, third 1678, 136. Characterized, 160.

Paradise Regained, characterized, vi. 178.

Parallels, on illustrating things by, v. 134.

Parents, observations on the bad behaviour of, v. 167. Exemplified in the story of Perdita, 168.

Parliament of England, the right of punishing its own members asserted, xii. 85. A man attainted of felony cannot sit in Parliament, 89. Proceedings on the expulsion of Mr. Wilkes considered. See *False Alarm*.

Parnell, Thomas, his life by Goldsmith, vii. 49. Descended from a Cheshire family, born at Dublin 1679, 50. Educated at Dublin university, 50. Archdeacon of Clogher 1705, 50. Married Anne Minchin, 50. Joins the Tories in the latter end of Queen Anne's reign, 50. Becomes too fond of the bottle, 51. Died July 1717, in his way to Ireland, 51. Character of his works, 52. Wrote the life of Homer prefixed to Pope's translation of the Iliad, viii. 81. His poems published by Pope in 1721, 102.

Passeratii, Jo. poema ad Erricum Memmium, vi. 208.

Passion, the ruling, theory of, viii. 130.

Passions, persons under the predominant influence of them exceedingly offensive to others, ii. 66. Natural and adscititious, strong motives of action, 314, 315. Excited by sympathy, 443.

Pastorals, generally the first productions of a poet, viii. 171.

Pastoral Poetry, the progress of, viii. 254.

Pastoral Life, a glimpse of the state of happiness in, v. 473.

Pastor Fido, specimen of Waller's translation of, vi. 280.

Patience, the usefulness of it in alleviating the miseries of human life, ii. 209. Motives to the exercise of patience and submission under the severest afflictions, 212, 213.

Patriot, addressed to the electors of Great Britain (1774), xii. 164.

Patriotism, no man can be born a lover of his country, viii. 131.

Patriots, their conduct considered and reprobated, xii. 164.
Patrons, their avarice of praise and flattery, iii. 217. Often corrupted by avarice, and deluded by credulity, iv. 118.
Patronage, Lay, case of, xi. 198.
Paul V. Pope, account of the quarrel between him and the Venetians, ix. 6.
Paul, Father. See *Sarpi*.
Pauses, their influence on the harmony of poetical measures, iii. 117.
Payne's Tables of Interest, preface to, xi. 166.
Peat, account of the nature of that fuel, xii. 354.
Pedantry, the persons to whom the censures of it may be justly applied, iv. 195. The fear of it often produces it, 198.
Peevishness, a species of depravity, disgusting and offensive, iii. 19. Sometimes the effect of distemper or affliction, 20, 21. Exemplified in the character of Tetrica, 20, 21. Persons of this temper the sources of peculiar affliction to their dependants, 261. A due attention to the dignity of human nature a proper preservative and remedy against this vice of narrow minds, 263.
Peiresc, the fate of his MSS. vi. 260.
Pensive Man, characterized, vi. 155.
Pepys Islands. See *Falkland's Islands*.
Perdita, her story, v. 168.
Perfection in composition, the effect of attention and diligence, iv. 170. The methods by which the antients attained to an eminence therein, 171.
Periander, his opinion of the importance of restraining anger, ii. 66.
Periodical Essays, the difficulties of carrying them on, v. 1. The advantages of writing in, 7. New ones under the same disadvantages as new plays, 9.
Perseverance, its resistless force and excellence, ii. 279. In intellectual pursuits necessary to eminence in learning and judgment, iii. 419.
Persians, their contempt for men who violated the laws of secrecy, ii. 81.
Persian Tales, translated by Ambrose Philips, viii. 252.
Persius, his opinion of learning, xi. 463.
Pertinax, his skill in disputation, iii. 152.
Petitions, their progress, xii. 109. By whom generally supported, 110.
Petrarch, his fame filled the world with amorous ditties, vi. 6.
Philips, Ambrose, his life, viii. 251. Educated at St. John's College, Cambridge, 251. Published his Pastorals before 1708, 251. A zealous Whig, 251. Translates the Persian Tales for Tonson, 252. Writes the Distressed Mother, and translates

Racine's Andromaque, 252. The Epilogue to Andromaque written by Budgel, 253. The malevolence between him and Pope, 256. Commissioner of the Lottery, 1717, and made Justice of the Peace, 257. Writes the Briton, a Tragedy, 1721, and also Humphrey Duke of Gloucester, 257. Undertakes a periodical publication, called the Free Thinker, 258. Appointed Secretary to Boulter, Primate of Ireland, 258. Chosen to represent the county of Armagh, 259. Secretary to the Lord Chancellor, and Judge of the Prerogative Court, 259. Returns to London, 1748, and died 1749, 259. His character, 259. His works characterized, 260.

Philips, Claude, an itinerant musician, lines on, i. 344.

Philips, John, his life, vi. 294. Born at Bampton, Oxfordshire, Dec. 30, 1676, 294. Son of Dr. Stephen Philips, Archdeacon of Salop, 294. Educated at Winchester, where he distinguished himself by the superiority of his exercises, 294. Became acquainted with the poets very early, 295. Entered at Oxford, 1694, 295. Intended for the study of Physick, and studied particularly Natural History, 295. Wrote his Splendid Shilling, 1703, 295. Blenheim, 1705. Cider, 1706. Began his Last Day, 296. Died Feb. 15, 1708, and buried in Hereford Cathedral, 296. His Epitaph at Hereford, 297. A monument erected to his memory in Westminster-Abbey, by Sir Simon Harcourt, with the inscription by Dr. Atterbury, 297. His character, 298. Character of his works, 299. A copyer of the style of Milton, 299. Account of him by Edmund Smith, 302. Account of his family and brothers, 304. Character of his works, 305.

Philips, John and Edward, (nephews of Milton,) some account of them, vi. 85.

Philips, Mrs. her opinion of some of the writings of Lord Roscommon, vi. 221. Her Pompey brought on the Irish Stage, ibid.

Philomides, his reflections on the excellence and utility of good humour, iii. 7.

Philotryphus, his character, ii. 255.

Physick, mathematicks recommended in the science of Physick, by Boerhaave, xii. 26.

Physicians, a pleasing character of, vii. 54. Proceedings on a plan for attending the poor gratis, 55. In a great city the mere plaything of fortune, viii. 360. Have the second claim of benefit to mankind, ix. 22.

Picus of Mirandola, his Epitaph, x. 323.

Pilgrimages, inquired into, v. 451.

Pindar, observations on the poetry of, vi. 51. His odes discovered to be regular by Congreve, vii. 205. West's translation characterized, viii. 263.

Piozzi, Mrs. select letters of Dr. Johnson from the collection of, ix. 339.

Pitt, Christopher, his life, viii. 219. Son of a Physician at Blandford, born 1699, 219. Entered a scholar at Winchester College 1714, removed to New College, 1719, 219. Translates Lucan before he was twenty years of age, 219. Presented to the rectory of Pimpern, Dorsetshire, 219. Translates Vida's Art of Poetry, 220. Translates the Æneid, 221. Died 1748, and his Epitaph, 222.

Plagiarism, not to be charged upon authors merely for similarity of sentiment, xi. 477. A charge often unjustly urged to the prejudice of some authors, iv. 14. Some instances of the truth of this remark with regard to some of the classic writers, ibid.

Plantations, considerations on, xii. 402.

Player, requisites to form a good one, vi. 224.

Pleasing others, the art of it a pleasing acquisition, iii. 209. Its excellency should engage us to cultivate it in proportion to its usefulness, 210.

Pleasure, the mind corrupted and debased by the pursuit of immoral, ii. 285. The gratification of sensual, volatile, iii. 42. The fatal rock in the ocean of life, 42. The variation of, with the seasons, 339. Of contemplation and virtue preferable to that of the senses, 343. The essence of, consists in choice, 406. Sensitive and animal, derive their agreeableness from novelty, 409. The danger of pursuing the allurements to unlawful, iv. 283. Inquiry into the distinction between it and pain, v. 200.

Pleasures of mankind, generally counterfeit, v. 68. Seldom such as they appear to others, 68. Of ladies at a musical performance, 68.

Plenty, Peter, his complaint of his wife's buying bargains. v. 138.

Plutarch, sentiment of, upon Aristophanes and Menander, xi. 83.

Poemata, Messia, i. 369. Jan. 20, 21, 1773. 373. Dec. 25, 1779, ibid. In Lecto, die Passionis, Apr. 13, 1781, 374. In Lecto, Dec. 25, 1782, ibid. Nocte inter 16 & 17 Junii, 1783, ibid. Cal. Jan. in lecto, ante lucem, 1784, 375. Jan. 18, 1784, ibid. Feb. 27, 1784, 376. Christianus perfectus, ibid. Jejunium & cibus, 378. Ad Urbanum, ibid. In rivum a mola Stoana Lichfeldiæ diffluentem, 379. Γνωθι Σεαυτον, ibid. Ad. Th. Laurence, M.D. cum filium peregre agentem desiderio nimis tristi prosequeretur, 381. In Theatro, March 8, 1771, 382. Insula Kennethi inter Hebridas, 383. Skia, 384. Ode de Skia insula, ibid. Spes, 385. Versus, collari capræ domini Banks inscribendi, 386. Ad fœminam quandam generosam quæ libertatis causæ in Sermone patrocinata fuerat, ibid. Jactura temporis, ibid. Εις Βιρχιον, 387. Εἰς τὸ τῆς Ελισσης περὶ τῶν ὀνειρων Αινιγμα, ibid. In Eliza enigma, ibid. Latin versions of four Collects in the Liturgy, 388. Psalmus CXVII. 389. Latin version of "Busy curious thirsty Fly," 390. Latin version of three sentences on the monument of John of Doncaster, ibid. Translation of a Song in Walton's Complete

Angler, 391. Version of Pope's Verses on his own Grotto, 392. Græcorum epigrammatum versiones metricæ, 393. Pompeii epigrammata, 406. Epicteti epigramma, 410. E Theocrito, ibid. E Euripidis Medea, 411. Septem Ætates, 412. Geographia metrica Templemanni Latine redditus, 412. Translation of Dryden's Epigram on Milton, 414. Epilogue to the Carmen Seculare of Horace, 415. Translation of a Welsh Epitaph, 415.

Poet, the general knowledge necessary for, v. 447. Ancients exceptionable teachers of morality, ii. 188. The forbearance due to young ones, v. 98. Advertisement to the edition of the Lives of the Poets, of 1783, vi. 1. Metaphysical, what, 19. Critical remarks on this kind of writing, 24. Dryden's opinion on the question, whether a poet can judge well of his own productions? 323. Do not make the best parents, exemplified in Dr. Young, viii. 324.

Poetry, Miscellaneous, i. 323—363. A dissertation on, v. 446. Early writers in possession of nature, their followers of art, 448. Harmony the end of its measure, iii. 117. The parallel of with Painting, v. 134. The easy, characterized, 308. Observations on affectation in, 309. Observations on occasional compositions, vi. 398. A simile described, vii. 120. On the neglect of poetical justice, 125. Similes in Poetry considered, viii. 176. That Sound should seem the echo of the Sense, considered, 177.

Poetry, *Poetical devotion* cannot often please, vi. 274. Characterized, 275.

Poetry, *Pastoral*, the peculiar beauties of it, ii. 232. The difficulty of succeeding in it, 235. 237. Mere nature to be principally regarded, 238. Wherein the perfection of it consists, 243. Generally the first productions of a poet, viii. 171.

Poetry, *Epick*, critical remarks on, iv. 110. What it is, vi. 160.

Poetry, *Lyrick*, its origin and manner, iv. 109.

Policy, too frequently supported by the arts of intrigue and fraud, iii. 50.

Politeness, rules for estimating its advantages, iii. 174. Its amiable influence on the manners, ibid.

Politian, his poetical composition censured for his vanity and self-esteem, iii. 358.

Polyphilus, his character, ii. 124.

Pomfret, *John*, his life, vi. 285. Son of the Rev. Mr. Pomfret, Rector of Luton, 285. Educated at Cambridge, 285. Rector of Malden, Bedfordshire, 285. Obstructed in institution to a valuable living, from a passage in his Choice, 285. Dies of the small pox, in 1703, aged 36, 286. Character of his poems, 286.

Pompeius, epigrammata, i. 406.

Pontanus, Scaliger's opinion of, ii. 20. The instructive inscription on his tomb, ii. 187.

Pope, Alexander, his account of N. Rowe, vii. 70. His letter to Broome on the death of Fenton, 238. With Arbuthnot supposed to have assisted Gay in writing Three Hours after Marriage, 243. His account of the origin and success of the Beggar's Opera, 246. A conversation with Addison on Tickell's translation of Homer, viii. 97. Fenton and Broome assist him in the translation of the Odyssey, 105. His life, 54. Born in London, May 22, 1688, 54. His Father grew rich by the trade of a linen-draper, 54. Both his parents papists, 54. Of a tender and delicate constitution, and of a gentle and sweet disposition, 55. From his pleasing voice called the little Nightingale, 55. Received his first education under a Romish priest in Hampshire, from whence he was removed first to Twyford, near Winchester, and again to a school near Hyde Park Corner, 55. Is said to have lisped in numbers, 56. His father left off business with 20,000*l.* but living on the principal, greatly reduced it before his death, 56. At twelve years of age, forms a plan for his own education, 57. His primary and principal purpose was to be a poet, 57. His first performance, the Ode to Solitude, at twelve years of age, 58. Made a version of the first book of the Thebais, at fourteen, 58. At fifteen years of age studies French and Italian, 59. Destroyed many of his puerile productions, 59. At sixteen introduced to Sir. W. Trumbull, which ended in friendship, 60. His life, as an author, to be computed from this time, when he wrote his Pastorals, 60. Verses written by Wycherley in his praise, 61. His Letters to Mr. Cromwell, published in a volume of Miscellanies, by Curll, 61. Early encouraged by Mr. Walsh, 62. Frequents the company of wits, at Will's Coffee-house, 62. His Pastorals first published in Tonson's Miscellany, in 1709, 63. His Essay on Criticism written 1709, and severely attacked by Dennis, 63. His Essay translated into French by Hamilton, Robotham, and Resnel, and commented on by Warburton, 67. His Messiah first published in the Spectator, 68. His verses on the unfortunate Lady badly employed, 68. Story on which the Rape of the Lock was founded, 69. The great merit of that poem, 70. That poem attacked by Dennis, as also the Temple of Fame, 72. Writes the Epistle from Eloisa to Abelard, 72. Windsor Forest, 1713, 73. Writes a Narrative of the frenzy of John Dennis, 73. Account of the ironical comparison between the Pastorals of Philips and Pope, published in the Guardian, 74. Studies the art of painting under Jervas, 74. Supposed to have painted a picture of Betterton, 74. Proposes a translation of the Iliad, by subscription, in six quarto volumes, at six guineas, 75. Sells the copy to B. Lintot, 77. Is greatly terrified at the undertaking, 78. Is objected to by some for being too much a Tory, and by others for want of a sufficient knowledge of the Greek language, 79. Greatly as-

sisted by former translators, 79. History of the notes to the Iliad, 80. The life of Homer, written by Parnell, 81. The Iliad took him five years in translating, 82. 654 copies of the Iliad subscribed for, and he gained 5320*l.* 4*s.* by this work, 82. Sinks a considerable part of his money for annuities, 83. Extracts from the first translation and the printed compared, 84. Story of his reading the translation of the Iliad to Lord Halifax, 92. Addison and he become rivals, 95. Contest between Pope's and Tickell's translations of the Iliad, 98. His own account of the jealousy of Addison, 99. Purchases his house at Twickenham, 1715, 100. Forms his grotto at Twickenham, 101. Publishes a quarto edition of his works in 1717, 101. Loses his father in 1717, 102. The publication of the Iliad completed in 1720, 102. His publications censured by Burnet, Ducket, and Dennis, 102. Purposes to become rich by the South-Sea bubble, and luckily escapes without much loss, 102. In 1721, he published the poems of Dr. Parnell, and an edition of the works of Shakspeare, 102. Deficiencies of his edition of Shakspeare exposed by Theobald, 103. Merits of this edition of Shakspeare, 103. Publishes proposals for a translation of the Odyssey, in five volumes, 5*l.* 5*s.* 104. Assisted in the translation by Fenton and Broome, 104. Examined before the Lords on the trial of Bp. Atterbury, 104. Atterbury presents a Bible to Pope at their last interview, 105. Translated only twelve books of the Odyssey, 105. Pope's translation in the British Museum, 105. 819 copies subscribed for and completed in 1725, 105. A criticism on the Odyssey, published by Spence, 106. Establishes a friendship with Spence, 106. Is visited by Voltaire, 107. Joins with Swift in publishing three volumes of Miscellanies, 107. Dunciad published in 1728, 108. History of the Dunciad, 109. Mr. Pope executed in effigy by the Dunces, 111. Publishes a poem on Taste, 1731, 113. Loses his mother at the age of 93, 115. Calls Curll before the House of Lords for publishing some letters of noblemen to him, 116. Curll's account of his obtaining the letters, 117. Publishes a volume of Letters, 1737, 118. Publishes the First Part of the Essay on Man, 1733, 121. History of the Essay on Man, 122. The Essay attacked by Mr. Crousaz, as immoral, and defended by Warburton, 123. His Letter to Warburton, 126. Supposed to have been made a tool of by Bolingbroke, to spread his opinions, 127. Endeavours to get his Essay on Man translated into Latin, 127. Lives among the great, 128. A report prevailed of Queen Caroline paying him a visit, which did not take place, 128. Writes an Epistle on the Use of Riches, 1733, 128. Publishes the Man of Ross, 129. Publishes his characters of Men, 1734, 130. Publishes his Characters of Women, 131. Duchess of Marlborough, ce-

lebrated in that poem, under the character of Atossa, 132. Published Imitations of several Poems of Horace, 132. Such imitations first practised by Oldham and Rochester, 132. Publishes some of Dr. Donne's Satires, 132. At open war with Lord Hervey, 134. Publishes his last Satires, 134. Never wrote on politicks, 135. First volume of the Memoirs of Scriblerus published by him, in conjunction with Swift and Arbuthnot, 136. Published two volumes of Latin Poems, written by Italians, 137. Planned a Poem, subsequent to his Essay on Man, but never completed it, 138. Publishes another book of the Dunciad, 138. Is at variance with Cibber, 139. Celebrates both Cibber and Osborne in the Dunciad, 141. Account of his latter end, 144. Died May 30. 1744, and buried at Twickenham, 145. A monument erected to his memory, by the Bishop of Gloucester, 146. Offended Lord Bolingbroke by having printed 1500 of the Patriot King more than Lord Bolingbroke knew of, and not discovered until the death of Pope, 146. Account of a difference between Pope and Mr. Allen, 148. Account of Pope's Picture of Betterton, 148. His person described, 150. His dress, 150. His method of living and conversation, 151. The frugality of his domestic character, 154. Proud of his money, and the greatest fault of his friends, poverty, 155. Fond of enumerating the great men of his acquaintance, 155. His social virtues, 156. His Letters appear premeditated and artificial, 158. Many of the topicks of his Letters contrary to truth, 158. *Viz.* contempt of his own poetry, 158. Insensibility to censure and criticism, 159. Disesteem of kings, 159. Contempt of the world, 159. Scorn of the great, 160. His own importance, 160. Learned his pretended discontent from Swift, 160. Sometimes wanton in his attacks, and mean in his retreat, 162. His virtues, liberality, and fidelity of friendship, 162. Paid Savage 20*l.* a-year, 162. The report of a defamatory Life of Swift being found in his papers, on inquiry appears groundless, 163. Lived and died in the religion of Rome, 163. Never lost his belief of Revelation, 163. In his early life a literary curiosity, and afterwards studied the living world, 163. Entertained a desire for travelling, but did not gratify it, 164. His intellectual character, Good Sense, 164. His genius, 165. His great memory, 165. Made Poetry the business of his life, 165. Never wrote on popular or temporary occasions, 167. Never published his works under two years, 167. Compared with Dryden, 168. His great care in polishing his works, 168. Frequently corrected his works after publication, 169. His prose works characterized, 170. His pastorals considered, 171. Windsor Forest, 172. Temple of Fame, 173. The Messiah, 173. The Verses on an unfortunate Lady, 173.

Private Vices public Benefits, how far they may sometimes prove so, xi. 303.
Procrastination, the danger of, vi. 34.
Prodigality, destitute of true pleasure, and the source of real and lasting misery, ii. 341, 342.
Projects, the folly of, exposed, xi. 391. The folly of, in general, 437. Projectors characterized, 484. The folly and wickedness of those who only project the destruction and misery of mankind, ibid. For the good of mankind, in searching out new powers of nature, and contriving new works of art ought to be encouraged, 487.
Prologue, at the opening of Drury-Lane Theatre, 1747, i. 220. To the Masque of Comus, 323. To the Good-natured Man, 324. To the Word to the Wise, 326.
Pronunciation, difficulties in settling it, x. 10.
Properantia, her letter on the alteration of the style, iii. 228.
Prosapius, his character, ii. 122.
Prosperity, often productive of various infelicities, iv. 61. 348. Obstructs the knowledge of ourselves, 62. The danger of, v. 475.
Prospero, his character, iv. 347.
Prostitutes, reflections on their infamous and deplorable condition, iii. 230. iv. 186. In what respects objects of compassion, iii. 232.
Proverbs, ch. vi. ver. 7—11. paraphrased, i. 349.
Prudence, wherein its province lies, iii. 264. Characterized, v. 228. Exemplified in the character of Sophron, 228.
Prudentius, the motives on which he contracted marriage, ii. 118.
Prune, Mrs. her treatmont of Leviculus, iv. 247.
Prussia, King of, (the former,) characterized, ix. 230. Account of his Tall Regiment, 231. His disagreement with his son, 232. Obliges his son to marry against his will, 234. Died 1740, 237.
Prussia, King of, (Charles Frederick,) his life, ix. 230. Born Jan. 24, 1711-12, ibid. Remarkable for his disagreement with his father, 232. Designed to fly his country, but discovered by his father, himself arrested, and his confident executed, 233. Obliged by his father to marry, but does not consummate during his father's life, 234. Applies himself to study and liberal amusements, 235. Succeeds to the Crown, 1740, 238. Receives his wife as Queen, ibid. Releases the boys marked for military service, 239. Continues his correspondence with learned men, ibid. Governs with very little ministerial assistance, and banishes the Prime Minister and favourite of his father, 239. Grants a toleration of Religion and Free Masonry, ibid. Institutes the Order of Merit, 240. Charitable if not liberal, ibid. Advancement of learning one of his first cares, ibid. Revives his claim to Herstal and Hermal, 241.

On the death of the Emperor of Germany, claims Silesia, 243. His proceedings in the war for Silesia, ibid. Makes peace with the Queen of Hungary, on surrendering to him the half of Silesia, 247. Observations on his reasons for enacting and repealing Laws, 248. Account of the Code Frederique, 249. Epitome of his plan for the Reformation of Courts, 250. Proceedings of his army 1742 against the Austrians, 254. Is deserted by the French, 258. Makes peace with the Empress, who surrenders the remaining part of Silesia, 260. Reforms his laws, and concludes a defensive alliance with England, 261. Raises an army under pretence of fixing the emperor in possession of Bohemia, 266. His declaration of reasons for going to war, ibid. The Queen of Hungary's answer to the declaration, 270. Enters Bohemia with 104,000 men, Aug. 1744, 271. Besieges and takes Prague, Sept. 1744, 273. Quits Prague, and retires with his army into Silesia, 276. After several engagements, enters Dresden as a Conqueror, 280.

Public Spirit, the duty of, in times of danger, v. 29.

Pulpit censure, case of, xi. 204.

Punch, the mixture used in making it, requisite to conversation, v. 135. The ingredients of both compared, 136.

Punishments, capital, the severity and frequency of them in some cases disapproved, iii. 272. 275. Instead of hindering the commission of the crime, they often prevent the detection of it, 276.

Puritans, their tenets ridiculed, vi. 197.

Puzzle, Will, his story, v. 369.

Pyramids, a visit to, v. 388. 504.

Pyramus and Thisbe, written by Cowley, when only ten years of age, vi. 3.

Q.

QUEBEC, considerations on the establishment of popery in that province, xii. 167.

Quibble, the ill use made of it by Shakspeare, x. 149.

Quick, Molly, her complaint against her mistress for only hinting at what she wants, v. 182.

Quick, Ned, ready at finding objections, v. 348.

Quin, Mr. his friendship for Thomson, viii. 233.

Quincunx figures, their excellence, ix. 294.

Quisquilius, his extravagancies in indulging an injudicious curiosity, iii. 64.

Quixote, Don, the idea of Hudibras taken from it, vi. 190. The characters compared, 190. Recommended by Dr. Sydenham to young physicians, ix. 192.

R.

RAASAY, island of, described, xii. 297.
Rake, the life of one, xi. 371. 385.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, the defects of his History of the World, iii. 330.
RAMBLER, Vol. ii. iii. iv.
Ranger, Tim, his history, v. 218. Tries dress, the company of rakes, keeping of race-horses, and building, but finds no happiness in any of them, 250. Becomes a fine gentleman, and a collector of shells, fossils, &c. hires a French cook, but in all disappointed, 257.
Rape of the Lock, story on which it was founded, viii. 69.
Rarities, the choice and study of them should be subservient to virtue and the public good, iii. 71. 73.
Raschid, his character, a striking example of the sad effects of insatiable avarice, ii. 249.
Rasselas, Prince of Abyssinia, the history of, v. 417.
Rats, none in the islands of Sky, xii. 330.
Reason, the uncertain continuance of, v. 538. The importance of its keeping a constant guard over the imagination, ii. 49.
Rectitude, delineated, v. 142.
Regimen, rather to be decreased than increased as men advance in years, ix. 175.
Register, universal, of a new kind, to what useful purposes it may be applied, iii. 215.
Regret, sometimes both necessary and useful, v. 290.
Rehearsal, the character of Bayes designed for Dryden, vi. 349. Written by Buckingham, assisted by Butler, Martin Clifford, and Dr. Spratt, 349. First acted in 1671, 349. The dialogue between Love and Honour designed for the Duke of Ormond, 350.
Reid, Andrew, employed by Lord Lyttelton in the punctuation of his Life of Henry II. viii. 387.
Relaxation, the necessity and usefulness of it with regard to study, iii. 109.
Religion, consolations to be found in, i. 218. The danger of women when they lay it aside, xi. 373. The pleasure and advantages of, ii. 282. The use of austerities and mortifications, iii. 251. Observations on the change of, in Scotland, xii. 232. A toleration granted in Prussia, ix. 239.
Remission of Sins, the first and fundamental truth of religion, iii. 246.
Repentance, the absurdity of delaying it, iii. 5. The doctrine of it embarrassed by superstitious and groundless imaginations, 249. Unjustly confounded with penance, ibid. Wherein true

repentance consists, ibid. The completion and sum of it a real change of temper and life, 251.

Reputation, industry and caution necessary to support it, iii. 373. Tainted, the greatest calamity, iv. 102.

Resentment, the effects of, more certain than gratitude, vii. 340.

Resolution and firmness of mind, necessary to the cultivation and increase of virtue, ii. 361.

Resolutions, the fallacious estimate generally made, v. 106. Custom commonly too strong for, 107.

Restless, Tom, short history of, v. 193.

Retirement, the disadvantages of it when indulged to excess by men of genius and letters, ii. 93. Rural, the motives of some persons to desire it, iii. 406.

Retrospection on our conduct, the importance and usefulness of it, ii. 50.

Rhodes, Isle of, story of the dragon which ravaged, v. 30.

Richard II. observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 203.

Richard III. observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 210.

Richardson's, Jonathan, Treatise on Painting, gave the first fondness of that art to Sir Joshua Reynolds, vi. 2.

Richardson, Samuel, his character of Lovelace taken from the Lothario of the Fair Penitent, vii. 62. Characterized as a writer, 62. His paper in the Rambler, iii. 171.

Riches, the folly of pursuing them as the chief end of our being, ii. 374. The true use of, iii. 319. The general desire of them whence it proceeds, 384. The peace of life too often destroyed by incessant and zealous strugglings for them, 385. The arts by which they are gained frequently irreconcileable with virtue, 386. Not the cause of happiness, v. 248. The general desire for, 292. Not so dangerous as formerly, 292. Hope of, more than the enjoyment, 293. What it is to be rich, 293. Avarice always poor, 293. Story of Tom Tranquil, a rich man, 294. Best obtained by silent profit and industry, exemplified in the history of Ortogrul of Basra, 393. Ill effects of, i. 208.

Riches (hereditary,) advantages and disadvantages of, xi. 512.

Ridicule, the business of comedy, xi. 64.

Riding, honours due to the lady who undertook to ride 1000 miles in 1000 hours, and performed it in about two thirds of the time, v. 21. An equestrian statue proposed to be erected to her memory, 23. Difficulties respecting a proper inscription, 23.

Righteousness, considered, v. 358.

Rio verde, translations of the two first stanzas of that song, i. 355.

Riots, in London (1780), description of, ix. 432.

Roarer, his character, iv. 24.

Rochester, John Wilmot, Earl of, life of, vi. 201. Son of Henry, Earl of Rochester, 201. Born April 10, 1647, 201. Educated

at Burford school, 201. Entered at Wadham College, 201. Travelled into France and Italy, 201. Entered into the sea-service, 201. Early given to intemperance, 202. Gentleman of the Bed-chamber, and Comptroller of Woodstock Park, 202. Mentioned by Wood as the greatest scholar of all the nobility, 203. His favourite authors, Boileau and Cowley, 203. Pursues a life of drunken gaiety, 203. Becomes acquainted with Dr. Burnet, which produced a total change of his manners and opinions, 203. Died at the age of thirty-four, July 26, 1680, 203. His character, 203. Many things imputed to him which he is supposed not to have written, 204. The first edition of his works printed in the year of his death, Antwerp in the title-page, 204. Character of his works, 204. His poem on Nothing criticised, 205. His Lampoon on Sir Car Scroop, 206. His Satire against Man criticised, 207. Takes E. Settle under his protection, 351.

Rolt's Dictionary of Commerce, Preface to, x. 305.

Romances, the general design of them, ii. 20. Those of the former and present age compared, 22.

Romans, their donatives rather popular than virtuous, v. 13. Made no standing provision for the needy, 13. Remarks on, xi. 227.

Rome, supplied by Sicily with corn, x. 389. Afterwards supplied with corn from Africa and Egypt, 390.

Romeo and Juliet, observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 219.

Rona, account of the island of, viii. 276.

Roscommon, Wentworth Dillon, Earl of, his life, vi. 211. Son of James Dillon Earl of Roscommon, born in Ireland, 211. Educated in Yorkshire, at his uncle's, Lord Strafford's, 211. Sent to Caen, to study under Bochart, 212. Is said to have had preternatural intelligence of his father's death, 212. The credit to be given to such intelligence, 212. Travels into Italy, 213. At the Restoration returns to England, is made Captain of the Band of Pensioners, and addicts himself to gaming, 213. Goes to Ireland, and made Captain of the Guards, 213. Attacked by three ruffians on his return from the gaming-table, is rescued by a half-pay officer, to whom he resigns his commission in the Guards, 214. Returns to England, and marries a daughter of the Earl of Burlington, 214. Forms a plan of a Society for reforming our language, 214. Purposes to retire to Rome, but is attacked by the gout, and, with the assistance of a French empirick, dies in 1684, and is buried in Westminster-Abbey, 216. His poetical character, 216. Dryden's opinion of Roscommon's Essay on translated Verse, 218. His Art of Poetry praised, 290. Account of his other pieces, 220. Mrs. Philips's opinion of some of his works, 221.

Rota Club, account of, and the members, vi. 121.

Rowe, Nicholas, observations on his edition of Shakspeare's Works, x. 171. The first who had three nights of a new play, vi. 347. His life, vii. 60. Born at Little Beckford, Bedfordshire, 1673, 60. Educated at Westminster, under Busby, 60. A student of the Middle Temple, 61. At twenty-five produced the Ambitious Step-mother, 61. Tamerlane in 1702, 61. Fair Penitent in 1703, 62. Ulysses in 1706. Royal Convert, 1708, 63. The Biter, a comedy, 1706, 64. Jane Shore, 1714, 64. Lady Jane Grey, 1715, 64. Publishes an Edition of Shakspeare in 1709, 65. Under-secretary to the Duke of Queensberry, 65. Advised by Lord Oxford to study Spanish, 66. Succeeded N. Tate as Poet-Laureat, 66. Land-surveyor of the Customs, 66. Clerk of the Council to the Prince of Wales, 66. Secretary of the Presentations, 66. His life, as prefixed to his translation of Lucan's Pharsalia, by Dr. Wellwood, 67. Died Dec. 6, 1718, and buried in Westminster-Abbey, 69. The testimony of Pope in his favour, 70. Chiefly considered as a tragick author and translator, 71. Character of his works, 71. Pope's Epitaph intended for him, viii. 207.

Royal Society, enquiry into, What have they done? v. 354. Supposed to have been established, to divert the attention of the people from publick discontent, vii. 89. Review of the history of, xi. 314.

Rudeness to convenience, the progress of, v. 252.

Ruling Passion, M. Crousaz's observations on Pope's opinion of it, x. 249.

Rum, account of the island of, xii. 386. Land there not more than 2½*d.* an acre, 387.

Rupert, Prince, driven by Admiral Blake into the Tagus, ix. 44. Afterwards into Carthagena, 45. His fleet destroyed by Blake in the harbour of Malaga, ibid.

Rural Elegance, observations in the praise of, viii. 280.

Rural Situation, a sketch of its peculiar pleasures and advantages, iii. 408.

Ruricola, his observations upon the prevalence of a fond appetite for news, ii. 387.

S.

SABINUS, Georgius, de sacerdote furem consolante epigramma, vii. 185.

Sacharissa, that character designed by Waller for Lady Dorothea Sidney, vi. 232.

Salmasius, employed by Charles II. to write in defence of his father and monarchy, vi. 108. His character, 108. Publishes his Defensio Regis in 1649, 108. Answered by Milton, 108.

Leaves a Reply to Milton, which was published by his son, 110.

Salusbury, Mrs. Epitaph on, i. 366.

Samson Agonistes, critical remarks on the beauties and improprieties of that dramatick piece, iii. 431. Characterized, vi. 178.

Sanderson, Dr. Robert, Bishop of Lincoln, his critical nicety in preparing his lectures, ii. 130.

Sannazarius, his inducements to the piscatory eclogue, ii. 236.

Sarpi, Father Paul, his life, ix. 3. Born at Venice, 1552, ibid. Educated under his mother's brother, ibid. Studies logick under Capella of Cremona, ibid. Takes the order of Servites, 1566, 4. Public Professor of Divinity at Mantua, 4. His great acquisitions in every branch of knowledge and literature, 5. Several charges laid against him in the Inquisition, which passed over, ibid. Refused a bishopric by Clement VIII. ibid. The part he took in the quarrel between Paul V. and the Venetians, 6. Attacked by five ruffians employed by the Pope, and receives fifteen stabs, 8. Retires to his convent, and writes the History of the Council of Trent, ibid. Died 1623, 9. His character, 10.

Satire, Sir Car Scroop's praise of, vi. 206.

Savage, Richard, his life, vii. 285. Born Jan. 10, 1697, a son of Earl Rivers by the Countess of Macclesfield, 287. Left to the care of his mother, who abandons him, 287. Committed to the care of a poor woman, to be brought up as her own son, 289. Lady Mason, his grand-mother, takes some care of him, 289. His god-mother, Mrs. Lloyd, left him 300*l.* which was never paid him, 290. Placed at a small grammar-school near St. Alban's, ibid. Lord Rivers on his death-bed enquires particularly of him, and is assured by his mother that he was dead, by which he loses 6000*l.* left him by his father, 291. His mother attempts to send him to America secretly, 292. His mother places him with a shoe-maker in Holborn, ibid. On the death of his nurse discovers his parents, 293. Applies to his mother, who resolves to neglect him, ibid. Became an author through necessity, 294. Publishes his first Poems against the Bishop of Bangor, ibid. Writes his first play, Woman's a Riddle, in his eighteenth year, 295. At twenty-one, writes Love in a Veil, ibid. Is patronized by Sir Richard Steele, ibid. Story of his going with Sir Richard Steele, and writing a pamphlet, which he sells for two guineas, to raise money, 296. Steele proposes to marry one of his natural daughters to Savage, 297. Steele discards him, 298. Through the intercession of Wilks obtains 50*l.* from his mother, 299. Frequents the Stage, becomes acquainted with Mrs. Oldfield, who allows him 50*l.* a year during her life, 299. Mr. Wilks occasionally allows him a benefit, which is counteracted by his mother, 301. Writes the tragedy of Sir Thomas Overbury, 302. Cibber corrects

the tragedy, 303. Experiences the friendship of Aaron Hill, who writes the Prologue and Epilogue to the tragedy of Overbury, 304. Acts the part of Overbury, 304. Seventy guineas left for Savage, by Mr. Hill's publishing his case in the Plain Dealer, 305. His flattery to Lady M. W. Montague in his Dedication to his volume of Poems, 307. Adds to his reputation by his Poem on the death of George I. 307. Account of his killing Mr. James Sinclair, 309. His trial and defence, 309. Is found guilty of murder, 313. He obtains a pardon, although it had been greatly obstructed by his mother, 316. Further accounts of his mother's enmity, 317. Meets the principal evidence against him in distress, and divides his only guinea with her, 318. His own opinion of the killing of Sinclair, 319. Lived a life of want and plenty, 320. Threatens to publish a narrative of his mother's conduct, in hopes of extorting a pension from her, 321. Received into the family of Lord Tyrconnel, who promises him a pension of 200*l.* a year, 321. Writes the Author to be Let, 322. The part he had in the Dunciad, 325. His epigram on Dennis, 326. Receives twenty guineas for a panegyrick on Sir R. Walpole, 326. Laments the misery of living at other men's tables, 327. Publishes the Wanderer, with the character of that poem, 328. His peculiar attention to correctness in printing, 330. Sells the copy of the Wanderer for ten guineas, 330. His quarrel with Lord Tyrconnel, 331. Writes the Triumph of Health and Mirth, 334. Closely studies the great, 335. Again turned adrift on the world, 337. Too much elevated by good fortune, 339. His mother continues her ill treatment of him, 340. The resentment between Lord Tyrconnel and him kept up for many years, 342. Publishes the Bastard, a Poem, 342. This poem obliges his mother to retire from Bath to London, 343. Ready to accept the praises of the people, and to find excuses for their censure, 344. Imputed none of his miseries to himself, 346. Mistook the love, for the practice of virtue, 346. His actions precipitate and blameable, his writings tended to the propagation of morality and piety, 346. Exerts all his interest to be appointed Poet-Laureat, but is disappointed, 347. Becomes volunteer Laureat to the Queen, for which the Queen sends him 50*l.* and leave to continue it annually, 348. Accused of influencing elections against the Court, 352. An information against him in the King's Bench, for publishing an obscene pamphlet, 353. Writes the Progress of a Divine, 354. Satirized in the Weekly Miscellany, and defended in the Gentleman's Magazine, 355. The information dismissed by Sir Philip Yorke, 357. Purposes writing the Progress of a Freethinker, 357. His practice to conceal himself from his friends, whilst he spent the Queen's pension, 358. Sir R. Walpole promises him the first place vacant, not exceeding

200*l.* a year, 359. Extracts from his poem on the Poet's dependence on a Statesman, 356. Extracts from an Epistle upon Authors, never published, 357. Dedicates a Poem on Publick Spirit to the Prince of Wales, for which he received no reward, 364. For a great part of the year lived by invitations, and lodged by accident, sometimes in Summer on a bulk, and in Winter in a glass-house, 366. Wherever he went could not conform to the œconomy of a family, 368. As his affairs grew desperate, his reputation declined, 371. Proposes to publish his works by subscription, but not so much encouraged as he either expected or merited, spent the money he received, and never published his poems, 373. His universal acquaintance, 374. By the death of the Queen, loses both his prospect of preferment and his annuity, 375. Purposes writing a new tragedy, on the story of Sir John Overbury, 375. Writes a poem on the death of the Queen, on her subsequent birthday, with extracts from it, 376. His friends send him into Wales, on a promise of allowing him 50*l.* a year, 379. Forms enchanting prospects of a country life, 380. Takes a lodging in the liberties of the Fleet, and receives one guinea a week of his friends' subscription, 380. Sets off for Wales in July 1739, spends all his money before he reaches Bristol, gets a fresh remittance, arrives at Bristol, where he is well received, and stays for some time, and at last goes to Swansea, the place of his destination, 384. His annuity greatly diminished, 385. Completes his tragedy, 385. Returns to Bristol, where 30*l.* is subscribed for him, 388. Becomes neglected at Bristol, 388. Arrested at Bristol, and his Letter to a Friend on that occasion, 391. Is very kindly treated by the keeper of the prison, 393. His poem London and Bristol delineated, 397. His letter to a friend, who advised him not to publish London and Bristol delineated, 398. Postpones the publication, 399. Dies in prison, Aug. 1, 1743. and buried in the church-yard of St. Peter's, Bristol, 402. His person described, 402. His character, 402. Allowed 20*l.* a year by Pope, viii. 162.

Savecharges, Sukey, her complaint, vi. 215. By marriage articles to have a coach kept, 216. Her husband provides a coach without horses, 218.

Scaliger, his partiality in preferring Virgil to Homer, iii. 141.

Scamper, Edward, his history, xi. 404.

Scandal, the ladies' disposition to it too frequent, ii. 298.

Scatter, Jack, his history, xi. 406.

Schemes, the Idler's privilege of forming them, v. 3.

Scholar, his hopes on entering at the University, i. 211. View of the general life of, 212. The life of a, v. 439. Journal of three days, v. 267.

Schools, the study proper for, vi. 98. Account of the practice of *barring out* the master, vii. 75. On chastisement, xi. 186.
Schoolmaster, an honest and useful employment, vi. 97.
Science, the paths of it narrow and difficult of access, iii. 322. The progress of it obstructed by servile imitation, 370.
Sciences, the encouragement of them by the patronage of the great, casual and fluctuating, iii. 124.
Scotland, Johnson's Journey. See *Hebrides*.
Scotland, New, considerations on the establishment of a colony there, xii. 41.
Scruple, Sim, his story, v. 336.
Seasons, the change of them productive of a remarkable variation of the scenes of pleasure, iii. 339.
Scruple Shop, account of that fixed at Oxford by the Parliament party, 1646, ix. 209.
Sebald's Islands. See *Falkland's Islands*.
Sebastian, King of Portugal, a tragedy, critical observations upon it, iii. 347.
Second Sight, enquiry into, xii. 361.
Secrecy, rules concerning the doctrine and practice of it, ii. 87.
Secrets, the importance of keeping them, ii. 81. The general causes of the violation of fidelity, in reference to secrets, 83. The aggravated treachery of such conduct, 83. 85. The imprudence of committing this trust to persons of whose wisdom and faithfulness we have no just assurance, 86.
Seduction of innocence, a detail of the infamous arts and gradations by which it is often effected, iv. 179.
Seged, his history, iv. 368.
Self-conceit, the strong dispositions of many to indulge it, iii. 31. How easily promoted, ibid. By what artifices men of this quality delude themselves, 34.
Self-denial, thoughts on, v. 206.
Self-knowledge, its great importance, ii. 156. iv. 88. A happy preservative against indiscretion and vice, ii. 182. Frequently obstructed by partiality and self-love, iv. 89. The deplorable folly of opposing our own convictions, 91.
Serenus, his history, xi. 418.
Serge, Dick, his history, xi. 407.
Sermon, an annual one at Huntingdon, in commemoration of the conviction of the witches of Warbois, x. 76.
Sermons, by Dr. Johnson, xii .437
Serotinus, his quick rise to conspicuous eminence, iv. 148.
Servants, the importance of a wise regulation of our conduct towards them, ii. 432. Their praise of their superiors the highest panegyric of private virtue, ibid. The danger of betraying our weakness to them one motive to a regular life, 433. The folly of giving them orders by hints only, v. 182. Their custom of receiving money from strangers condemned by Savage, in his poem "On Public Spirit," vii. 363.

Settle, Elkanah, supported himself by standing elegies and epithalamiums, v. 47. His character by Dryden, vi. 324. Remarks on his play of the Empress of Morocco, 324. Writes a vindication, with a specimen, 334. Protected by the Earl of Rochester, 351. Attacks Dryden on his Medal, 355. Made City Poet, 355. Spent his latter days in contriving shows for fairs, &c. and died in an hospital, 355.

Shadwell succeeds Dryden as Poet Laureat, vi. 362.

Shaftesbury, Lord, account of him by Mr. Gray, viii. 373.

Shakspeare, William, proposals for printing his dramatick works, 1766, x. 123. Difficulties in explaining the original meaning of the author, 124. Preface to the edition of his works, 1768, 132. His eminent success in tragi-comedy, iv. 99. Only two editions of his works from 1623 to 1664, vi. 137. His Tempest altered by Dryden and Davenant, 323. His plots in the hundred novels of Cinthio, 330. Dryden's Troilus and Cressida altered from Shakspeare, 340. An edition of his works, in six quarto volumes, published by Pope, in 1721, viii. 103. The deficiencies of this edition detected by Theobald, 103. Merits of Pope's edition, 104.

Shenstone, William, his life, viii. 278. Born at Leasowes, in Hales Owen, Shropshire, 1714, 278. Entered of Pembroke College, Oxford, 1732, 279. Published a volume of Miscellanies, 1737. His Judgment of Hercules, 1741. His Schoolmistress, 1742, 279. Wanders about to acquaint himself with life, 279. Delights in rural elegance, 280. Died 1763, 282. His character, 282. Gray's account of him, 283. Account of his works, 284.

Shiels, Robert, the writer of the Lives of the Poets, commonly attributed to Cibber, vii. 278. Some account of him, 278.

Shifter, Dick, his history, v. 283. Disappointed in the pleasures of a country life, 284.

Sicily Island, supplied the Romans with corn, x. 389.

Sidney, Lady Dorothea, addressed by Mr. Waller under the name of Sacharissa, vi. 232. Marries the Earl of Sunderland, 233. Waller's repartee to her, 233.

Simile, what it should be, viii. 176.

Sinclair, James, account of his being killed by Savage and his companions, vii. 309.

Singularity, in general displeasing, xi. 550. Instances in which it is praiseworthy, 552.

Skaiting, two translations of lines under a print of persons skaiting, i. 358.

mer *(the Grammarian)*, account of his writings, x. 39.

Islands of, xii. 285.

Castle, account of, xii. 247.

considered, v. 125. Equally a leveller with death, 126.

sander perceived himself to be human only by the necessity pep. 126.

Sloane, Sir Hans, satirized by Dr. King in the Transactioner, vii. 32.
Smith, Dr. instance of Wilks's generosity to him, vii. 298.
Smith, or *Neale, Edmund*, his life, by Dr. Oldisworth, vii. 1. Son of a merchant of the name of Neale, by a daughter of Baron Lechmere, 1. Took the name of Smith from being brought up by an uncle of that name, 2. Educated at Westminster, under Busby, and removed to Oxford, 2. His character, 3. Character of his works, 5. His life by Dr. Johnson, 16. Born at Handley, in Worcestershire, 16. Educated at Westminster, and took his Master's degree at Oxford, 1696, 16. Narrowly escapes expulsion for irregularities in 1700, 18. Expelled 1705, 19. Resides in London, 19. Account of his works, 20. Dedicates Phædra, a tragedy, to the Marquis of Halifax, who had prepared to reward him with a place of 300*l.* a year, which he loses, through not soliciting it, 20. Purposes writing a tragedy of Lady Jane Grey; retires into the country for that purpose, where he died in July 1710, 22. The story of his being employed to alter Clarendon's History false, 25. Copy of his Analysis of Pocockius, 27.
Smollet, Dr. an obelisk raised to his memory near the place of his birth, xii. 428.
Smuggle, Ned, his story, v. 370.
Sneaker, Jack, a hearty friend to the present Establishment, his history, v. 40.
Snug, Dick, his story, v. 314.
Snug, Timothy, his history, xi. 406.
Sober, Mr. his history, v. 123.
Sobriety, considered, v. 358.
Society, mutual benevolence the great end of it, ii. 360.
Softly, Sam, his story, v. 372.
Soldiers, on the bravery of the English, xii. 81. Their contemptible state in time of peace, v. 81. Their wish for war not always sincere, 81.
Solid, Jack, his story, v. 315.
Solitude, enquiry into the state of happiness in, v. 477. A relish for those pleasures an argument of a good disposition, ii. 29. The disgustful tediousness of it to many, ibid. The peculiar pleasures of it, iii. 408.
Somervile, Mr. his life, vii. 282. Born at Edston in Warwickshire, 1692, 282. Educated at Winchester, and fellow of New College, 282. Died July 19, 1742, and an account of his death by Shenstone, 282. Account of his works, 283.
Sophron, his letter on frugality, ii. 364. His history, v. 228.
Sorrow, the indulgence of it incapacitates to enjoy the pleasures of contemplation, ii. 30. The experience of it a preservative against the vanities of the world, 38. Cautions against it, 303. Instructions for preventing it, 306.

Sunday, the different methods of employing that sacred season, ii. 194. The true method recommended, 198.
Superfluities and Necessaries of life considered, v. 147.
Superstition, a disposition irrational and terrifying, ii. 283. The danger of falling into, v. 460.
Supreme good, falsely supposed by some to be a state of quiet, v. 71.
Suretyship, the danger of, exemplified in the character of Candidus, xi. 420.
Suspicion, often the concomitant of guilt, iii. 51. An enemy to virtue and happiness, ibid. Old age peculiarly addicted to it, 52.
Suspirius, the screech-owl, his character, ii. 377.
Swift, Dean Jonathan, his history of the last years of Queen Anne saved by an accident, v. 260. Sir R. Blackmore's observations on the Tale of a Tub, vii. 217. His life, viii. 1. His birth and parentage uncertain, 1. Educated at Kilkenny, and entered in Dublin University 1682, 2. Admitted Bachelor of Arts by *special favour*, 2. Attends his studies very close. 2. On the death of his uncle Godwin Swift he is introduced to Sir W. Temple, who patronises him, 2. King William offers to make him Captain of horse, 3. Consulted by the Earl of Portland on triennial Parliaments, 3. The disorder which brought him to the grave supposed to be first contracted by eating fruit, 4. Takes the degree of Master of Arts at Oxford, July 5, 1692, 4. Pays an annual visit to his mother at Leicester, and generally on foot, 4. Leaves Sir W. Temple in discontent, 1694, 5. Enters into the Church, and obtains the prebend of Kilroot, in Connor, 5. Returns to Temple, and gives up his prebend, 5. Wrote Pindaric Odes to the King, Temple, and the Athenian Society, 5. Dryden's declaration, that Swift would never be a Poet, 6. Temple dies, and leaves his MSS. to Swift, of whom he had obtained a promise of the first vacant prebend of Westminster or Canterbury, but never performed, 6. Dedicates Temple's posthumous Works to the King, 6. Goes to Ireland with the Earl of Berkeley as private secretary, 6. Disappointed of the deanery of Derry, he gets two small livings in the diocese of Meath, 7. Invites Stella to Ireland, 7. Publishes the Dissentions in Athens and Rome, in 1701, 7. In 1704, the Tale of a Tub, 8. In 1708, the Sentiments of a Church-of-England-Man, and some other pamphlets, 9. Enters into the service of Mr. Harley, 1710, 11. Writes thirty-three Papers in the Examiner, 12. Publishes a Proposal for correcting, &c. the English Tongue, 13. Writes a Letter to the October Club, 12. In 1712 publishes the Conduct of the Allies, 14. Reflections on the Barrier Treaty, and Remarks on the Introduction to Vol. III. of Burnet's History of the Reformation, 15. Discovers the misery of greatness, 16. Accepts the Deanery of St. Patrick's, 1713, 17. Refuses 50*l.* of Lord Oxford, but accepts of a

draft of 1000*l.* on the Exchequer, but intercepted by the death of the Queen, 17. Keeps a journal of his visits, &c. 18. Endeavours to reconcile Lord Oxford and Bolingbroke, but in vain, 18. Publishes, in 1714, the Public Spirit of the Whigs, in answer to the Crisis, 18. 300*l.* offered for the discovery of the author, 19. Retires, in 1714, into Berkshire, 19. Goes to settle on his Deanery in Ireland, 20. Writes several other political pamphlets, 20. Mrs. Johnson removes from the country to a house near the Deanery, 21. Marries Mrs. Johnson, 22. Becomes popular by recommending to the Irish the use of their own manufactures, 22. Account of the death of Vanessa, 22. Acquires fresh esteem by the Drapier's Letters, 24. 300*l.* offered for the discovery of the author, 25. His conduct to his butler, who was entrusted with his secret, 25. Makes his butler verger of St. Patrick's, 26. Obtains the appellation of *The Dean*, 26. In 1727, publishes his Miscellanies, 3 vols. and Gulliver's Travels, 27. His wife dies Jan. 28, 1728, 29. He greatly laments her death, though supposed to have hastened it by neglect, 29. His discourse with Bettisworth the lawyer, 32. Lends money to the poor without interest, but requires the re-payment without charity, 32. His continual, increasing asperity, 33. His giddiness and deafness increase, 34. Always careful of his money, 34. Polite Conversation, published 1738, 35. Directions for Servants, soon after his death, 35. Loses his mental powers, 35. Dies in October 1744, in his 78th year, 36. His powers as an author, 37. Dictated political opinions to the English, 37. Delivered Ireland from plunder and oppression, 37. Irish may date their riches and prosperity from his patronage, 37. Remarks on his works, 37. Deserted the Whigs, when they deserted their principles, 39. His character as a Churchman, 39. His person, temper, and œconomy, 40. Story of Gay and Pope visiting him after they had supped, 42. His character by Dr. Delany, 46. Promotes the subscription for Pope's Translation of the Iliad, 97. Joins with Pope in publishing three volumes of Miscellanies, 107. Published the first Volume of the Memoirs of Scriblerus, in conjunction with Pope and Arbuthnot, 136. Narrowness of mind in his letters, 161. The report of Pope having written a defamatory life of him groundless, 163.

Sycophants, their infamous character, iii. 213.

Sydenham, Thomas, his life, ix. 190. Born at Winford Eagle, in Dorsetshire, 1624, ibid. Entered Commoner of Magdalen Hall, Oxford, 1642, 191. Bachelor of Physick 1648, ibid. Did not take up the practice of physick without having qualified himself for it, as was reported, 192. Practises physick in Westminster, 197. Died 1629, 199. His character, ibid.

Symerons, or fugitive Negroes, enter into treaty with Sir Francis Drake, ix. 76.

T.

TALBOT, Miss, a writer in the Rambler, ii. 199.
Talisker in Sky, account of, xii. 319.
Taming of the Shrew, observations on Shakspeare's, x. 201.
Tasso, represents spirits as promoting or obstructing events by external agency, vi. 60. Represents the pleasures and splendours of heaven, 60.
Taste, low, censured, iv. 218.
Tate, Nahum, died in the Mint, in extreme poverty, vii. 66.
Tatler, notes of some of the writers, vii. 85. Designed to divert the attention of the people from public discontent, 89.
Taxation no Tyranny, an answer to the resolutions and address of the American Congress [1775], xii. 177.
Tea, review of Mr. Hanway's Essay on, xi. 241.
Tears, the true taste of, vi. 36.
Tediousness in a Poet, the most fatal of all faults, vii. 183. Characterized, 183.
Temper, good, by what means it is frequently vitiated, iii. 23.
Temperance, the cause of, v. 358.
Tempest, general observations on Shakspeare's, x. 195.
Tempest, Tom, a friend of the House of Stuart, history of, v. 38.
Temple, Rev. Mr. his character of Gray, viii. 371.
Temple, Sir William, patronises Swift, viii. 3. Leaves his MSS. to Swift, 6.
Templeman, Geographia Metrica, Latine, i. 412.
Temptations to vice, the motives to resist them, with the difficulty attending that resistance, ii. 444.
Terms of Art, the necessity of, v. 281.
Ternate, account of the king and inhabitants of, ix. 138.
Tetrica, a lively example of habitual peevishness, iii. 21.
Thales, the departure of, from London, i. 194.
Theatre, Greek, general conclusion to Brumoy's, xi. 122.
Theobald, observations on his edition of Shakspeare, x. 129. 173. Exposes the deficiencies of Pope's edition of Shakspeare, viii. 103. Celebrated by Pope in the Dunciad, 108.
Theocritus, Excerpta ex, i. 410.
Theodore, the Hermit of Teneriffe, the vision of, xi. 333.
Thirlby, Mr. assists Pope in the notes to the Iliad, viii. 81.
Thomson, James, his life, viii. 223. Son of a Minister at Ednam, in Roxburgh, born 1700, 223. Educated under Mr. Riccarton, 223. Removes to London, 225. Becomes acquainted with Mallet and Aaron Hill, 225. Sells his poem on Winter to Mr. Millan, 225. Dedicates his Winter to Sir Spencer Compton, from whom he receives a present of 20 guineas, 225. It is recommended by Dr. Rundle to Lord Chancellor Talbot, 226. Publishes Summer, a poem on the death of Sir Isaac Newton,

and Britannia, in 1727, 227. Is entertained in the family of Lord Binning, 227. Publishes Spring in 1728, and Autumn 1730, 227. Writes Sophonisba 1727, 228. The prologue to Sophonisba written by Pope and Mallet, 228. Travels with a son of Chancellor Talbot, 228. Gets the place of Secretary of Briefs, 229. Writes his poem on Liberty, 229. Loses his place by the death of the Chancellor, 230. Allowed a pension of 100*l.* a year by the Prince of Wales, 230. Writes the tragedy of Agamemnon, 1738, 230. License refused to his Edward and Eleonora, 231. In conjunction with Mallet writes the masque of Alfred, 231. Writes Tancred and Sigismunda 1745, 231. Appointed Surveyor-general of the Leeward Islands, 232. Publishes his last piece, the Castle of Indolence, 232. Died 1748, and buried at Richmond, 232. His person described, 232. His tragedy of Coriolanus brought on the stage after his death by the friendship of Sir George Lyttelton and Mr. Quin, 232. His friendly letter to his sister, 233. Character of his works, 236.

Thought, the power of, in animals, vi. 92. Some men never think, 93. Whether the soul always thinks, 93. Farther enquiries on thought, 94.

Thraso, his reflections on the influence of fear and fortitude, iii. 352, 353.

Thrasybulus, a remarkable instance of being deluded by flattery, iv. 132.

Thrale, Mrs. impromptu on her completing her 35th year, i. 358. Letters to, ix. 343.

Thrale, Henry, Esq. Epitaph on, i. 367.

Thyer, Mr. publishes two volumes of Butler's Works, vi. 189.

Tickell, Thomas, his life, vii. 271. Born 1686, at Bridekirk, in Cumberland, 271. Entered at Oxford, April 1701, 271. Initiated under the patronage of Addison, 271. His Translation of Homer preferred to Pope's, 273. A conversation between Pope and Addison on the Translation, 274. Under-secretary to Mr. Addison, 276. Secretary to the Lords Justices of Ireland, 276. Died April 23, 1740, 276. A contributor to the Spectators, 277. The Translation of the Iliad, published by him, supposed to have been Addison's, viii. 99.

Time, the neglect of the present hour censured, xi. 507. The loss of, considered, 523. Considerations on the loss of, v. 430. The best remedy for grief, 517. The principal employment of it should be directed with a view to the end of our existence, iii. 58. The negligent waste of it censured, 233. Ought to be spent with frugality, and improved with diligence, 234. 253. The injustice of wasting the time of others, v. 53. Statesmen and patrons more reproached for it than they deserve, 54. Those who attend statesmen the most criminal, 54. A tribute of time to be paid to a multitude of tyrants, 55. The continual

progress of, taken notice of by all nations, 173. The effects of the progress not regarded, 173.
Timon of Athens, observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 213.
Titus Andronicus, observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 213.
Tomkyns, apprehended for being concerned in a plot against Parliament with Waller, vii. 244. Convicted and executed, 249.
Tradesman, the progress of, in London, xi. 490. The folly of his seeking happiness in rural retirement, 492. Case of one attempting to become a wit and a critick, v. 186. Impropriety of his turning fop and fine gentleman, 379.
Tragedy more uniform than comedy, xi. 103. Critical remarks on the manner of composing it, iii. 346.
Tragi-Comedy, the nature and design of it, iv. 98. Shakspeare's eminent success in that species of dramatic composition, 99.
Tranquil, Tom (a rich man), his history, v. 294.
Tranquilla, her account of the addresses of Venustulus, Fungosa, Flosculus, and Dentatus, designed as a contrast to the narrative of Hymenæus, iii. 309. Her marriage with Hymenæus, and the felicity with which it was attended, iv. 158.
Translations, observations on, v. 272. A production of moderns, 272. The progress of, 272. Early cultivated in England, 275. Its progress in England, 276. The progress of, viii. 183. Unknown in Greece, 183. Not much read in Italy, 184. State of, in France, 184.
Translator, character of a good translator, vii. 71.
Trapp's Sermons, case of the abridgement of, xi. 34.
Travels, directions for writing works of, v. 350. Specimen of the common method of writing journals of travels, 387.
Treakle, Zachary, complaint against his idle wife, v. 56. His wife's answer and complaints against her husband, 111.
Trees, the want of, in a good part of Scotland, xii. 236.
Troilus and Cressida, observations on Shakspeare's play of, x. 215.
Trumbull, Sir William, Pope's Epitaph on him, viii. 203.
Truth, its high original and vast importance, iii. 160. Its easy entrance into the mind when introduced by desire and attended with pleasure, iv. 147. A steady regard to the lustre of moral and religious truth, a certain direction to happiness, 236. The crime of the violation of, v. 75. The want of it in historians lamented, 75. Exemplified in an Englishman's and a Frenchman's account of the capture of Louisburgh, 76. How far ridicule the test of it, viii. 359.
Trypherus, his character, iii. 175.
Tucker, Dr. his proposals concerning America considered, xii. 222.
Turenne, Marshal, his saying of the importance of immediately correcting our mistakes, ii. 210.
Turk, characterized as a husband, i. 321.
Turpicola, her history, iv. 285.

Twelfth Night, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, x. 202.
Two Gentlemen of Verona, observations on Shakspeare's comedy of, x. 196.
Tyrconnel, Lord, takes Savage into his house, and promises him a pension of 200*l.* a year, vii. 321. His quarrel with Savage, 331.
Tytler's Historical Enquiry concerning Mary Queen of Scots, Review of, xi. 319.

V.

VAFER, his character of an insidious flatterer, iv. 133.
Vagario, his character, ii. 176.
Vagulus, his account of Squire Bluster, iv. 9.
Valdesso, his excellent remark upon resigning his commission, ii. 186.
Vanessa, her unhappy partiality for Swift, and death, viii. 22. By her will orders the poem of Cadenus and Vanessa to be published, 23.
Van Homrigh, Mrs. See *Vanessa.*
Vanity of authors, represented in the case of Misellus, ii. 103. Excessive, exemplified in the character of Mr. Frolick, 390. Its tendency to idleness, iv. 84.
Venice, account of the quarrel between that state and Paul V. ix. 7.
Venustulus, the manner of his addresses to Tranquilla, iii. 308. His unmanly and timid conduct exposed, 351.
Verecundulus, the infelicities he sustained through his habitual bashfulness and timidity, iv. 103.
Versification, remarks on its rules, iii. 92. 104. The peculiarity of Milton's, in his Paradise Lost, 106. See *Virgil.*
Vice, the descriptions of it in writing should be always calculated to excite disgust, ii. 26. The essence of, considered, viii. 55.
Vicious Intromission, case of, xi. 190.
Victoria, her letter on the foolish anxiety to excel merely in the charms of external beauty, iii. 376. On the mortifications arising from the loss of it, 394.
Vida, his remarks on the propriety of Virgil's versification, iii. 132. His Art of Poetry translated by Christopher Pitt, viii. 220.
Vines, first planted by Noah, x. 390. Progress of the cultivation of, ibid. Ordered to be destroyed by an edict of Domitian, 391. Of France, superior to the mines of America, 400.
Virgil, in what respect superior in pastoral poetry, ii. 239. Remarks on the judicious propriety of his versification, 242. Why preferred to Homer by Scaliger, iii. 141. The plan of his Æneid formed upon the writings of Homer, 323. Account of the Sortes Virgilianæ, vi. 8. Specimen of Sir John Denham's Translation, 80. Milbourne's criticisms on Dryden's

Translation, 427. Vain attempts to translate Virgil by Brady, 431. Æneid, translated by Christopher Pitt, viii. 221. This Translation contrasted with Dryden's, 221.

Virtue, to be pursued by virtuous means, i. 271. The various attacks on it, 217. Such conduct not to be repented of for the event, v. 513. The representations of it in works of fancy should be always exact and pure, ii. 26. The difference between speculative and practical virtue, 90. The error of substituting single acts of it for habits, 184. Obstructed by confounding the praise with the practice of goodness, ibid. United with industry supplies the genuine sources of hope, iii. 211. Virtue and truth often defeated by pride and obstinacy, 102. The constant pursuit of it the highest excellence, iv. 263. The danger of mistaking the love for the practice of virtue, exemplified in Savage, vii. 346.

Virtuoso, his character distinctly drawn, iii. 68. The advantages he is capable of communicating to others, 73. His excessive fondness for curiosities often the evidence of a low genius, 76.

Visionary schemes, the effects of, v. 538.

Vivaculus, his letter on Virtuosos, iv. 215.

Ulinish, account of, xii. 314.

Ulva Isle, account of, xii. 405. The *Mercheta Mulierum* paid there, 406.

Ulysses, the discovery of, improper for a picture, v. 181.

Uneasiness of mind, often relieved by comparing our lot with that of others, iv. 265.

Union, the difficulty of, either between nations or smaller communities, xi. 392.

Universities, the superiority of the English, to their academies, and foreign universities, v. 133.

Universal History, writers of, i. 131.

Voltaire, his visit to Congreve, vii. 198. Pays a visit to Pope, viii. 107. Young's Epigram on him, 313.

Volunteer Laureat, vii. 350.

Vossius, Isaac, delighted in having his hair combed for many hours together, vi. 294.

Voyages, introduction to The World Displayed, a collection of, x. 258. Abstract account of, in search of new countries, xii. 119.

Upton, Mr. observations on his Critical Observations on Shakspeare, x. 179.

Usefulness, public, should be the object of our diligent endeavours, iii. 371. 375.

W.

WAINSCOT, Tom, complaint of his son's becoming a fop, and neglecting business, v. 379.

Waller, Edmund, his life, vi. 229. Born at Colshill, in Hertfordshire, March 3, 1605, 229. His father left him 3500*l.* a year, 229. Educated at Eton, and removed to King's College, Cambridge, 229. Returned to Parliament in his 18th year, 229. Wrote his first poetry in his 18th year, 230. Wrote poetry almost by instinct, 231. Marries Mrs. Banks, a great heiress, 232. Loses his wife, who leaves one daughter, 232. Addresses Lady Dorothea Sidney, under the name of Sacharissa, who rejects his addresses, 232. Celebrates Lady Sophia Murray, under the name of Amoret, 233. Supposed to have taken a voyage, 234. Marries a lady of the name of Bresse, or Breaux, by whom he has five sons and eight daughters, 234. Being returned to the Parliament of 1640, makes a noisy speech on imaginary grievances, 235. No bigot to his party, 237. His speech on Episcopacy, 237. Sends 1000 broad pieces to the King when he set up his standard, 240. Continues to sit in the rebellious conventicle, and to speak against their proceedings, 241. Nominated one of the Commissioners to treat with the King at Oxford, 241. Engaged in a plot against Parliament, 242. The manner in which the plot was discovered, 244. Him and Tomkyns taken up, both of whom confess the whole plot, 245. A day of thanksgiving appointed for deliverance from the plot, 246. Earl of Portland and Lord Conway taken up, on the declaration of Waller, for being concerned in the plot, are examined several times by the Lords, and admitted to bail, 246. Tomkyns and Chaloner executed for the plot, 249. Tried and condemned, and, after a year's imprisonment, and a fine of 10,000*l.* is banished, 250. Obtains, from Cromwell, permission to return, 251. Received by Cromwell as a kinsman, 251. Writes his famous panegyrick on Cromwell, 251. Writes a poem on the death of Cromwell, 253. Writes again on the restoration of Charles II. 253. Returned to Parliament for Hastings, 254. Obtains from the King the provostship of Eton, but Clarendon refuses to put the seal to the grant, from his not being a clergyman, 256. His opposition to Clarendon on that account, 256. Kindly treated by James II. 257. Prepares for his latter end, 258. Died Oct. 21. 1687, and was buried at Beaconsfield, 259. Account of his descendants, 259. His character by Clarendon, 260. Declared he would blot from his works any line that did not contain some motive to virtue, 266. His works characterized, 266. Specimen of his translation of *Pastor Fido*, 280.

Walmsley, Gilbert, some account of, vii. 25.

Walpole, Horace, travels through France into Italy with Gray, where they quarrel, and each pursues his journey separately, viii. 367.

Walsh, William, his life, vi. 312. Born at Aberley, Worcestershire, 1663, 312. Entered Gentleman Commoner at Oxford,

1678, 312. The best critick in the nation, 312. Member of Parliament for Worcestershire, 312. Gentleman of the Horse to Queen Anne, 312. A zealous friend to the Revolution, 312. Corresponded with Pope, on the pastoral comedy of the Italians, 313. Supposed to have died in 1709, 313. Account of his works, 313. An early encourager of Pope, viii. 62.

War, should be conducted by rules consistent with the universal interest of mankind, iii. 53. Different feelings on the approach of, v. 17. Deplorable case of the ladies losing their gallants, 18. The raising and training an equal number of women recommended, 19. Women capable of being defeated, as Braddock, without seeing his enemies; of surrendering Minorca, without a breach; and of looking at Rochfort, 20. Every man ought to fight as the single champion, 29. The duty of thinking as if the event depended on a man's counsel, 29. Proposal for erecting a fort on Salisbury plain, resembling Brest, arming it with beef and ale, and using our soldiers to attack it, 31. Asses, bulls, turkeys, geese, and tragedians, to be added by way of accustoming the soldiers to noises equally horrid with the war-cry, 32. Diminution of the love of truth one of the calamities of war, 120. Every method of pacification to be tried before war is engaged in, xii. 143. Its miseries little attended to by many, ibid. Princes think it necessary to assign some reason for, but frequently a very unsatisfactory one, ix. 266.

Warbois, witches of, conviction of, commemorated in a sermon at Huntingdon, x. 76.

Warburton, W. Bishop of Gloucester, observations on his notes on Shakspeare, x. 176. View of the controversy between him and M. Crousaz, on Pope's Essay on Man, 248. His literary and critical character, viii. 124. Defends Pope's Essay on Man against Crousaz, 125. Commences a friendship with Pope, 127. Erects a monument to the memory of Pope, 146.

Warner, Tim. account of his good sort of woman to his wife, v. 396.

Warrior, the vanity of his wishes, i. 213.

Warton's Essay on Pope, Review of, xi. 264.

Watering-places, observations on, and on a select set at one of them, v. 312.

Watts, Dr. Isaac, his life, viii. 240. Born at Southampton, 1674, 240. Began with Latin at four years of age, 240. Educated in a dissenting academy, 241. A maker of verses from fifteen to fifty, 241. Leaves the academy at twenty years of age, 242. Tutor to Sir John Hartopp's son, 242. Becomes preacher at twenty-four years of age, 242. Sir Thomas Abney takes him into his house, 242. His character as a preacher, 245. His moral character, 246. His works characterized, 247. Received an unsolicited diploma of D.D. from Edinburgh and Aberdeen in 1728, 248. Died 1748, 248. His character, 248.

Wealth, the contempt of it represented in various instances, iii.

370, 371. Wrong notions of its usefulness corrected, 374. Why the object of general desire, iii. 383. The real importance and influence of it shewn in the case of disappointed expectations, iv. 80.

Weather, causes why an Englishman's conversation is first on the weather, v. 42. A more noble topick than generally supposed, 42. Influences the temper, 43. The folly of submitting to such influence, 43.

West Gilbert, his life, viii. 261. Educated at Eton and Oxford, 261. Designed for the Church, but obtains a commission in the Army, 261. Resigns his commission, and appointed clerk extraordinary of the Privy Council, under Lord Townshend, 1729, 261. Settles at Wickham in Kent, 262. Publishes his Observations on the Resurrection, 1747, 262. Created LL.D. at Oxford, 1748, 262. Frequently visited by Lyttelton and Pitt, 262. Clerk of the Privy Council and treasurer of Chelsea Hospital, 263. Died 1756, 263. His works characterized, 263.

Wharton, Lord, his vile character, vii. 84.

Whatever is, is right, true sense of that assertion of Mr. Pope, x. 251.

Whirler, Jack, his history, v. 72.

Whisperer, his character, iv. 25.

Whitefoot, his character of Sir Thomas Browne, ix. 305.

Whitehead, Paul, summoned before the Lords for his poem called Manners, viii. 135.

Wife, an idle one described, v. 56. Cautions in choosing one, 396.

Wilkes, John, considerations on his being rejected by the House of Commons as representative for Middlesex, xii. 89.

Wilks, Mr. (the actor), instances of his generosity, vii. 298. Occasionally allows a benefit to Savage, 301.

Wills, the necessity of making them, exemplified in the story of Sophia Heedful, v. 390.

William III. King, supplied copious materials for prose and verse, vii. 165.

Williams, Zachariah, his attempt to ascertain the longitude, x. 368.

Williams, Anna, proposals for printing her Essays, xi. 45.

Winbury, Miss, Pope's unfortunate lady, viii. 174. Said to have been in love with Pope, 174.

Winter, an Ode, i. 331. Winter's Walk, 332. The season of seriousness and terror, iii. 55. And of retirement and study, 57. The horrors of it in the Polar countries, iv. 266.

Winter's Tale, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, x. 202.

Wishes, Vain, the folly of indulging them, iii. 17.

Wit, its original, ii. 144. Wherein it differeth from learning, 144. The mutual advantages of their being united, 149. The folly of affecting that character, 168. The means necessary to the

production of a person eminent for the character of a wit, iii. 194. Has its changes and fashions, vii. 19. Pope's description erroneous, 20. Properly characterized, 20. Exuberance of, condemned, 40. Sir R. Blackmore's account of, vii. 216.

Wits, in the time of Charles II. characterized, i. 220. Affected, the meanness of their character, iii. 306. iv. 4. 200. Seldom rewarded by their superiors, vi. 225.

Witchcraft, history of, x. 73.

Withers, Gen. Hen. Pope's Epitaph on him, viii. 212.

Wolsey, the rise and fall of, i. 210.

Women, Lord Bacon's severe reflection on beautiful, ii. 246. Infelicities peculiar to, 251. The want of attention to their enquiries censured, iii. 356. Their deplorable case in the beginning of a war, by losing their gallants, v. 18. Recommended to follow the soldiers to camp, 19. Capable to become soldiers, 19. An army of, might have been defeated, as Braddock, without seeing the enemy, surrendered Minorca, without a breach, and looked at Rochfort, 20. A good sort of one characterized, 396. The danger they are in when they lay aside their religion, xi. 373. The fortitude of, described, i. 271.

Wonder, an instance of the desire of man to propagate a, vi. 2.

Wood's Halfpence, their history, viii. 24.

Word to the Wise, prologue to, i. 326.

World, Milton supposed it to be in its decay, vi. 131. This opinion was refuted by Dr. Hakewill, 131.

World Displayed (a collection of voyages), Introduction to, x. 258.

Wormwood, Dick, his story, v. 336.

Writing, the rage for, v. 6.

Wycherley, W. a man esteemed without virtue, and caressed without good humour, viii. 61. Wrote verses in praise of Pope, 61.

X.

XERXES, the vanity of a warrior exemplified in him, i. 215.

Y

YALDEN, Thomas, his life, vii. 265. Born at Exeter in 1671, 265. Educated at Oxford, 265. His readiness at composition, 265. Became Doctor of Divinity 1707, 267. Rector of Chalton and Cleanville, 267. Preacher of Bridewell, 1698, 267. Charged with a dangerous correspondence with Kelly, 267. His papers seized, but no criminality appearing, was discharged, 268. Died July 16, 1736, 268. Account of his poems, 268.

York, description of, ix. 357.

Young, Edward, his life, by Herbert Croft, viii. 288. Born at Upham near Winchester, 1681, 288. Account of his father, 289. Queen Mary was god-mother to him, 289. Educated at Winchester College, 290. Entered at New College, 1703, 290. Law Fellow of All Souls, 1708, 290. Bachelor of Civil Laws, 1714, and Dr. 1719, 291. Speaks the Latin Oration, when the foundation of the Codrington Library was laid, 291. Published his Epistle to Lord Lansdown, 1712, 293. Poem on the Last Day published, 1713, 295. Account of some pieces omitted in his works, 294. Patronized by Lord Wharton, 298. Busiris brought on the stage, 1719, 299. The Revenge, 1721, 300. Has two annuities granted him by Lord Wharton, 301. Attempts to get into Parliament for Cirencester, 302. Takes orders, and becomes a popular preacher, 302. Account of his Satires, 303. Acquired more than 3000*l.* by the Universal Passion, 306. Chaplain to George II. 311. Writes the Brothers, 311. Presented to the living of Welwyn, 1730, 313. Married Lady Elizabeth Lee, daughter to the Earl of Lichfield, 1731, 313. His wife died 1741, 315. His Philander and Narcissa supposed to be intended for Mr. and Mrs. Temple, 315. The occasion of the Night Thoughts real, 316. His son defended from the reports of his ill behaviour to his father, 320. The character of Lorenzo not designed for his son, 320. His Letter to Pope, 326. None of his writings prejudicial to the cause of Virtue and Religion, 328. The Brothers brought on the stage 1753, 330. Gives 1000*l.* to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, 330. His letter on original Composition, 331. History and account of his poem called Resignation, 334. His friendship for his housekeeper, 336. Died 1765, 337. Many untruths mentioned of him in the Biographia, 337. Story of his straying into the enemy's camp, with a classick in his hand, 338. The Archbishop of Canterbury's Letter to him, 339. Appointed clerk of the closet to the Princess Dowager, 1761, 339. Not the Parson Adams of Fielding, 341. His epitaph, 342. His Poems characterized by Dr. Johnson, 344.

Youth, the proper employment of, v. 469. Modesty and active diligence its amiable ornaments, ii. 63. Often deluded and ruined by profuseness and extravagance, 169. Too easily ensnared by early immersion in pleasure, 271. A time of enterprize and hope, iii. 254. Delighted with sprightliness and ardour, 267. The dangers to which it is often exposed, iv. 208. Their fond opinion of their own importance, 325. The forbearance due to young actors on the stage of life, v. 98.

Z.

ZEPHYRETTA, her character, ii. 120.
Zoroaster, supposed to have borrowed his institutions from Moses, v. 14.
Zosima, her epitaph, x. 329. Her history, ii. 73.

THE END.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY S. AND R. BENTLEY, DORSET STREET.

AUG 28 '64

DEC 15 '66

Stanford University Library
Stanford, California

In order that others may use this book, please return it as soon as possible, but not later than the date due.

Stanford University Libraries
3 6105 012 200 015